



EMPEROR'S DOMINATION

BOOK 10

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Emperor's Domination

(帝霸)

by

Yan Bi Xiao Sheng

(厌笔萧生)

Synopsis

One million years ago, Li Qiye planted a simple water bamboo into the ground.

Eight hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye had a koi fish pet.

Five hundred thousand years ago, Li Qiye cared for a little girl.

.

.

.

In the present day, Li Qiye woke up from his slumber;

The water bamboo reached the apex of cultivation;

The koi fish became a Golden Dragon;

The little girl became the Nine Worlds' Immortal Empress.

This is a tale regarding an immortal human who was the teacher of the Demon Saint, Heavenly Beast, and Immortal Empress.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Bao @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Three Emperors Formation

Once this huge skeleton emerged, it emitted a venerable aura as if it had come from the ancient past. During that untraceable era, it dominated over the nine heavens and ten earths.

“Pop. Pop. Pop.” A series of little noises rang out after the elders of the Golden Crow Tribe finished chanting their spell. Their bodies fell apart and turned into blood. These drops of Longevity Blood soared towards the huge skeleton like a river.

“Screchh!” After gaining the huge amount of longevity blood, the bird’s cry echoed across the nine firmaments. The moment it spread its wings, endless refined sunfire poured down.

“Screchhhh!” With another cry, it opened its mouth, causing the world to howl. The sun was dragged down from the deepest recesses of the sky and its endless sunfire cascaded into the bird’s vicious beaks.

The world turned dark during the entire process. It seemed that this bird was about to swallow the sun whole.

“Boom!” A blast echoed across myriad realms. After swallowing a sufficient amount of sunfire, the bird’s body was covered in towering flames that burned the sky. This gigantic skeleton had turned into a dazzling fire bird with three legs. It posed in the sky as if it was the real True God of the sun!

“Three-legged Golden Crow!” Many existences in the Stone

Medicine World were shocked after seeing this creature.

One ancestor mumbled: “There were rumors about the Golden Crow Tribe’s progenitor obtaining the complete skeleton of a golden crow. Moreover, it had maintained its divinity. It seems like this is indeed the truth.”

The Golden Crow Tribe was known as the descendants of a divine beast, the Golden Crow. They claimed to have its bloodline running through their veins. Naturally, many were skeptical of this claim. However, after seeing this Golden Crow today, some felt that this was quite plausible.

“Boom!” The Three-legged Golden Crow descended to the ancestral ground. Universal laws expanded and the imperial foundation emerged from right beneath its feet. The moment this foundation floated upward, countless Immortal Emperor laws wove together to form a grand formation. Everything became illusory as a new world was beginning to form.

“Boom!” The formation sealed this area and locked the treefather inside.

The two Godkings immediately rushed into the formation as well after seeing this new development. They took their respective positions alongside the Golden Crow.

“Rumble!” In the blink of an eye, the two imperial true treasures took their positions with other imperial weapons rushing in as well. Something incredible happened next; two true treasures and

seven life treasures in the formation empowered this endless domain. They seemed to be turning into unbeatable generals to guard the formation.

“Kill him!” The two Godkings and the Golden Crow used the foundation of the ravine to empower this incredible formation. One weapon after another quickly surrounded the treefather. They no longer seemed to be mere weapons and instead resembled powerful Godkings or even stronger existences.

“Die!” The treefather tempestuously evaded all of these attacks while his Golden Dragon flew around to weaken the formation. However, with the imperial foundation as the base and the imperial weapons as the outline, he couldn’t do anything to the formation and was trapped inside. Waves of powerful attacks continued to assault him like a storm, continuously forcing him back.

“The mythical three emperors formation!” A knowledgeable ancestor couldn’t help but murmur: “An emperor from the ravine created this formation with a focus on three emperors and their weapons presiding over it. I didn’t expect this to be real.”

This formation was the most powerful weapon of the ravine. Although it never cultivated a third emperor, it had a substitute in the form of the Three-legged Golden Crow to take this emperor’s spot.

With that, the two Godkings and the Golden Crow worked together to trap the treefather inside the imperial formation.

“Break for me!” The treefather was at a disadvantage under the formation’s suppression. This made him quite furious. Although he had the dragon banner, he couldn’t unleash an ultimate attack with it.

He quickly transformed and revealed his true form. A huge pine tree anchored itself in the middle of the world. When its old roots pierced into the ground, an endless amount of worldly energy shot up and was absorbed by the treefather. This made him even more powerful, capable of bursting out of the sky.

“Aooo—” The golden dragon from the banner coiled itself around the ancient pine. As the tree grew bigger, so did the beast.

“Rumble!” The quaking from the continuous growth shook the formation. It was definitely not able to suppress the treefather any longer and was about to break from his gigantic body.

“So powerful!” Anyone would gasp to see the formation failing to trap the treefather.

As an enlightened pine tree, he was able to take root in the ancestral ground of the ravine, using its energy to empower himself.

One Godking from the ravine loudly screamed: “Open the divine ground!”

The lucky surviving ancestors from the ravine immediately began to chant. Their blood energy erupted and formed a huge imperial lock. With a clanking sound, the lock was opened.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” A sealed ground in the depths of the ancestral ground was opened and appeared before everyone. A dazzling radiance shot up and strings of tangible rays cut through the sky.

This place was full of wondrous energy. There was an old vine in the center of the place. It emitted a golden light as if it was cast from pure gold. Moreover, there were flowing red rays throughout its body as if flames were running within it.

A calabash had also been growing from it for a very long time. It could ripen at any moment as it emitted waves of thunderous noises. It was clear from its appearance that this wasn't something ordinary.

This vine root lazily spread across this land while three gigantic beasts could be found below. All of them emitted frightening and archaic auras, as if they had been sealed here for many years.

“This is...” Many people were startled to see this. Some ancient ancestors immediately stood up to stare at this place.

“Yang Vine!” Li Qiye's gaze also turned serious while he looked at this old vine from his chariot.

“Demon Forefather, please protect our sect and slay our enemies!” One of the ancestors who survived heaved a sigh of relief and pleaded.

However, the vine root and the three beasts continued to lie there as if they didn’t hear the request.

Eventually, the rest of the ancestors looked at each other and noticed that the treefather was becoming more and more powerful. They finally made a firm decision.

“Pop! Pop! Pop!” Their bodies shattered and their longevity blood rushed to this wondrous location.

The three beasts opened their mouths to swallow the longevity blood, then they stood up at the same time.

“Rawwrrrr!” Their roar shattered the world as they all leaped in unison. They didn’t bother looking at the treefather in the formation, but it was clear that their target was Li Qiye riding his chariot!

The surrounding thousands of miles shook from their leap. Their terrifying beastly auras engulfed the entire Beast Realm. The nearby creatures all felt their auras and were stricken with fear. They prostrated on the ground as if their ancestors had come out!

While these three beasts went for Li Qiye, the lazy vine also moved and all of the endless worldly energy in this place was

suddenly trapped. The Allpine Treefather could no longer absorb the energy from below the ravine!

“What is going on?” Many people were surprised to see the three beasts and the vine root. They had never heard of these things before.

Inside the Beastmaster Citadel, one ancestor took a look at the area and spoke: “There is an unproven legend. It states that after Immortal Emperor Jin She obtained the Heaven’s Will, he had gone to a wondrous place inhabited by an immortal vine and three Demon Forefathers. He asked them to come to the ravine, and in exchange, he would use the ravine’s energy from their land to groom them. As payment, they must help the ravine if a calamity were to befall the sect.”

“Boom! Boom!” The three beasts wanted to destroy the chariot first and commenced their assault. However, the four divine beasts protecting the chariot blocked any possible damage in a brief moment.

“Should we go out and fight?!” The moment she saw these three beasts, Long Jingxian was excited and ready for battle.

Li Qiye stood up and said: “No need, it’s time to end this!” With that, a death energy appeared. The Death Chapter rushed to the sky as his terrifying aura engulfed the world. It was as if he was a Death God from the land of death — able to reap the lives of the endless eras.

Chapter 902: Destruction Of The Heavenhoof Ravine

The death energy from the chapter sealed the entire world. This terrifying energy turned the surrounding millions of miles into a hell, the energy refusing to disperse.

The death god, Li Qiye, was now the ruler of the entire world!

“Just what is this merit law?” All the big shots were shaking at the sight of this all-engulfing energy. Many ancestors that had been sealed for many years still couldn’t recognize this law!

Even Jian Wushuang was startled to see the huge amount of death energy. She was the first to be exposed to this technique. However, his energy back then was not as powerful as it was now. It was of an unimaginable level that could blot out the sky in the blink of an eye!

Of course, she didn’t know that after falling into the Beast Realm, Li Qiye had killed his way out. Through that baptism of blood, he gathered a huge amount of deathly energy in his Death Seal.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Just when everyone was wondering what technique he was cultivating, the entire world suddenly quaked!

“Owwwrrr!” The howling of beasts filled the sky, causing all existences to tremble. Terrifying auras of divine beasts suddenly surged and loomed over the entire world.

“Bang!” The sky quickly collapsed. From this crack, one divine beast after another rushed out.

Golden Dragon, Phoenix, Qilin, White Tiger, Black Tortoise, Kun Peng, Ninehead Demon, Gluttonous Fiend... all of these mythical creatures heeded Li Qiye’s summon!

“Oh god, is this real? Are divine beasts actually invading our world?!” Even Virtuous Paragons fell flat to the ground from fear. Their sudden appearance frightened countless powerful characters out of their minds!

In the legends, a single matured Golden Dragon could oppose an Immortal Emperor. Now, all of these different legendary beasts appeared all at once. Even if an Immortal Emperor was here, they still wouldn’t be able to fight such a force! This number of divine beasts could destroy the entire Stone Medicine World in an instant!

An existence of the Godking level saw through them and murmured: “No, no, these aren’t living divine beasts. They are only corpses that have been dead for who knows how many years. They no longer have any traces of divinity either.”

“Boom!” These creatures came flying. It didn’t matter whether they were alive or mere corpses, at this second, they seemed to have been reborn and unleashed their strongest power.

When these creatures arrived, the three giant beasts that wanted

to destroy the chariot were scared out of their minds. They were called Demon Forefathers, but compared to real divine beasts, they were not even worthy of being called juniors.

Demons had an instinctive fear of divine beasts. If it was just one skeleton, then perhaps they could give it a good fight! However, the sheer amount of beasts destroyed even the tiniest dregs of their courage. They wanted to flee but were surrounded by these beasts in an instant!

Not to mention them, even three Godkings would quake in fear after being trapped by this battalion of beasts. These were legendary existences; after all, a single matured Golden Dragon was already able to fight an Immortal Emperor for some time!

“Aooo—” They had no other choice and howled as they prepared themselves. Cornered beasts will still fight! They lunged themselves at these immortal beasts.

Li Qiye only smiled as the death chapter continued to move and transform. The immortal beasts all cried out as well to kill these three beasts.

Keep in mind that a phoenix alone was able to kill a God-Monarch back at the Alchemy Kingdom. With so many leading creatures like Golden Dragons, Phoenixes, and Kun Pengs, even a Godking would be massacred.

“Oooooo—” The three gigantic beasts screamed as a horrifying tearing sound echoed in the sky! All three were ripped apart as

their blood spurted from their bodies. No matter how they struggled, it was all for naught.

Anyone, even Godkings, would shiver and break out in a cold sweat after seeing three powerful creatures being torn apart like this.

Jian Wushuang was speechless after seeing this. She had almost grown accustomed to Li Qiye's heaven-defying nature. Ye Qingcheng's so-called incredible means were only child's play compared to him!

“What a shame that they aren't living immortal beasts. Otherwise, riding one would be even more awe-inspiring.” Long Jingxian, on the other hand, was full of regrets despite her excitement at seeing these wondrous creatures.

These summoned beasts were the skeletons inside the ancestral graves of the Divine Beast Realm. The last time Li Qiye went there, he imprinted the Death Chapter into them, allowing him to summon this many of them in an instant.

“Rawr!” After killing the three beasts, these immortal creatures headed straight for the ravine's ancestral ground. Such a force was unstoppable; even Godkings had no choice but to accept their deaths!

“What, is there any justice in this world? Li Qiye doesn't need to do anything himself, he can already massacre an imperial lineage. He is only using the ravine for entertainment or a little exercise!”

Any sect or powerful existence would find this whole string of events utterly terrifying!

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” A supreme formation like the three emperors formation couldn’t withstand the assault of so many beasts either. It broke apart in just a moment.

“No...” Under the attack of the divine beasts and the treefather, the two Godkings from the ravine were murdered. They couldn’t accept this defeat even at the very last moment since they believed that with the emperor formation, they could kill even a Godking. They would have never expected this result.

“Screechh!” Next was the miserable scream of the Three-legged Golden Crow. It was torn apart by the divine beasts as well. Its endless refined sunfire splashed everywhere until eventually returning to the sun.

The imperial formation, two Godkings, and the Golden Crow were all annihilated. This left the surviving disciples of the ravine in a state of despair!

At this moment in a far away location in the Stone Medicine World, a particular altar could be found. Someone was chanting an incantation to call back the imperial weapons.

If anyone could see the people on the altar, they would definitely be surprised. One was Ravine Master Miao and the other was the famous Scorpion God, an ex-general of Immortal Emperor Jin She.

Back at Bi'an City, the old scorpion was very wily. He noticed that the situation wasn't looking optimistic and was the first to escape without any regard for his reputation. Because of his actions, he was the only one who left the city alive!

“Ommm—” After receiving the summons, the two true treasures and seven life treasures wanted to escape!

However, the divine beasts quickly trapped these nine weapons. Li Qiye came out from his chariot and stood before them.

“Boom!” The two true treasures wanted to open a supreme domain. Two majestic shadows emerged from the weapons. At the same time, the seven life treasures also erupted with bright lights. The imperial aura emitting from these seven weapons made the two shadows even more terrifying.

At this time, the entire world trembled. This powerful might seemed ready to crush the entire world at any time. People stood with bated breaths while watching this unraveling battle.

However, Li Qiye remained carefree before such might.

“Boom!” His thousand hands appeared along with the thirteen palaces. They controlled his wondrous weapons that included the yin yang mirror, the mountain bell, the pentagate, and the green lamp... Every single one of them exuded an aura that would frighten anyone!

Many people stared at this scene in palpitation. They wondered if this battle was going to crush the entire world or not.

“If you spirits want to fight, I’ll be happy to oblige!” Li Qiye smiled at the two majestic shadows: “I’ll give you two choices right now. One, this true treasure shall obediently stay behind for me; you will unlock your heavenly seal and obey me forever! Two, I’ll destroy all of you indiscriminately, even if it means that I won’t get a single weapon! If you all don’t believe me, just try me!”

Having said that, he pointed at one of the two true treasures. He wanted to forcibly keep this one since he viewed it with high regard!

The two majestic shadows were flashing inside this tight encirclement.

Many people drew deep breaths when they saw Li Qiye threatening these existences that others worshiped as deities. However, after having thought about it, hadn’t Li Qiye also threatened the Coiling Dragon Banner three days ago? In the end, it quietly surrendered.

This only stunned the crowd and solidified their opinion on just how Li Qiye was too heaven-defying and scary!

Chapter 903: Yang Vine

Li Qiye chuckled at the two flashing shadows and said: “My patience is wearing thin. If you make a decision quickly, I’ll show some benevolence and let you bring away your surviving disciples. Of course, you can also choose to refuse, then I’ll let the world witness the destruction of a true treasure!”

Eventually, the true treasure chosen by Li Qiye extinguished its endless light and imperial aura. Next was the clicking sound of the heavenly seal unlocking.

It fell into Li Qiye’s hand and made an oath of loyalty! From now on, it would be his true treasure!

“A wise man is a real hero!” Li Qiye smiled and put away this treasure.

Eventually, Li Qiye let go of the other true treasure and seven life treasures. Even though the lucky survivors from the ravine left, all of them were lugubrious. It was over for their ravine. From now on, the Heavenhoof Ravine would no longer exist in the Stone Medicine World.

“You want to leave? Not so fast!” When Li Qiye was trapping the imperial weapons, the Yang Vine in the sacred ground saw that the situation wasn’t looking so optimistic. It wanted to run away with the sacred ground.

However, before it could flee, opposing roots appeared out of

nowhere and blocked its escape.

Soldier Tree, Ginseng Ancestor, Reincarnation Soulvine, Immortal Injury Peony, Silkworm Dragon Soulgrass... these powerful immortal medicines immediately rushed out to stop its retreat.

Even the Alchemy Fowl came out. It hovered on top of the sacred ground and was ready to attack at any time.

All of a sudden, the Yang Vine was caught in an impasse. Its light flashed left and right, but it had nowhere to go. It was definitely strong enough to handle any of these medicines in a one on one face off. However, the numbers game was completely against it; even if it was stronger, the outcome wouldn't change.

At this moment, the two sides started to heat up. The Yang Vine couldn't escape while the Alchemy Fowl's group didn't dare to attack without Li Qiye's command.

After putting away the true treasure, Li Qiye went before the Yang Vine.

“How does this make sense? My sect has been striving for 800,000 years and we don't even have a single immortal root, how does he have so many all to himself?!” Many were envious, but even more were jealous.

Many ancestors were at a loss for words as well. Countless great

powers carefully cultivated immortal medicines as if they were their parents, but Li Qiye was different. He actually treated these medicines like henchmen. This degree of extravagance was something others could never achieve!

Li Qiye stared at the vine embedded in the sacred ground and lightly smiled: “Surrender now before it is too late!”

“Crash!” The Yang Vine that was lying on the ground immediately rose like a tree and emitted a powerful aura.

Li Qiye looked at it with one eye and shook his head: “Under this type of situation, even a True Immortal Medicine wouldn’t be able to threaten me, let alone you. Dragons coil for me and tigers crouch before me! You are indeed a bit extraordinary, but the only thing that I value is the calabash growing on your body!”

The Yang Vine cautiously stared at Li Qiye. It had seen even Immortal Emperors before, but this brat ahead was much scarier.

“My patience is limited.” Li Qiye lazily said: “If you submit and follow me, I won’t mistreat you in the future! Otherwise, I can let them have a go at you. A Yang Vine is definitely very nutritious! The choice is yours!”

After hearing this, all of the immortal plants began to eye the vine as if they were about to jump and cut it into pieces at any time.

Even the Alchemy Fowl was circling above it. It would be the first to aim for the calabash growing on the vine after Li Qiye's order!

The Yang Vine became dejected from all of the glares. It lied down on the ground once more and spoke: "Fine, I surrender."

"You have to make an oath to surrender." The Silkworm Dragon Soulgrass immediately added as if it wanted to make a contribution.

The vine had no other choice at this juncture. It made a vow of loyalty towards Li Qiye.

"Hahaha, this is not a bad sacred ground at all. Not bad, not bad, if I take root here for a few ten thousand years, I can definitely transform for the twelfth time!" The soulgrass was salivating while looking at the sacred ground.

The Yang Vine hugged his sacred ground even closer with a reluctant appearance after seeing the soulgrass' expression.

"Bah, what are you saying!" The mud block from the alchemy garden flew out from Li Qiye's palace and yelled at the soulgrass: "Don't use my field anymore then if you dare!"

"Haha, brother, I'm just kidding. You are definitely the best in this world, it's just that this sacred ground really isn't bad. It just happens to complement what I'm lacking for my twelfth transformation." The soulgrass immediately smiled in response.

It had transformed successfully eleven times so far. If it could transform one more time, then it would be an unprecedented soulgrass.

This scene left many people salivating. An eleventh transformation soulgrass... Just a ninth transformation soulgrass would already require quite a bit of luck to obtain for a great power. However, this soulgrass before them was at the eleventh stage! Moreover, it was also a Silkworm Dragon, the best type of soulgrass!

Even the Alchemy Kingdom might not be able to have this type of soulgrass, but Li Qiye could easily take one out. This was such a jealousy-inducing event.

“Okay, the alchemy field and the sacred ground can complement each other. The Yang Vine can also grow on top of the alchemy field so that everyone will benefit.” Li Qiye ordered.

Li Qiye’s words left all the medicines happy. The Yang Vine looked at the muddy field for a bit and found that it really wasn’t weaker than its sacred ground, so it readily accepted the decision.

“Now here is a task for all of you. Dig out the secret treasury of the ravine for me.” Li Qiye issued another command.

“Understood, we are the best at finding treasures buried underground.” The Reincarnation Soulvine immediately cried out and rushed underground to obtain this meritorious contribution.

The other immortal roots also rushed into the ground. Even the Yang Vine participated in this competition.

The treefather chuckled helplessly at this sight. Only Li Qiye would be able to display such a grand gesture — having so many immortal medicines as his errand boys.

The ravine was a great location. It occupied this land for so many years where the worldly energy came together, creating sacred springs, treasure trees, and other amazing locations...

After receiving his orders, these medicines acted like bandits. During their excavation process, they conveniently took all of these earthly treasures into their own pockets.

“Aizz, I should have joined in as well.” The four-eyed basilisk in the distant was also salivating after seeing this. But how could he dare to compete against a group of immortal medicines? It would be like trying to snatch food from the jaws of a tiger.

As for the majority of the ancestors in this world looking at the looting process, they became very envious as well. They felt itchy inside, but they wouldn't dare to compete against the medicines even if they were one hundred times bolder. Right now, who would dare to oppose Li Qiye?

Destroying the Stony Edge Kingdom then the Heavenhoof Ravine. A disaster would strike those who provoked the Fiercest!

While the looting was going on, in a distant location in the Stone Medicine World, a true treasure and seven life treasures safely arrived.

Ravine Master Miao couldn't help but turn quiet after seeing the loss of one true treasure. It could be said that after this battle, their ravine was destroyed. They lost their ancestral ground and one true treasure.

The dejected ravine master sighed and murmured: "I am ashamed to face our ancestors."

The Scorpion God was next to him and gently shook his head: "War is always cruel as it follows the law of the jungle. At the very least, you managed to save Immortal Emperor Qilin's direct branch."

After a very long time, the lucky survivors of the ravine arrived. After looking at the meager number of survivors, Ravine Master Miao screamed in sorrow: "One battle ended our sect, the world will no longer have the word Heavenhoof!"

"Miao Chan's vision was correct. She is much better than us." The Scorpion God lamented as well with a sigh: "I underestimated Li Qiye too much. If I didn't support the Golden Crow Tribe and sided with you instead, then perhaps the ravine would still be here today."

The ravine master only sighed. With a dark expression, he

eventually told the lucky survivors: “Take your time recovering. From now on, we will no longer be the Heavenhoof Ravine. Nothing is more important than surviving right now. Live on! This is all that we want to accomplish!”

The surviving disciples were full of regrets, especially the two lucky elders. They were completely ashamed. If they supported the ravine master back then, then this wouldn't have happened to their sect.

“Miao Chan can take up the role.” The Scorpion God suggested: “If Miao Chan is in charge, perhaps we can still revive our ravine and have a place in this world.”

“No, I don't want to push Miao'er into another pit.” The ravine master had become discouraged and lacking in ambition: “Miao'er had worked hard enough. I only hope that she can live happily ever after. This is more important than anything else.”

“As long as I am alive, I will spend the rest of my days protecting your branch so that it can continue on.” Eventually, the Scorpion God gently sighed. This was the final leg of a lineage with two emperors. Even an old general of an Immortal Emperor was powerless to alter their fate.

“We won't oppose Li Qiye in this generation. He will surely become the Immortal Emperor. If we remain unrepentant, there will be no place for us to live in the nine worlds after he ascends to the throne.” The Scorpion God gave one last warning to the lucky survivors!

Chapter 904: Stealing The Creation Of The Land

While the immortal medicines were searching for the secret treasure trove, Li Qiye controlled his Death Chapter and recalled the death energy. “Boom!” The divine beasts tore the sky apart and instantly disappeared. They went back to whence they came, the ancestral graves.

The shocked and envious crowd didn’t know where Li Qiye found so many divine beasts after seeing this scene. This was still an extraordinary event, even if they were only skeletons.

What was even more frightening was that Li Qiye cultivated this type of sect-destroying merit law. He had no need to do anything. Just think about it, he could summon so many divine beasts like that at his whim. This was more than enough to destroy an imperial lineage whenever he wanted.

Li Qiye told the treefather after sending away the beasts: “There is still room for Treefather to grow. Compared to other Godkings, your advantage is huge. Although you chose the path of the grand era, there is still great potential in your future.”

“Young Noble is right. Without going out into the world, one wouldn’t be able to understand the immensity of the heaven and earth. In the past, I was trapped in a lone corner and my vision was limited. My current peak and new enlightenment are all thanks to you.” The treefather nodded.

In the current world, the majority of those at the Godking level from the previous generation were old. Some were even on the verge of death, thus it was difficult for them to break through.

It was different for the treefather. After cutting his main root, it was the same as starting all over again. He managed to leave Allpine Mountain. Even though this meant that he had lost his eternal life, he would be able to go very far in this generation since his blood energy was plentiful! In this regard, the treefather had an absolute advantage against the Godkings that were sealed for countless years.

In the past, the treefather back at the mountain had no ambition. He was content to stay in one place, thus his dao heart reached its limit. But now, coming out with the will to compete in the world let him break through the restrictions that chained dao mentality, especially with the recent battles.

His future potential was incredible due to his blood energy. In the future, if he couldn't become an Immortal Emperor Assailant, he would still be at the highest peak of Godkings!

At the same time, his battle prowess increased quite a bit as well compared to before since he had the Coiling Dragon Banner now. If he could work well with his banner, then it wouldn't be a problem for his battle power to increase by one or two levels at all.

“Rumble!” The earth cracked. The immortal medicines broke the seals underground and threw out a huge treasury.

With its appearance came a flood of immortal energy that filled the air; clearly, there were many great treasures inside. This secret treasury was much better compared to the Stony Edge Kingdom's.

For an imperial lineage, a regular treasury was the storage for treasures and merit laws. As for their secret treasuries, these were the storages left behind by their ancestors. Moreover, it was not easy for future generations to open this secret treasury!

When a sect wished to open their secret treasury, this meant that the sect had clearly declined and needed the help of the treasury for revitalization. Of course, this was the intent and purpose of these secret treasuries in the first place.

“We found it!” The immortal medicines were very excited since they knew they would gain some good stuff from it as well.

People's eyes reddened from greed. The sects were full of covetous intent for the secret treasury of an imperial lineage that had two emperors. There were definitely incredible treasures that would allow someone to easily establish their own sects inside. The materials within could erect a gigantic dynasty!

“Well done.” Li Qiye nodded and smiled. With a blaring sound, he stored the treasury inside his fate palace then told the medicines: “Everyone, come back for now.”

The medicines went back into the palace. They began to discuss moving from the alchemy field to the sacred ground while the opposite was true for the Yang Vine.

This was because the two places complemented each other. It wasn't only good for the medicines but also beneficial for the two locations themselves.

Li Qiye stomped on the ancestral ground of the ravine. After some measuring, he finally went to stand at the top of a peak.

“Open for me!” He screamed while his thirteen palaces soared to the sky. They began to line up to form something. At this time, they seemed to be above the high heavens.

He opened a palace and the Terra's Root jumped out then quickly embedded itself into the ravine's ancestral ground.

“Boom!” A heavenly waterfall surged upward. No, this was not a waterfall, it was liquified worldly energy gushing out like a spring. The opened fate palace devoured this endless source of worldly energy.

Using the Terra's Root, Li Qiye frantically pulled away the infinite worldly energy from this earth into his palace!

Many big shots went silent after seeing this. The ravine had occupied this land for millions of years. There was a reason why its progenitor, Immortal Emperor Qilin, chose this place to establish his sect.

There was a vast ocean-like amount of worldly energy beneath

this land. One even said that the great vein underground connected straight to the Beast Vein, one of the three ancestral veins!

The sect stood strong from one generation to another, monopolizing the wondrous natural essences here. Countless people coveted this land, but no one dared to do anything to the ravine.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” This region shook under Li Qiye’s constant suction. The ancestral ground became dried up and began to crack; it no longer bore the same pristine and rich worldly energy from before.

At the same time, Li Qiye’s thirteen palaces continued to change with this new influx of worldly energy. Suddenly, they disappeared and turned into nothingness.

“What’s going on?” Someone murmured when they saw the disappearance of the palaces.

Even a Godking like the treefather or peerless geniuses like the brother and sister duo from the Jianlong Clan, Long Jingxian, and Jian Wushuang held their breaths while watching things play out.

“Four palaces to form a domain, eight to form a kingdom, twelve to form the heavens, then what will thirteen palaces turn into?” Even the Hundred-Life Alchemy Emperor back at the depths of the Alchemy Kingdom was full of curiosity.

The transformations of the palaces were known to all cultivators. The only exception was for the thirteenth!

Since time immemorial, no one in this world knew or believed in the existence of a thirteenth palace. It was common knowledge that twelve was the limit.

But today, Li Qiye — with his palaces — broke common sense. Thus, many were curious to see what the thirteen palaces will turn into.

This was about to be an unprecedented event, a new common sense, a new system all built by Li Qiye! In the future, the limit of cultivators would no longer be twelve since Li Qiye had a thirteenth palace!

The vast emptiness blotted out this entire area. Eventually, a figure emerged amidst this nothingness. It was Li Qiye! Time stopped and myriad laws stood still when he made his appearance. All the stars and celestials in the sky lost their brilliance.

At this time, Li Qiye was not an Immortal Emperor, he was above one. He stood above the high heavens as if he already rose to prominence before the primal chaos. It was as if he had already crossed the time itself.

Inside the vast emptiness, there were faint scenes of Li Qiye opening a world. He created the sun and moon and gave birth to all things; he was the creator himself.

Because of him, the world was born. Because of him, all things existed. Because of him, there was life...

As he stood proudly in the center of everything, all things came into existence because of him. As he loomed in the core, all things faltered for his sake. He was the world, he was myriad existences...

There was no way to describe this feeling at this time.

“Is that Li Qiye?” Jian Wushuang murmured while looking at the Li Qiye in the vast expanse.

“I don’t know.” Even the treefather couldn’t see through it. He gently shook his head and added: “It might be him or a future self or just a rendition created by the thirteen palaces!”

“Nirvana Heavens!” Li Qiye gently sighed inside the emptiness. His sigh became an eternal mantra, an everlasting melody.

Nirvana Heavens! This title laid out everything for the thirteen palaces. From now on, there will be another law in this world. Thirteen palaces to form the Nirvana Heavens!

Finally, the vast emptiness disappeared along with the tyrannical Li Qiye. The ancestral ground of the ravine once again appeared before the world while the real Li Qiye was standing on the same peak.

“Crakkk!” The ancestral ground had many cracks. It was

withered with its rivers dried up and mountains broken. Only a dead silence loomed over this land.

Li Qiye put away the Terra's Root, ending his devouring process before insipidly saying: "I shall leave behind a little bit of worldly energy for the citizens of this land!"

He did not drain the worldly energy underground completely and instead left behind a majority of it. The citizens within the ravine's territory would be unaffected.

However, future cultivators or descendants from the ravine would never be able to create a new sect or revive the ravine on this land.

"From now on, Heavenhoof is no more!" A person murmured after seeing the complete collapse of the ancestral ground.

Everyone knew that as long as there were survivors, people from the ravine could still revive the sect. However, Li Qiye had sucked the worldly energy from this ancestral ground, rendering the task impossible. The absence of worldly energy meant the absence of everything!

Chapter 905: Destroying The Physique Tribulation

Some felt that this was too wasteful after seeing how the ancestral ground had withered. If Li Qiye didn't drain this place of its worldly energy, they could establish their own sect here. After all, this was a wonderful land!

A big shot from the previous generation murmured: "This is quite merciful already."

Li Qiye was fully capable of draining all of the worldly energy from this land. However, he only did so for the ancestral ground of the ravine and left the rest of the territories under the ravine's jurisdiction untouched. This allowed for the citizens and their land to remain unaffected. It was quite a benevolent decision.

Compared to Li Qiye, the so-called number one Ye Qingcheng was much more vicious. He sucked the blood dry from all of the Stony Edge Kingdom's citizens, turning them into dried corpses. He even drained all the world energy in the kingdom, turning it into a shattered land of death.

Under such circumstances, even if the citizens of the kingdom were still alive, they wouldn't be able to stay on that withered land. There was no other choice but to leave their homeland.

"Bang! Bang!" When Li Qiye was recalling the Terra's Root, waves of thunder resounded. Countless tribulation clouds gathered in the sky.

“What tribulation is this?” Many were astonished to see the clouds in the sky. It came too suddenly without any warnings. Before everyone’s eyes, the clouds quickly turned into a pond of lightning. An ominous gate opened in the sky and countless generals from hell descended along with thick bolts of lightning the size of mountains. All of these things seemed to want to destroy this entire land!

A great ancestor recognized this tribulation and exclaimed: “A physique tribulation... of an Immortal Physique! Is this minor completion?”

In fact, many people knew that Li Qiye cultivated an Immortal Physique. However, no one knew which one exactly since his physique was too bizarre!

“How many Immortal Physiques are there?” The Hundred-Life Alchemy Emperor was the only person who knew some inside information. His curiosity was at its peak.

Others might not know Li Qiye’s origin, but the emperor knew it too well. Li Qiye had groomed the Black Dragon King who had two grand completion Immortal Physiques, thus the emperor wondered about the number of physiques Li Qiye trained.

Li Qiye only smiled in the face of this descending physique tribulation from the sky. His chest became resplendent as an Inner Physique flew out.

The moment the Soaring Immortal Physique came out, time seemed to have halted from its beat.

The Hell Suppressing Physique could instantly suppress all tribulations. All the evil energy was crushed in just the blink of an eye as if they were nothing before its might.

The Void Imperfection Physique made myriad laws rescind. All devils were instantly purified, so the tribulation itself was heavily affected and its light quickly started to flash from instability.

The Sky Destroyer Physique tore apart everything with an unstoppable sharpness. The inner physique flew to the sky and killed all the devils and gods in its path.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The four Inner Physiques soared into the sky to meet the tribulation head on. They carried an unstoppable momentum, intending to annihilate the tribulation completely!

“No... this... this is absolutely impossible!” A Virtuous Paragon dropped to the ground after seeing four Inner Physiques shoot into the sky.

“Four physiques, how, how can this be?!” Even the most arrogant genius would gasp from this sight. None dared to believe their own eyes!

“The legend is real!” An old Virtuous Paragon had heard of something and murmured: “People say that the Black Dragon King

had two grand completion Immortal Physiques. It seems like one can truly cultivate multiple physiques in this world!”

In just a second, countless people were shaken. Thirteen palaces had already broken the common logic, so four Inner Physiques couldn’t be so readily accepted as the truth by these people.

One Inner Physique for one cultivator was the law, there was no way someone would have two. However, Li Qiye had four of them right now, scaring everyone to death!

The existence of thirteen palaces was easier to accept since it was adding one more fate palace. However, how could the inhabitants of this world accept four Inner Physiques? This was three more than the norm; even the most brilliant genius wouldn’t be able to accomplish such a feat despite striving for such a thing for the rest of their life.

“Just kill me now!” Someone pitifully screamed: “How can I live while being in the same generation as this demonspawn?!”

At this time, all geniuses had to bow their proud heads and become dejected. No matter how amazing they might be, they wouldn’t be worth mentioning before Li Qiye and his thirteen palaces and four Inner Physiques.

“Can I also do it?” Even the always-conceited Mei Aonan was stupefied. If thirteen palaces shook her confidence, then the four Inner Physiques completely smashed it all over the place.

The talented Mei Aonan suddenly didn't know what she had to do to compete against Li Qiye. Her eleven palaces? They became powerless against his own.

The four physiques would crush everything else from her! She was in a state of total bewilderment.

Even Long Jingxian, who had a natural Immortal Fate, was listless. In her eyes, Li Qiye had transcended everything. He was no longer human. No one could compare to him!

“Even the strongest in all the eons would only be at this level at best.” The Hundred-Life Alchemy Emperor was astonished as well. He couldn't help but sigh and felt strangely sentimental. He pitied those who were born in this particular generation. It was a predestined tragedy.

“Boom!” In the midst of the crowd's stupor, Li Qiye's four Inner Physiques swept through the tribulation. Even a stronger tribulation would be ground into smithereens in the face of their might. The pond of lightning was instantly destroyed and the tribulation collapsed as a whole.

The sky became sunny again as the four Inner Physiques went back to Li Qiye's body. There was a change to them, resulting in a dazzling radiance. It was as if nothing could be stronger than the four great physiques.

“So simple...” Everyone was at a loss for words at how the four physiques made short work of the tribulation. Naturally, four

great physiques would be able to surpass the physique tribulation.

The alchemy emperor quietly added: “This is four Immortal Physiques at minor completion... They would be completely unimaginable at grand completion in the future.”

Just imagine, the Black Dragon King had dual physiques at grand completion and reigned supreme for three generations. Even when Immortal Emperors met him, they acted cordially. In the end, he even assailed Immortal Emperor Ta Kong and tore apart the Heaven’s Will.

One day, if these four Immortal Physiques reached completion, then even if Li Qiye didn’t become an Immortal Emperor, the emperor of that generation could only watch him from afar.

The Hundred-Life Alchemy Emperor was not the only person with such thoughts. Many ancestors from great powers or overlords sealed for many generations famed for their invincibility began to ponder as well.

Four Immortal Physiques and thirteen palaces had never appeared before in history. If, one day, when all of Li Qiye’s physiques reached grand completion, just how terrifying would it be?

Even if he didn’t want to compete for the Heaven’s Will, would anyone else dare to do so against him? What would an Immortal Emperor do when they met an existence like Li Qiye?

“This will be a tragedy even if someone else becomes Immortal Emperor in this generation, something far more tragic than Immortal Emperor Ta Kong!” An old ancestor murmured: “Thirty thousand years ago, there was the Black Dragon King. Now, there is Li Qiye!”

Although Immortal Emperors were known to be invincible during their generation, it was different for the last three Immortal Emperors.

Immortal Emperor Qian Li, Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, and Immortal Emperor Ta Kong were the most recent three emperors in the current era. However, there was one person who stood strong during their generations, the Black Dragon King.

Everyone knew about the Black Dragon King being revered for three generations. An existence like him cast a shadow over the invincible Immortal Emperors.

It was better for Immortal Emperor Qian Li and Immortal Emperor Yin Tian. It was rumored that the Black Dragon King had a great friendship with both of these emperors. One even went further to say that they were best of friends and had fought together on the same side!

However, only tragedy was left in store for Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. Not only was he in the same era as the dragon king, the legend stated that they did not get along. Eventually, they fought a world-shattering battle that caused the Heaven’s Will to be torn apart!

The end of the Black Dragon King's era left everyone relieved. However, before they could become excited again for the new generation, this Li Qiye came out of nowhere, someone who was even more frightening than the dragon king.

A few pessimistic ancestors said: "Does he want to reign supreme for ten generations or something?"

Someone like the dragon king reigned for three generations. Li Qiye would most likely be even stronger than the dragon king, so ten generations seemed quite plausible.

"Boom!" Different thoughts ran rampant inside the minds of the spectators. However, the area around Li Qiye dimmed as if the sky was about to turn dark.

A very bizarre scene appeared in the sky. It turned into a strange shade of red that had a demonic characteristic, causing others to feel a chill without being cold.

"Zzz!" The red clouds in the sky suddenly came together to form a mirror.

This mirror reflected a red and demonic ray of light from the sky directly onto Li Qiye's body. This light stuck onto him like maggots sticking to bones; it was impossible to elude the light no matter where he went!

Chapter 906: Destroy The Life Reduction

“Life Reduction...” Many ancestors focused on the scene in the sky.

The appearance of a Life Reduction interested many, even causing glimmers to appear in their eyes. Perhaps, they were hoping that the Life Reduction would be able to take care of Li Qiye. However, they knew better than to wish for the impossible. Even Ye Qingcheng was able to surpass his Life Reduction, let alone Li Qiye.

Nevertheless, they continued to hold onto this fool’s hope. Even if it was the most minute chance, they craved this miracle.

“Zzz—” Li Qiye’s body immediately aged after the crimson light in the sky shone on his body. His hair turned white while wrinkles appeared on his skin.

“Boom!” Li Qiye unleashed all of his blood energy to fight the Life Reduction. His life wheel appeared and the Yin Yang Sea of Blood rushed to the sky. It carried an endless tidal wave of blood energy to stop the changes in his body.

Life Reduction was one of the two great disasters for cultivators. Moreover, it was even worse than a Fate Calamity. Many powerful cultivators couldn’t surpass this particular tribulation, and some even chose to hide from it for the rest of their life.

Li Qiye’s Life Reduction was more overbearing and faster than

anyone's imagination.

“Zzz—” The torrential amount of blood energy that erupted from Li Qiye's body instantly dried up under the effects of this tribulation. Li Qiye channeled his sea of blood once more and created another ocean full of energy to blot out the sky. The entire world shook due to this flood of blood energy.

He even channeled all of his longevity blood at the same time. This force would cause any great power's ancestor to quiver since it completely surpassed Virtuous Paragons!

However, even this prolific amount of blood energy instantly withered when faced with the demonic crimson light.

This scene was spectacular. People say that the ocean cannot dry up in one day. However, Li Qiye's ocean-like blood energy indeed evaporated in an instant. One could easily imagine just how terrifying this event was to the spectators.

To the dismay of the crowd, even his longevity blood became torrid right away.

“Zzz—” Li Qiye immediately became weak and feeble and took on the appearance of an eighty year old mortal man. It seemed that all of his vitality had been sucked from his body!

“This, this is so horrifying.” Both geniuses and ancestors alike had never experienced such a terrorizing Life Reduction, a

calamity capable of drying up someone's blood energy in the blink of an eye. This was too scary to even think about.

However, Li Qiye's Life Reduction did not stop there. The high heavens itself mustered all of its might to deal with Li Qiye. The Life Reduction even devoured all the worldly energy in this region.

The area around Li Qiye quickly became a wilted world. Even time and space were drained and crushed. There was no worldly energy, no power of the grand dao, and the force of time and space were extinguished as well.

Li Qiye fell into a terrifying darkness devoid of time. This was a dead space void of even the grand dao. However, the high heavens took it one step higher. A dead space would still have the power of darkness and evil, but the forces of darkness and evil were not here either. This entire territory had become a desolate zone!

“Such a Life Reduction exists in this world? All forces of nature are completely dried up!” Even the alchemy emperor was shivering in fear!

Everyone knew that when a Life Reduction descends, it would accelerate the aging of cultivators. Their blood energy and lifespan would quickly dry up. If they couldn't withstand this trial, then they would die from old age.

However, Li Qiye's Life Reduction was not this simple. All other forces in the area were ravaged as well.

To deal with their Life Reduction, cultivators could only use the power of the grand dao to fight it without their blood energy and lifespan. But now, Li Qiye had nothing to work with. What would he use to fight this tribulation?

“It seems like the old heavens could stand it no longer. So this young man is heaven-defying to a rebellious level? The old heavens will not spare him!” A few geniuses were secretly happy to see this scene. This terrifying Life Reduction simply wanted to end Li Qiye!

The alchemy emperor was aghast as he murmured: “Even an Immortal Emperor wouldn’t have experienced this kind of Life Reduction.”

In fact, even powerful ancestors were trembling before such a mighty tribulation, including the Allpine Treefather. There were no other forces to borrow! How could one surpass this Life Reduction?

Both Long Jingxian and Jian Wushuang, who were completely confident in Li Qiye, became worried.

“Old Villainous Heavens, you want my life? Good, take it then!” Li Qiye let out a crazed laughter. His thirteen palaces soared to the sky and opened to pour out waves of universal laws.

“Buzz!” After the paving of laws, a small boat appeared. It opened up and exuded an endless amount of blood energy.

“Rumble!” A terrifying scene took place. The portal inside the small ship poured down an insane amount of energy, like an apocalyptic flood that spread over the entire world!

“Zzz—” The Life Reduction also frantically drained this huge amount of energy. Although its ability to consume everything was monstrous, the small boat’s blood energy was even more frightening. It became more and more outrageous as if the blood energy of all existences in the nine worlds could be found within. Afterward, it jumped to an even higher level as it exuded the blood energy from thousands upon thousands of Godkings...

Eventually, it was the blood energy from thousands of Immortal Emperors. This scene was unimaginable. The nine heavens and ten earths were drowned out by Li Qiye’s blood energy.

The entire Stone Medicine World quaked under his horrifying vitality as if it was about to crack at any moment.

“What, what is that...” Everyone became stunned. This was even more appalling compared to the thirteen palaces and four Immortal Physiques.

Even Godkings paled from this scene. They quivered under this huge amount of blood energy. Not even an Immortal Emperor would be able to unleash this amount. It was more than enough to feed an entire world. Such a thing had escaped the boundaries of imagination!

Li Qiye had learned a merit law recently. He was perfecting this

law step by step. It started out as an incomplete law that he had witnessed on the other side of Nightsea.

It was slowly refined due to Li Qiye's research. Moreover, it would become a peerless law across the eons, looming above the high heavens!

Li Qiye chose a very simple and ordinary name for this merit law — Nine Ants!

It was divided into three initial forms: vessel of life, vessel of genesis, and vessel of athanasia!

At this moment, Li Qiye was still learning the profundities of the vessel of life. He had some understanding of the general outline from the vessel of genesis. Only the vessel of athanasia was without its own profundities.

At this time, Li Qiye had opened the vessel of life. He was gifted the power of life from countless existences in the nine worlds as well as their life energy that was pouring down from the vessel, resulting in an unbelievable spectacle.

For Li Qiye, one thought was enough to form myriad physiques while his thirteen palaces were only minor pioneering creations. However, the Nine Ants law was the real creation that would surpass all else. Of course, he was still relying on the foundation laid out by previous experts in this field.

The torrential blood energy engulfed the Stone Medicine World. This huge realm became like a little wooden boat lost in a stormy sea.

All existences were trembling at this second without exception. This level of blood energy was just too domineering.

“Boom!” Eventually, the Life Reduction in the sky could no longer bear this massive amount of blood energy. The entire tribulation was overwhelmed and burst apart from overconsumption.

After its destruction, all the phenomena disappeared. The vessel of life also withdrew its insane amount of blood energy. In a brief moment, peace returned to the entire Stone Medicine World. The calm sky became sunny again and all was well.

“You, you can actually survive it like that?!” Everyone was astounded. No one thought about surpassing the tribulation in this manner. They had no comments.

Since the ancient ages, there had been many methods to defeat this type of tribulation. Some chose to meet it head on, some chose to avoid it, and some would get caught up in a long struggle with it... However, to use a huge amount of blood energy to destroy it — this seemed to be the only occasion of it happening!

Breaking the Life Reduction from feeding it too much blood energy? No one would dare to imagine such a thing. Even a Godking would not have enough blood energy to attempt it, but Li

Qiye was able to destroy the Life Reduction in this manner.

“Mommy...” A few people that were praying for the Life Reduction to kill Li Qiye cried out. They fell butt-first to the ground, completely devastated.

“No one can claim the imperial throne as long as Li Qiye remains in this world!” Even the most brilliant geniuses became depressed and lost all hope!

The name Li Qiye had cast a shadow in their hearts that would become an uncrossable blockade for the rest of their life!

Chapter 907: Crystallized Sea Sect's Destruction

“Boom!” Right when everyone was still paralyzed by Li Qiye’s great blood energy, a thunderous blast resounded in the deepest recesses of the blue sky.

This sound was not particularly loud. However, numerous people in the Stone Medicine World were shaken as if their souls had left their bodies under its ringing.

Even a Godking felt this reverberation in their heart. An instinctive fear overwhelmed them after hearing this sinking sound. Many powerful ancestors looked towards the sky and the heavens. However, very few were able to see it clearly. There was a divine prestige that couldn’t be sensed by any. In short, that place was able to suppress everything in this world; it was above all else.

“The fury of the high heavens!” An ancestor eventually found a clue and murmured: “This is the fury of the heavens in the legends. When the heavens is enraged, it will send down its wrath in the form of a Heavenly Punishment!”

Even the strongest would not act carelessly before such a scene. This was because fewer than few people were able to see the wrath of the heavens. Those who managed to see it with their own eyes would absolutely develop a fear of it.

Some extraordinary grand characters took deep breaths. Just how heaven-defying was Li Qiye to be able to incite the anger of

the heavens? However, he used his blood energy to break the Life Reduction, so it would be rather strange if this didn't bring down the heaven's wrath.

Li Qiye lifted his head to stare at the heavens while standing in the same spot. However, the wrath of the heavens did not descend.

Li Qiye smirked and snorted. He no longer cared for the heavens and gathered his blood energy like a withered tree giving birth to its branches.

His aged look disappeared as his blood energy returned, letting him assume the appearance of a young man again. At this time, his blood energy was countless times stronger compared to before the Life Reduction.

Li Qiye still looked ordinary at this moment, but when he flexed his blood energy, it gave the sensation that it was able to push away mountains and flip over seas. There seemed to be a dragon hidden inside his small frame!

“Zzz—” The four Inner Physiques in his body became blindingly bright. They emitted an unstoppable divine aura and their power soared exponentially.

Waves of laws were exuded from his physiques just like a peacock spreading its tail. Absolute speed, absolute power, absolute weight, and absolute purification! With his great momentum, Li Qiye was opening a whole new domain in this world. It was vast and obscure like the inception of a new world. A sun and moon rose as the

celestials hovered around him. New life was created...

At this moment, each of the four physiques gave off the feeling that they had an absolute domain!

“Immortal Physiques at half completion, and four of them at that!” Someone murmured at this scene: “Virtuous Paragons can only prostrate before him now. Who can stop him and his physiques at half completion besides God-Monarchs and Godkings? Perhaps even an eternal existence would not have the strength to do so!”

Half completion was a common term for cultivators. In fact, Immortal Physiques essentially had no changes. However, on a certain level, they became more powerful and laid out a foundation for invincibility in the future.

Half completion was not the breakthrough of a realm for Immortal Physiques. It was just that prior to Life Reduction, Immortal Physiques were considered minor completion and afterward, they would be at half completion.

Surpassing the Life Reduction was the same as gaining a second life for cultivators with sufficient blood energy. Outside of those with already feeble blood energies, the majority of the people who could surpass their Life Reduction would have even stronger blood energies afterward.

Thus, cultivators thought that it was best to defeat this tribulation as early as possible. Of course, one had to be powerful

enough for this to work!

For Immortal Physique users, if they could defeat the tribulation without suffering any setbacks, then their physique would be considered half completion due to their augmented blood energy.

Even though the physiques themselves were still the same, the rise in blood energy made them much more powerful, perhaps even several times so.

Most importantly, only Immortal Physique users who had surpassed their Life Reduction and obtained half completion would become invincible in the future. Because this achievement meant that the user was still young, their energy would be like a rising sun and would allow for them to cultivate their physique much more easily. This would render the physique's potential limitless, allowing them to go even further in the future to exert the true strength of their physique!

Cultivators had this particular understanding. If one couldn't reach minor completion before their Life Reduction, then even if they reached grand completion in the future, their physiques would be limited.

Some even said that grand completion physiques without going through the half completion step wouldn't be perfect Immortal Physiques; they wouldn't be able to assail Immortal Emperors. Only a perfect physique would be able to assail Immortal Emperors in the future!

This theory was widely accepted by the old sages. Because of this, everyone who cultivated Immortal Physiques paid great attention to the half completion level. Thus, people divided Immortal Physiques into minor, half, and grand completion!

But for Li Qiye, half completion wasn't even a consideration for his Immortal Physiques. For him, everything was as smooth as a flowing river. He had already laid down a strong foundation. More importantly, he cultivated the physique laws from the Physique Scripture itself.

His smooth process assured that he would at least be at minor completion before the onset of Life Reduction. Otherwise, one wouldn't show up.

Countless people were envious of his four half completion Immortal Physiques. This would allow him to sweep through absolutely everything. Talents and aptitudes were all meaningless before four Immortal Physiques!

Li Qiye withdrew his physiques and took a look around. He eventually sat back in his chariot and commanded: "It's all over now. Let us go."

The treefather made a path while the rest of the group was quiet. The madam took the reins and the four bronze stallions pulled the chariot across the sky. It quickly disappeared into the horizon under everyone's gaze.

Only silence could be used to describe the feelings of the

onlookers. In just three short days, so many shocking events had occurred. First was the destruction of the Stony Edge Kingdom, then came the end of the Heavenhoof Ravine. Both of them were imperial lineages. The ravine even had two emperors, but it was still annihilated in the end!

The entire Stone Medicine World fell into tranquility in the face of this brilliant battle record. Many people were lamenting the fact that there was no one else comparable to him among the younger generation at this moment.

Just think about it, Ye Qingcheng spent a countless amount of effort in planning back then to earn the moniker of number one. He had fought ancestors and defeated his competition before. His battle record was quite exemplary as well.

However, his most noteworthy fight was nothing compared to Li Qiye. It was one thing when Li Qiye chose to remain idle, but when he made his move, it resulted in the destruction of imperial lineages!

And when people thought that this turmoil was finally over, a piece of earth-shattering news came from the Alchemy Realm. The Crystallized Sea Sect had been destroyed!

This news spread from the Alchemy Realm across the entire world in the shortest time possible. Many were dumbfounded after hearing this. A third imperial lineage had been destroyed. This world was changing too quickly.

Soon after, the great powers managed to find more information. It turned out that the Beastmaster Citadel, the Jian Clan, and the Jianlong Clan suddenly rose up. In just one night, the three imperial lineages sent out their armies and trampled the sea sect with haste. Before anyone found out about it, the shocking battle had already ended!

The great powers quivered after receiving this news. Everyone knew that these behemoths chose to stay away from the rest of the world. However, they mobilized in just one night to destroy the sea sect. This development left everyone with trepidation.

Many ancestors understood the reason why and murmured: “Li Qiye...”

This thought left them with cold chills. The Jianlong Clan, the Beastmaster Citadel, and the Jian Clan... all of these monsters were willing to work for Li Qiye. Wasn't this a bit too frightening?

Why did these monsters that had been reclusive for generations come out for Li Qiye? Anyone who came up with the real reason would be scared out of their wits.

To the dismay of the world's inhabitants, three imperial lineages had been destroyed in just three short days. Countless great powers recalled their traveling disciples and closed their sects.

Many great ancestors told their disciples: “Everyone who meets Li Qiye must back down. Offenders shall be expelled from the sect. If you offend Li Qiye, then cut off your head and beg for

forgiveness, do not involve the sect!”

These great powers were scared of out their minds since they were nothing compared to imperial lineages like the ravine!

Thus, in order to steer clear of Li Qiye’s conquest of this generation, these great powers chose to close their doors and recall their disciples. They didn’t want to bring about a catastrophe upon themselves!

Chapter 908: Mei Aonan's Chance

The destruction of three imperial lineages in a few short days left the Stone Medicine World in a state of silence. The name Li Qiye became a spell that echoed across the entire sky. It rendered many great powers breathless.

After destroying the sea sect, ancestors from the Jianlong Clan, the Beastmaster Citadel, and the Jian Clan came to meet Li Qiye. At the same time, they also brought the complete secret treasury from the sea sect as well.

Li Qiye only gave it a quick glance before speaking: "Punishment for sinners and rewards for contributors. Destroying the sea sect is a great merit, thus your three houses may share this secret treasury."

"Thank you for your reward, Your Excellency." The ancestors bowed and didn't dare to say anything else. The ancestors from the Jianlong Clan and the citadel all knew Li Qiye's identity at this point. The ancestors from the Jian Clan were catching on as well.

None of the three lineages dared to slight Li Qiye, the legendary tyrant of the ages. They all understood that even if the Dark Crow Li Qiye didn't do anything, his Brave Tiger Legion alone could sweep through the nine worlds!

"Your Excellency, my Jianlong Clan is ready to obey. Where your decree points is where our war banners shall head. Would Your Excellency be willing to accept our service?" An ancestor with a

frightening origin from the Jianlong Clan quickly asked after seeing Li Qiye's good mood.

Li Qiye smiled and said: "Tu Xuan, after so many years, you finally stopped being foolish and have a clear mind again."

This ancestor couldn't help but wryly smile after hearing this: "Your Excellency is right. In the past, we youths were arrogant and wanted to provoke Your Excellency's prestige, resulting in the great offense."

This ancestor was a scary figure. He had an unbelievably high position in the Jianlong Clan and was an existence that had been sealed for many years. He could be considered invincible to the rest of the world, yet he was acting very carefully in front of Li Qiye.

Today, all the people here had been unstoppable during their respective generations; they were the most powerful ancestors from the three imperial lineages. Today, the secret that is Li Qiye remained unspoken. They naturally didn't want to reveal this to outsiders and kept it to themselves.

"I don't blame you for that." Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: "For tens of millions of years, countless people have challenged me. If I kept every single person in mind, I wouldn't have enough time to even sleep. The only reason I sealed your Jianlong Clan is because you shouldn't have participated in that ambush!"

"We know of our sin." Ancestor Tu quickly bowed again. Their clan was persuaded by the Divine Beast Realm back then and

became involved in that great war.

The result was easily imagined. Empress Hong Tian massacred the battlefield while the Brave Tiger Legion trampled over the Divine Beast Realm. One Godking was massacred after another. That battlefield was a scene of carnage where rivers of blood turned into an ocean.

Eventually, these imperial lineages who allied themselves with the beast realm lost completely, resulting in the pleading of the Hundred-Life Alchemy Emperor. They were forgiven at that time, but all were sealed with a blood oath. None of them came out into the world afterward.

“Forget it.” Li Qiye nodded: “Your Jianlong Clan in recent years has been sensible with your reclusion. I can forgive the Alchemy Kingdom and the Beastmaster Citadel, so why not your Jianlong Clan as well? Bring the blood oath here, I shall pardon your clan.”

“We are grateful for Your Excellency’s benevolence. Our Jianlong Clan will go to hell and back at your command!” Ancestor Tu quickly prostrated in exultation. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity for their Jianlong Clan.

Eventually, Li Qiye waved his sleeve slightly and said: “All of you can leave now. Let Mei Aonan come see me.”

Ancestor Tu was startled after hearing this and hastily responded: “Your Excellency, my child has no sense of propriety. I hope that you won’t pay it any mind. I will take her back and re-

educate her well.”

“It’s okay, Tu Xuan, I won’t make things difficult for her. Let her come in.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Ancestor Tu couldn’t do anything else. He gently sighed and left with the other ancestors.

After a while, Mei Aonan came in. However, prior to her entrance, Ancestor Tu warned her time and time again to not do anything foolish, lest she involves the Jianlong Clan and becomes a sinner of the clan.

She only stood there after arriving. She opened her mouth several times but chose to stay quiet in the end.

She wanted to challenge Li Qiye in the past, but after witnessing Li Qiye’s invincibility, she felt despair. Four Immortal Physiques and thirteen palaces; what was she going to use to fight against these things? Thus, she was at a loss for what to do right now. She couldn’t act arrogant before Li Qiye since her confidence had been completely shaken.

“I know you want to challenge me.” Li Qiye smiled: “I have also promised your master to give you a chance. But now, a fight between us won’t be very fair. There is still a long path ahead of you. Wait until you are truly prepared in the future, it still wouldn’t be too late to challenge me then.”

“I understand.” The once bullish Mei Aonan spoke without any confidence. She knew that she was not a match for him at the moment.

Li Qiye noticed her appearance and gently shook his head: “There’s no need to be so down. Just accept the reality that all geniuses living in the same generation as me are doomed to this tragedy.”

His words were very arrogant, but Mei Aonan didn’t feel that he was being outrageous at all. She could only bitterly smile in response.

“I know your talents are incredible, but with regard to the dao heart, you are not a match for your big brother.” Li Qiye continued: “Determination, ambition, and zeal are all good characteristics. However, you are not as accepting as your brother. It is fine to compete for the Heaven’s Will, but there is no need to force yourself to do so. Follow your heart and the dao during your cultivation — this is something you require...”

“... If you push yourself into a dead end, then you will walk down a very narrow path in the future. Think of it this way, success is fine while failure is also acceptable. Just be true to your desires! If you treat the competition for the Heaven’s Will as binding chains, then it will become your biggest obstacle as you vie for the peak. In the future, not to mention challenging me, I’m afraid you won’t even be able to compete with your brother.” Li Qiye sincerely commented. This made Mei Aonan quite surprised.

She looked at him in a strange manner after realizing that he was

lending her a hand: “Why are you helping me?”

“A life of invincibility can be a bit lonely.” Li Qiye chuckled in response: “If there won’t be anyone who challenges me in this world, wouldn’t it be too sad? Although you are not as brave as Jian Wushuang and not as brilliant as Jingxian, what you have is ambition. A heart that reaches for a future of greatness.”

“Are you trying to recruit me?” Mei Aonan was not a fool, so she asked for further clarification.

“It can’t be considered recruitment.” Li Qiye said: “I spent a great deal of thought on Wushuang and Jingxian. To tell the truth, I’m tired of personally grooming people. If you are willing, I would rather let you do as you please and develop on your own! You can act as my nemesis or work under me. I just want to see how far you can go.” He paused for a moment before continuing: “Also, I have seen your brother and I personally hold him in even higher regards. He has a clear and free dao heart. Unfortunately, he has no ambition and I’m sure he wouldn’t be interested in fighting against the world and sweeping through the eight plains. However, you are different, you will be a great general! This has been proven by your praisable execution with the Imperial Edge.”

Mei Aonan asked: “Why should I work for you?”

Li Qiye smiled and replied: “It’s entirely up to you. I won’t force you at all, I am simply giving you a chance.”

“You have the Beastmaster Citadel, the Jian Clan, and even my

Jianlong Clan — isn't this enough?" Mei Aonan stared at him. She was at a loss when it came to his intent and ambition!

For any genius, having these three behemoths under them should have been more than enough to make them proud and satisfied.

"That is a different matter. As long as they don't oppose me, I am more than happy to have as many generals as possible. Of course, I would also be happy to stomp down on those who want to oppose me." Li Qiye revealed a faint smile.

Mei Aonan slowly uttered: "Is that a threat?"

Li Qiye laughed in response: "If, say, I wanted to threaten you, then you wouldn't be standing here right now. I don't mind if you want to challenge and compete against me for the Heaven's Will, just remember one thing well — once you embark on the journey for the Heaven's Will against me, think well about your ultimate fate. If it is a gentlemen's battle, I'm sure the results won't be too bad. However, if you want to go all out regardless of the means, then I have to remind you, those who have chosen to do so against me all had very ugly ends."

Mei Aonan looked at him and began to contemplate. After a long while, she still carried a royal aura and slowly asked: "Killing, conquering, and recruiting others... have you never considered friendship in your life?"

"Friendship?" Li Qiye smiled: "Should I befriend someone like you? Do you understand me? Do you know of my thoughts? Can

you shoulder the long and torturous years with me? ... No! That is why I will befriend people, just not you.”

Chapter 909: Before The Departure

Li Qiye paused for a bit before looking at her and said: “If you think acquaintances are friends, then we can be considered friends right now if you don’t oppose me in the future.”

She stared at him and responded: “So I am still of use to you.”

“Of use?” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “These words are too much. I have always treated my followers well. Plus, if I wanted to exploit someone, I wouldn’t pick you. Why wouldn’t I use your Jianlong Clan or the Beastmaster Citadel instead? It could be said that if I said the words, your clan and even the citadel would be more than happy to work for me.”

“I have no doubts of the Jianlong Clan’s and citadel’s loyalties towards me, and I do not deny their power either.” Li Qiye lightly said: “However, what I really need is a legion that I don’t have to worry about, a legion that is completely loyal and will wait for me forever! Do you think your army is suitable?”

“Are you lacking personnel?” Mei Aonan regained some pride and confidence at this moment. However, she had to admit that Li Qiye had many talented people under him.

Li Qiye smiled: “How should I put this? It can go either way. If I only needed workers, then to be honest, I’m not short on people. However, I have a different definition of talents and workers. For example, Wushuang and Jingxian are generals that specialize in offense and formation breaking as well as taking the heads of

enemy generals. As for Yexue, she is a strategist. If I were to categorize you, you would be a combat general meant for the battlefield.”

“Of course, I am not saying that I must recruit you. It is merely an interesting thought at this moment.” Li Qiye continued: “The last thing I want to say is, keep your ambitious heart. The world will be very colorful in the future. Storms will rise in this magnificent era, and you shall have a stage to show your might.”

Mei Aonan thought for a second before meeting Li Qiye’s eyes: “If I can’t become the Immortal Emperor, I don’t know what could be worth struggling for!”

She was determined to pursue the Heaven’s Will, but her dao heart was shaken at this moment. She was also confused because she wanted to surpass Li Qiye, but she didn’t know what she could use to do so. She used to think that she had the best ace, but the means that she considered to be the most powerful were not worth mentioning before him.

“No...” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “For someone with your level of ambition, nothing mattered besides reaching Immortal Emperor. However, that is all in the past, things are different now. If you are willing, you will come to find just how vast this world is. There are many things beyond your imagination outside of the nine worlds. As for whether you will have the fortune to see them or not, it is up to you to grasp the opportunity.”

“Elaborate.” Mei Aonan’s eyes turned serious as she asked with a slightly changed expression.

Li Qiye took advantage of this situation. He didn't explain it clearly and only smiled: "You should be asking your master about this matter. In short, I welcome you to challenge me anytime when you are ready. I won't make it difficult for you since I have promised your master. Of course, this is also contingent on the manner of your challenge and schemes."

She stared at him for a while before turning around to silently leave.

Li Qiye returned to the beastworld afterward. He only said one thing at this time: "The treasure hunt is over. Everyone, leave the Bi'an Beastworld now!"

After this command came out, all the remaining cultivators on the beastworld quickly left. His words right now were an iron-clad law. No one dared to go against them nor did they dare to oppose him. The ravine and the Stony Edge Kingdom were the perfect examples. Thus, whether they were willing or not, they all left without question.

Eventually, Li Qiye could be found in the master mansion of Bi'an City in front of the painting. His eyes gained a profundity, as if they were capable of seeing through all things.

Compared to before, there was a substantial change to the painting. It seemed to be full of life and joy. An indescribable atmosphere came from within as if this world was welcoming its new master, the hope bringer.

Li Qiye looked at the painting for a while before taking out the Bi'an Immortal Rod: "Go, a new generation is coming. The beastworld is welcoming its master, so it is time for you to accept your master as well."

With that, he threw away the rod. "Buzz." The rod flew into the painting and traveled a very far distance. Eventually, it fell into Ming Yexue's hands in the deepest location of this domain.

Li Qiye eventually turned around and gently sighed. Ming Yexue had grown up after so many years. It was the bittersweet sentiment of watching a daughter grow up.

"Your Excellency, there's no need to worry. We have felt it now, Miss Ming has been accepted. The time she comes out is the moment when our beastworld will have our new master. We will do our best to assist her." At this time, the golem stood up and solemnly voiced his promise.

"I do not doubt your words." Li Qiye gently nodded and looked at the golem: "Has your beastworld readied itself to fight till the very end? Perhaps you don't know who or what your enemies are. Of course, you can ask that old geezer for more information."

"Are you talking about the traitor?" The golem deepened his tone.

"I don't want to meddle with your feud." Li Qiye said: "However, he is indeed wholeheartedly working for the Bi'an Beastworld. His

mistake does not mean that he betrayed the beastworld. In the future, he will be of help to all of you. After all, he knows things not privy to the rest of you.”

The golem took a deep breath and bowed towards Li Qiye: “We will bear Your Excellency’s proposal in mind. If our new master pardons him, we will not pursue it any further.”

Li Qiye nodded and eventually told the golem: “Go prepare, I want to use that portal in the city. I know that it isn’t easy for you to open it, but this isn’t up for negotiation.”

The golem quickly bowed with gratitude: “Your Excellency bringing our new master to us is a kindness even greater than giving us a new life. Just opening this portal for Your Excellency pales in comparison.”

Li Qiye responded: “Very well. Go prepare then, I will set off in a few days.”

The golem didn’t say anything after agreeing. It really wasn’t easy for the city to open that portal. However, they were more than happy to pay the price due to Li Qiye’s important favor of bringing them their master.

After leaving the master mansion, Li Qiye called for Madam Zi Yan’s group. He looked at the girls and said: “It is time for me to leave. I plan on visiting the Drystone Courtyard before going back to the Mortal Emperor World.”

“Drystone Courtyard!” Long Jingxian immediately became spirited and cheerfully asked: “How about I go as well?”

“No, I cannot take you with me.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Plus, you have many things to do right now. Do not forget your promise to me.”

She couldn’t help but pout in dissatisfaction after hearing this.

Li Qiye smiled: “Of course, as long as you work hard and meet my requirements, I will take you to somewhere very fun once you come to the Mortal Emperor World.”

She stared at him and quipped: “You better keep your promise!”

Li Qiye responded: “Others might trick you, but don’t worry, I absolutely won’t lie to you. However, let this be a warning, if you don’t meet my requirements, then I will be sorely disappointed. As for the consequences, you should be ready for them.”

“Bah, Smelly Qiye, you really look down on people. There is no merit law that I can’t learn.” She unhappily glared at him.

“I do not doubt your talents.” Li Qiye chuckled: “But I do question your determination. Without my supervision, who knows if you will become lazy again?”

“Hmph, what’s so special about you?” Long Jingxian retorted: “Just you wait, I will definitely surpass you. Thirteen palaces isn’t

much, I'll take you down the next time we meet!"

Li Qiye only smiled at her confidence. He looked over at Jian Wushuang and said: "You have changed your longevity treasure and improved your dao of archery. The fusion art between you and Jingxian is worthy of praise as well. This is a technique that can be considered unique across the ages. This is the time for both you and her to solidify what you've learned. Go back to the Jian Clan and train before you eventually depart together with Jingxian."

"Haha, I was the one who came up with the fusion art." Long Jingxian was very proud of this technique from the two of them. It was indeed true that only someone with a natural Immortal Fate like her could create such an invincible technique in that short of a time.

Li Qiye agreed but also reminded her: "Yes, I have to admit that your ability to create techniques is formidable. However, don't forget that you also need Wushuang's dao of archery."

What was surprising this time was that the two of them did not bicker like before.

Eventually, he told the madam: "I can't bring you with me to the Drystone Courtyard either. Go back and train at Giant Bamboo for now. Wait until those two leave, then go together with them."

"Yes, Young Master." The madam responded.

Li Qiye nodded: “Leave the Imperial Draco-Bull at your country as well. It will need your country’s assistance in some areas, but bring it along on your next trip.”

The madam took note of his order.

Chapter 910: The Future Path

After the ladies left, Li Qiye called for the treefather and told him: “Treefather, I will return to the Mortal Emperor World. You can stay at Alpine Mountain for now.”

“I will await Young Noble’s orders.” The treefather solemnly nodded.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Treefather, I will definitely need you in the future for many different excursions. Although you are not the most outstanding among the Godkings in the nine worlds, you definitely have the most vigorous blood energy. Even in the future, you can compete with the Emperor Candidates.”

“I look forward to that day.” The treefather smiled and became a bit excited. Although his disciples and grand disciples were scattered all over the world, he had always been stuck at the mountain. Being allowed to come out left his blood boiling.

“I am only kidding, there’s no need to underestimate yourself. What I need you to do is not to fight against the Emperor Candidates.” Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: “What I’m hoping for is that in the future, you will be able to assail Immortal Emperors and preside over a domain for me.”

“Assailing Immortal Emperors!” The treefather hesitated for a moment. Although he had complete confidence in his abilities, assailing an Immortal Emperor was a very heavy topic.

He wryly smiled and said: “Assailing an Immortal Emperor won’t be easy.”

He was full of blood energy and cultivated the complete Emperor Suppression Art, and he also had the Coiling Dragon Banner as well. This gave him the capital to fight against all the Godkings in this world. However, he was not so sure about his chances of becoming an Emperor Assailant.

In fact, this had been a weighty topic for tens of millions of years. Countless Godkings had tried before, but very few were able to succeed.

“I know it isn’t easy, which is why I’m letting you stay at the mountain. Right now, you need to break through the chains of the Virtuous Ancestor level and the limitations of the grand dao in order to become an Emperor Assailant.”

“Young Noble, since the start of time, true Emperor Assailants have been few in number. One or two coming out in each generation is already incredible. The difficulty of breaking through the Virtuous Ancestor realm is about as difficult as becoming an Immortal Emperor!” The treefather lamented with a sigh.

Virtuous Ancestor was the highest realm of Virtuous Paragons on the path of the grand era. The people of the world also referred to experts of this realm as Godkings. Of course, only real Godkings had reached this particular realm.

Many self-proclaimed Godkings were far from reaching the

Virtuous Ancestor level, such as the Unbreakable Emperor.

In fact, for those paragons at the Virtuous Ancestor level, there was still a long way to go, even longer than the path they had already trod.

Although the path of the grand era was not like the path of the heavens whose goal was to obtain the Heaven's Will for the throne, the path of the grand era could still push one's dao to the peak and even break through its limits. Those who could do this were named Emperor Assailants, existences that could actually fight against Immortal Emperors! Naturally, very few people in history actually reached this level.

“Treefather, you need to have confidence in yourself. You have been favored by the heavens.” Li Qiye slowly explained: “You need to know that the Emperor Suppression Art has been coveted by numerous people, even Immortal Emperors are no exceptions. Moreover, your Coiling Dragon Banner is extraordinary as well! Although external items like the banner won't be able to help you break the dao chains, there are many things within it worthy of taking your time to learn. As long as you can reach that step, you will definitely become an Emperor Assailant in the future!”

The treefather took a deep breath and solemnly said: “I will try my best to not let you down.”

“No.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “You should be saying that you will break through the dao chains. The next generation will exceed your imagination! You must have that strength if you want to help me sweep through all obstacles. For you, becoming an

Emperor Assailant is not some far-fetched goal, it is something completely within your reach!”

Assailing an Immortal Emperor didn’t mean that one could defeat an emperor. At the very least, they must have the power to fight against an emperor. For example, it was mere boasting when someone like the Unbreakable Emperor claimed that he could fight against one. Even though he had the crystal physique, he simply didn’t have the chance to fight back and could only be suppressed by the emperor.

The treefather couldn’t help but look at Li Qiye and smile: “Young Noble, you will surely become the Immortal Emperor in the future, yet you want me to become an Emperor Assailant. Are you telling me to challenge you?”

Li Qiye smiled in response: “Treefather, you think too little of me. In my eyes, Immortal Emperor is only the beginning, the very first step. Plus, me wanting you to become an Emperor Assailant is not to challenge me. Your targets are the deities in the heavens!”

“The deities!” The treefather’s eyes narrowed as he repeated these words.

Of course, the treefather understood that the deities mentioned by Li Qiye were not Godkings!

“There will be a bloody battle beyond your imagination in the future.” Li Qiye solemnly proclaimed: “It will be a majestic and magnificent era that this world has never seen before! At the time

of that true battle, your current achievements won't be worth mentioning. Even if you become the strongest Godking, it still wouldn't be enough. You must break the dao chains and become a Godking capable of assailing Immortal Emperors!"

"If you can't reach this step in the future, I'm afraid you will only be an insect in the eyes of others. They will crush you into pieces!" Li Qiye spoke with severity.

Such words would leave others in disbelief. For everyone, Godkings were already supreme and could be considered invincible. However, Li Qiye wasn't satisfied with that and even considered them as insects — this was truly astonishing.

The treefather didn't ask who "they" referred to. He took a deep breath and said: "Rest assured, Young Noble. No matter how hard the chains of the grand dao might be, I will risk it all to shatter them!"

Li Qiye's words had incited his ambition. He was willing to take the gamble.

"Very well." Li Qiye nodded: "Only at that height will you be able to see the true colors of this world. It will be even more brilliant than 500,000 years ago. Once you can fight against the deities, you will understand what invincibility is!"

The treefather nodded with sincerity. At this moment, he already longed for that day, the day he stood at the peak and looked down at the great era. That would definitely be an unbeatable scene!

After taking care of everything, Li Qiye planned to leave for the Drystone Courtyard. He didn't let anyone see him off, including the ladies. He chose to go alone.

The golems in Bi'an City had prepared the portal for Li Qiye. Li Qiye took a quick glance at the painting in the master mansion one last time before he left.

"Your Excellency, you can set off now." The golem asked: "The Drystone Courtyard is right beyond this portal, are you ready?"

Li Qiye said with a nod: "I know how frightening the courtyard is, but don't you worry, I have prepared very well for this."

The golem led Li Qiye to the portal. In front of the entrance, Li Qiye looked at the mysterious spatial portal and commented with a tinge of emotion: "Since the ages, those who could build a portal that remains stable are few in number. Outside of a couple legendary existences, only a user of the Space Scripture would be able to do this."

"This portal is indeed wondrous, but it cannot go to that legendary location." The golem lamented.

Li Qiye insipidly said: "This is normal. Outside of Immortal Emperors, no one can go there. It is impossible to freely travel to that place."

The golem stated: “However, Your Excellency is an exception. You can go up there and come back down.”

Li Qiye only smiled. He naturally wouldn’t divulge this secret to someone else. He simply commented: “Don’t worry, you will also be able to see it in the future. Just be patient.”

The golem nodded and didn’t say anything else. He would wait for that day to come!

“Well, you still have a lot of time. I won’t be chatting too much now since I have to go.” Li Qiye glanced at the portal then stepped inside without any hesitation. He disappeared right away.

After Li Qiye left, the golem closed the portal. He returned to the master mansion and transformed back into a statue. No one could tell that he was a living being!

On the other hand, Li Qiye appeared before a courtyard’s entrance after entering the portal! He silently stood there as his body slowly began to petrify, issuing cracking sounds every now and then.

However, Li Qiye was prepared. He summoned an item and mounted it, dispelling the petrification and leaving him unaffected!

If someone else saw the thing that he was riding, they would definitely not believe it. It turned out that it was a completely

white wooden horse.

He traded a Longevity Fruit for this wooden horse back at the Golem Square. However, this wooden horse was bigger now than before.

While riding the horse, he analyzed the courtyard before him. It had a very ancient look, as if it had experienced countless moons. There was a plaque on top of the gate with two ancient words. Ordinary people wouldn't recognize these letters. However, Li Qiye was able to read them — Drystone Courtyard.

“Drystone Courtyard, still unchanged after so many years.” Li Qiye sighed in front of the courtyard. Eras shifted with time, but this place didn't have the slightest change.

Chapter 911: Entering The Drystone Courtyard

The Drystone Courtyard was one of the twelve burial grounds. However, when it came to these places, many people would think about the Heavenly Ancient Corpse Burial Ground or the Prime Ominous Grave. Very few would think about the courtyard.

The reason was that the courtyard was even more mysterious than these two places. Anyone could try to enter the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground, but this was not the case for the courtyard. Even those who could arrive at the courtyard would be limited to its entrance.

The place was only a yard. Of course, as for how large it was, no one in history could truly say.

In fact, very few who went in ever came out again, with the exception of Immortal Emperors. Only a minority of Godkings ever made it out alive!

Some even said that the courtyard was the most dangerous among the twelve. Li Qiye did not reject this notion. However, in his opinion, as long as one had the right methods, the courtyard was much safer than the others.

“Clap, clap, clap...” Li Qiye rode the wooden horse inside and immediately saw many stone statues.

These statues were lined up near the entrance with many different expressions. Some were scared, others were drowned in despair, and a few were turning around to flee... These statues were very vivid and lifelike as if they were real.

They were Enlightened Beings who were lucky enough to enter the courtyard. Alas, their cultivation was not strong enough and they were instantly petrified the moment they set foot inside.

“The Drystone Courtyard isn’t for just anyone to enter.” Li Qiye only shook his head after seeing this scene. This wasn’t his first time seeing this. In the past, he had visited the courtyard multiple times before. The amount of statues would increase after each subsequent visit.

He didn’t stop here after glancing at them. Losing their lives immediately upon entering meant that they were weak, not someone that could be called invincible.

There was only one danger in the courtyard, petrification! No matter what type of existence one might be, they would be affected by this power of petrification. Moreover, the deeper one went, the stronger this force would be. At a certain depth, even Godkings would turn into stone indefinitely — a fate no different from death.

As for what kinds of treasures and secrets were within, this remained a mystery to future generations. However, this didn’t deter many experts and invincible existences from coming to the courtyard to find out! The majority of these people lost their lives here.

Nevertheless, it wasn't difficult to solve the problem of petrification. It was very simple to come out unscathed even if one wasn't an Immortal Emperor. They only needed one item to be unaffected by the petrification process — the wooden horse!

Of course, this type of wooden horse was very rare. No more than five were available throughout history. Plus, their whereabouts were unknown; very few knew about the existence of these wooden horses, let alone their effects.

In the eyes of the bidders back in the Golem Square, Li Qiye trading a Longevity Fruit for the wooden horse was simply insanity. Only someone like Li Qiye knew the value of the wooden horse and how great of a deal it was.

He continued deeper into this place. It was a dangerous ground for others, but to Li Qiye, this was a courtyard with decent sceneries.

Here were waterside pavilions with decorated mountains and springs. Lakes and streams could also be found surrounding the central area. It didn't look like one of the twelve burial grounds, more like the abandoned garden of a wealthy family. The trees continued to grow older below the lonely moon and sun. The creeks continued to flow without the presence of fishes and other aquatic creatures...

Only silence could be found here; there were no signs of life in this place. This was a tranquil reserve that would last for millions

of years.

Li Qiye continued on his wooden horse and its clopping hooves. This sound seemed to be everlasting; only his horse was moving in this place.

Any first timer would be hard pressed to believe that this was the Drystone Courtyard, one of the twelve burial grounds. The courtyard was huge, but no one could describe its exact size. Some even said that no one had ever seen the entire location.

Of course, this was true for outsiders. Li Qiye had been to the entire courtyard before and had seen areas thought unexplored by others.

There were fewer stone statues in the later parts of his journey. However, these statues were all famous people with no lack of Godkings!

“Skyreign Venerable, quite amazing and worthy of his fame. To be able to reach this place...” Li Qiye was able to recognize a few famous existences as there were very few who made it here.

“Sigh, Remembrance Goddess. So brilliant back then, swooned even an Immortal Emperor. What a lamentable fate to eventually become a statue.” Li Qiye met a female statue along the path. One couldn’t really discern her features anymore due to the petrification, but her elegance and past beauty were still quite apparent!

“Idle-Gen Beast, what did you run here for? Don’t you remember? Your dwelling caused so many people to salivate...” Li Qiye continued on and couldn’t help but smile when he saw a beast that resembled both a dragon and a serpent as well as a dog.

“One sword to reach divine investiture, an incredible sword. Being petrified for so long yet the sword energy still remains...” Li Qiye saw a sword-wielding statue deeper inside. It was still emitting a terrifying sword aura, so even he had to voice his praise.

“Brightheart Fairy, for what...” There was also one statue that made him stop. He felt a strange sadness as he lamented with a sigh.

The journey continued. In this place, many trails extended towards all possible directions. Li Qiye picked one in particular and met many petrified invincible existences, many of whom he recognized.

Before reaching his destination, he heard a faint cry in the distance.

“Help, save me.” A feeble cry for help echoed about. It was very weak, as if the speaker would fall over at any moment.

No matter who they might be, people would not be able to ignore this cry; it was as if there was a devilish charm to it. They had no

choice but to go in the direction of the plea!

However, if they could remain calm and think about it, they would find that there was something strange. There shouldn't be anyone alive in this place, so where was this cry coming from?

Li Qiye smirked after hearing this cry for help. He sped up the wooden horse and went towards the call. After a while, he finally made it to the location where the distress call came from. It was a cliff overlooking an obscured abyss. However, the cry for help came from below.

Upon his arrival, golden shimmers suddenly appeared in the sky. Countless glittery lotuses floated down as a person descended from above. He was accompanied by many phenomena, including a Golden Dragon with a haunting immortal hymn. Each of his steps created lotus flowers while golden springs oozed among the clouds...

It was an old man with immortal energy floating around him. Although no one could see his real face, he carried an oppressive divine atmosphere as if he was an eternal immortal from above!

Anyone would be stunned to see this; they would absolutely believe that they had met a legendary immortal!

“Little friend, where did you come from?” This immortal-like old man had a very kind voice.

“Okay, old geezer, your illusions might be able to trick others, but don’t try this little ruse in front of me.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “You can’t even see me yet you still want to beguile me? Aizz, after millions of years, your methods are still so lousy.”

“Who are you!” The old man with his immortal aura quickly changed into a tempestuous god. His divine aura engulfed myriad domains, causing others to have an impulsive desire to prostrate to him.

“Old geezer, you’re so old that you can’t even sense it anymore.” Li Qiye gently shook his head while riding the wooden horse: “I kindly traveled endless miles just to visit you, yet you can’t even recognize me. How disappointing.”

“It’s you...” Eventually, the person recognized Li Qiye. Everything disappeared, including his deity and immortal forms as well as the golden lotuses... The only thing left was the cliff and the unfathomable abyss below.

“It’s you, the goddamn crow...” Eventually, a shocked voice came from the abyss: “Impossible, you tried for so long without any success, but now you’ve actually re-obtained your body!”

Chapter 912: The Person At The Base Of The Precipice

“Old geezer, you are wrong about that.” Li Qiye chuckled and shook his head: “It is not that I couldn’t reclaim my body. It is only that I didn’t want those around me to pay the heavy price. This is the difference between you and me. I won’t do the things you are willing to.”

“Hahaahahah! You are killing me. Damned crow, even though I haven’t walked on this earth for a long time and know very little of its tales, don’t forget I am the person who read your sea of memories before. How can I not know what type of person you are? After so many years, I’m afraid one wouldn’t be able to count the number of people killed by your hands from the massacres you committed in the nine worlds!” A sneer came from the precipice.

“Old geezer, you are wrong again. To be exact, you and I have shared our memories. Heh, but I know even more of your secrets! At best, you only know a few early secrets of mine back during that distant era.” Li Qiye smiled in response.

The old man snorted. He was clearly unhappy with Li Qiye’s answer.

Li Qiye continued on: “Plus, old geezer, you’re mistaken about something else as well. Yes, I am a mass murderer. I can massacre billions of existences for the nine worlds. I can extinguish a race for the sake of the human race. I can sacrifice many things for the human race, but I would never sacrifice them for my personal sake. Otherwise, I would have obtained my physical body long ago,

there wouldn't have been the need to wait until now."

The voice below the cliff sneered and retorted: "Hmph, who knows what you are thinking? Who knows what schemes you're concocting in your mind? Who knows of your ultimate goal? Perhaps one day, you will commence a blood sacrifice that involves the entire world..."

Li Qiye chuckled: "Old geezer, let the feud from back then drop. You still can't get over when I tricked you back then during that ancient era. Don't forget, you started it first and destroyed my body! I'm already very magnanimous for letting it go."

"Hahahaha..." The person in the abyss laughed gleefully after this past event was brought up: "Damned crow, even if you were immortal, you still had to drink the water I washed my feet with!"

"People will always mature. Back then, I hadn't been the Dark Crow for too long and was too inexperienced — this was the only reason why I was caught by you. However, even though those years were like hell, they were worth it for my training." Li Qiye smiled: "Your sea of memories connected with mine as well, allowing me to learn many, many secrets. I received more for less, so in reality, I was the winner."

"Hmph, there's no need to gloat. If it wasn't for that existence back in the Immortal Demon Grotto messing with your sea of memories, I would have taken them all away instead of having to resort to the other method!" The person was outraged. Nevertheless, amidst his wild state, he was still quite content with himself: "But you damned crow, even though you stole so many

secrets of mine back then, there is still one memory that you will never get!”

“I know.” Li Qiye replied: “Soul Connection is not the end all be all. Because of its shortcomings, it not only allowed me to trick you to steal your secrets, it also let me escape from your place. Old geezer, even though you destroyed my body back then, that disaster taught me how to strategize. Even if you rise again, I will still out-scheme you and take everything away from you. But to tell you the truth, outside of that eternal secret, you don’t have anything else to lose anyway!”

The person under the cliff coldly spoke: “Damned crow, you can keep on being complacent! One day, I will destroy you even if the nine worlds no longer exist. It doesn’t matter that you are indestructible, I will still grant you an eternal death!”

“I know you can do it, old geezer. You have already destroyed everything once, there is nothing else that you can’t do.” Li Qiye smirked: “But don’t forget, after so many years, what do you actually have? Nothing but your empty hands!”

He continued on while stressing each word: “No matter how high you stood back then, no matter how many followers prostrated before you, what do you have now? Nothing, you’re only a lone soul remnant. Those closest to you and those most loyal to you... I’m afraid at the very last second, they were stricken with regrets! Blood ties and undying loyalty... you didn’t deserve any of these things!”

“Crow, what about you? What do you have after these tens of

millions of years? You are just like me! I don't care what you have done, and that includes protecting the human race and the nine worlds. What do you have now? You are just like me, you're just a lost soul!" The person sneered.

"Yes, I don't have much left. Throughout these millions of years, people left me one by one. Those who loved me, those who were always loyal and willing to give up everything for me... They have all left and returned to the earth. Meanwhile, my deeds are also disappearing in the river of time!"

Li Qiye gently sighed after saying this: "But old geezer, I have never let my people down. I have never let them taste regret as they followed me and fought to the very end! They didn't disappoint me, so I didn't disappoint them! Old man, this is the difference between you and me. You can sacrifice everything for your own sake! You do not have a bottom line!"

Li Qiye continued on: "I do not deny that I have messed up and lost many things and that I've made some mistakes, but no matter what happens in the future, no matter what my own desires are, I will never cross my bottom line! Not even a single step!"

The person said in a carefree manner: "So what? Myriad ages turning into nothing, yet I am without regrets."

Li Qiye chuckled: "I am also without regrets since it differentiates me from you. Even though you were unbelievably heaven-defying back then, in my eyes, you are nothing more than a bastard!"

Both of them were without regrets. However, the regrets they were talking about were different.

“Haha, that’s right, I am a bastard, but in my eyes, you are one as well!” The person responded: “That year, you killed your way to the very end of that location. You could have done an even more incredible job, but if I’m not mistaken, you gave up an incredibly good opportunity because you wanted to stay true to that so-called bottom line.”

“I know, but I have no regrets.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Hmph, one day you will regret it. When that day comes and you are truly facing the consequences, you will regret the fact that you were not cruel enough!” The person at the base of the cliff sneered.

“Old geezer, you are mistaken. I have faced the consequences before, and I am still alive today! Even though the process was very arduous, almost unbearable, I am still without regrets. One day, I will rise again. On that day, no matter what happens, I still won’t cross my bottom line! It is that simple.” Li Qiye spoke with a faint smile.

This was met with a long period of silence. It seemed that the person didn’t want to say what was on his mind. After a while, he changed the topic: “Your trip here this time was not to see me, right? Heh, or maybe you still haven’t given up and want to obtain that secret!”

Li Qiye smilingly said: “You know me, I am someone who is

sentimental about friends. No matter what happened back then, at least we still got to know each other, yes? It wasn't easy for me to come here, so I just had to see an old buddy at least."

"Don't give me this nonsense. Just spew your shit." The person sneered.

Li Qiye leisurely responded: "Old geezer, what's the rush? You still haven't died after so many eras, and you won't come out either. We still have a lot of time left, so why don't we take our time to chat? Plus, how many generations does it take for someone to actually come to this place?"

"Chat? About what? About that secret?" The person chuckled.

Li Qiye replied: "You should be thanking me for coming to chat with you. For millions of years, you can't even find ghosts here. This is a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity to have someone to talk to." He smiled and went on: "Of course, if you want to talk about that secret, I would be happy to listen."

The person down below couldn't help but laugh: "Haha, damned crow, you still haven't given up hoping for that thing. Okay, I can tell you, but you have to drag me out of this accursed place first!"

"Drag you out?" Li Qiye started to laugh as well: "Old geezer, you are just daydreaming. You know better than anyone else that that is impossible. As long as the high heavens remain strong, you will never see the sun again! You went too far back then, so there is no chance in hell that you will ever be able to escape from the

suppression down there!”

“Hahahahaha.” The person down below crazily laughed: “Crow, correct me if I’m wrong, but didn’t you say there was nothing in this world that you couldn’t do? What about now? Are you afraid of failure so you are giving up already?”

“Old geezer, your words are meaningless. In fact, I have failed many times in the past millions of years, too many times to count.” Li Qiye slowly said: “However, I actually do have a way to solve your problem. The issue is that you should already know there is no way I would actually do it. I would rather not know that secret than let you out. Hah, releasing you? The price is too high for me to pay!”

Chapter 913: Distant Past

The person below the cliff jeered at this response: “Oh how admirable you are, crow. Heh, don’t forget though, many people in this world want what I have. Even Immortal Emperors would not be able to resist the deadly temptation.”

“Is that so?” Li Qiye chuckled: “Old geezer, do you think you can succeed? We won’t talk about the past, but recently, don’t think that I don’t know about you trying to tempt Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. But in the end, did he save you? Not even mentioning whether he was capable of such a thing in the first place, even if he did... Hah!” Li Qiye snorted at this point.

“Crow, how long can you remain arrogant for? Watch it or you’ll be dragged down from your pedestal before you know it. It would be a shame if you were to be destroyed by an Immortal Emperor eventually.” The person below sneered as well.

“Yeah? Only an Immortal Emperor? No matter which one it might be, if they dare to cross my path, I will kill them! It is not like I haven’t killed Immortal Emperors before!”

With that, his eyes turned cold as he slowly said: “You should have seen what I have done back then. Immortal Emperors and deities — if they violate my principles, I will slaughter them! Old geezer, don’t think I don’t know what you tried to make Immortal Emperor Ta Kong do. Unfortunately, he could only play nice when I was guarding the Mortal Emperor World and the other eight! He was free to continue being an emperor, but if he didn’t respect us...”

The person below sneered and said: “Haha, crow, do you dare to let me out? We can play again in this generation! I know that you are the tyrant across the generations and that your supreme name has been engraved in the eons, but do you want to try the taste of defeat?!”

Li Qiye calmly responded: “Old geezer, I don’t know if you are being serious or not, but I’ll be frank. You think too highly of yourself and still think of me as the crow of back then. Even if you can leave this place, you are no longer my match! I was able to escape and trick you back then, so now, I can definitely lead you to your death!”

“Hmph.” The person below snorted and then coldly said: “Well, in that case, you and I have nothing to say.”

Li Qiye also didn’t care, he only leisurely said: “Old geezer, I came this time not just to see and chat with you about the old secret, it is also to say goodbye. You know that I have re-obtained my body, so this means that it is time for me to go big. Millions of years of calculations are finally about to bear fruit. Success is fine, but failure is fine as well. When I kill my way back there again, I will become eternal and won’t return, so I’m here to bid you farewell...”

“... Regardless of our grudges and whether you are a bastard or not... how should I put this... back during my first attempt, I used a few moves from you, so I should be thanking you for that. Without those secrets of yours, I would have had to waste a lot more effort. Just let the past go, everything will come to an end

with the upcoming war! Alas, it is a shame that you might not be able to see it.” With that, Li Qiye rode away on his wooden horse.

“Damned crow...” Li Qiye didn’t make it far before the person down below spoke: “Do you think you can win?”

“So what if I lose?” Li Qiye nonchalantly smiled and replied in a carefree manner: “For others, becoming an Immortal Emperor is their ultimate aspiration. But for me, I only want an answer. Neither the deities nor the villainous heavens will be able to prevent my search! Me and those who were with me have spent too much effort on this path, so we need an answer.”

“Along the river of time, you aren’t the only one who spent a tremendous amount of effort! Keep in mind that no one has been successful before!” The person raised his voice.

“Perhaps someone has been successful before, it’s just that you and I don’t know about it, that’s all.” Li Qiye chuckled: “This path is paved with bones. Countless people persevered with a dream only to fall along the way, and yet, no matter the consequences, I will keep going even if it means defeat!” Li Qiye laughed his heart out in response.

The person at the base of the cliff pondered for a moment. After a while, he slowly said: “Crow, I won’t tell you the secret, you have to find out for yourself. However, I can give you a hint, everything is hidden in my memories, it is all inside my secret!”

“Thanks.” Li Qiye turned around and looked at the cliff to say:

“Old geezer, goodbye for now. May we never meet again!”

This last remark was full of sincerity! With that, he departed without stopping and disappeared along the path.

“The endless river of time... how interminable and insufferable! Back then, I was the sole sovereign above all others!” A sad lamentation could be heard from beneath the cliff: “Indestructible and everlasting! HAH! Old Villainous Heavens, I will wait for the day of your demise!”

Eventually, the abyss became silent again. No one knew that there was an unbelievable secret below that the world would never find out!

Li Qiye left the cliff and roamed inside the courtyard. There were many amazing landscapes and many incredible events. However, Li Qiye had grown accustomed to them. Newcomers who could make it to these places would never forget them for the rest of their lives. However, these things couldn't be any more ordinary to Li Qiye since he had been here many times before. There was no one in the current times that understood the courtyard more than him.

He seemed to be carefully searching for something at each location.

There were many pathways in the courtyard that led to all the different directions. It was not easy to see the courtyard in its entirety.

After going from one place to another, Li Qiye still couldn't find the thing that he wanted. However, he was not in a rush and continued searching in a meticulous fashion.

Nothing was impossible for a willing heart. Li Qiye eventually stopped near a lake. This calm lake was neither big nor small. The lack of fish was evidenced by the lake being as still as the courtyard itself.

Li Qiye glanced at an inconspicuous corner of the river, then he rode his wooden horse over.

In the middle of that corner full of weeds and bushes, there was a tiny stone nest. It was made from stone grasses woven together. Inside was a duck. Of course, it was made out of stone as well. Despite resembling a carved statue, it was very animated due to the unbelievable craftsmanship.

There were also eight stone eggs inside the nest, all different shapes and sizes. Some were flat while others were round; some were even square! Some were blue, green, and also white...

All eight were right below the squatting duck, so people would think that this duck gave birth to them.

Li Qiye leisurely smiled and murmured after seeing the duck and eggs: "Truly incredible. You really do move your nest once every generation. Worthy of being a peerless existence. For millions of years now, you have been toying with so many people in this

world...”

If anyone were to see Li Qiye talking to a stone duck, they would think that he was crazy. No matter what Li Qiye said, the duck remained a statue and didn't come back to life. Li Qiye ignored this and reached out to touch it. It felt like stone and was definitely not an illusion.

However, whether it was made out of stone or not, Li Qiye knew full well. There was also a big secret here unknown to the rest of the world.

Li Qiye then touched the eight eggs instead. They were also rocky and completely inseparable from the duck. It seemed that the eggs and the duck were rooted to the earth. There was no way to move these things away.

Li Qiye was not surprised at all to see this. He touched the eggs one at a time then commented with a smile: “Extraordinary. You were actually almost successful. Once this is accomplished, it will be frightening as hell.”

But no matter what he said, the duck and the eggs had no response; he was just talking to himself. Li Qiye leisurely continued: “I will definitely seize the Heaven's Will this generation. Are you considering coming into being this generation, or perhaps the next?”

Chapter 914: Talking Stone Duck

Li Qiye just spoke his bit without caring for the unresponsive duck: “If you don’t answer, I’m going to take it as you coming out this generation. If that’s the case, you will be my rival, so should I be thinking about breaking you right now? This is not a bad idea, what do you think?”

The stone duck did not respond. Li Qiye rubbed his chin and smiled: “Very well, if someone thinks that I’m just messing around, we’ll just have to see which rock is harder. Let’s give this a smash.”

With that, he opened his fate palaces and took out his own stone egg from inside the thirteenth palace. This stone egg had an incredible origin. He held it in his hand and prepped it to smash the duck.

“Buzz.” However, right before he smashed the egg down, waves of light began to float around the duck. Its stone form finally melted away and a very ordinary looking duck emerged.

“Brat, you win. Just spit it out if you have something to say.” The duck spoke with a coarse and old voice as if it came from a different space.

“This is more like it, now we can have a nice chat.” Li Qiye laughed then looked at the stone egg in his hand while saying: “It seems like my egg is a lot harder than you.”

He obtained this unfathomable stone egg from the Heavenly Corpse Burial Ground. It had swallowed an unreasonable amount of Myriad Star Water. There were also many earth-shattering secrets hidden within it.

At this time, the duck was also gazing at the rock in Li Qiye's hand and grunted: "Hmph! Out with it!"

Li Qiye put away the stone egg then took out a different rock to say: "I have this piece of rock right here, I'm sure you will want it."

"Where did you get it?" The duck's eyes narrowed. There seemed to be a radiating star inside its pupils that flashed a blinding brilliance.

"Oh, I just picked it up somewhere." Li Qiye smiled and ignored the blinding radiance from the duck.

This rock came from the Golem Square's auction. It was said to be left behind by Immortal Emperor Wan Shi, but the world didn't know its uses.

Li Qiye looked at the duck and leisurely said: "You have eight stone eggs right now. If I'm not mistaken, you are missing one. I just checked earlier, the one you are missing is the primary soul. Well, interestingly enough, the rock in my hand just so happens to be the primary soul within the three souls."

The duck continued to stare at the stone in Li Qiye's hand

without saying anything.

Li Qiye smiled: “How about we negotiate? I will give you this stone for just one item. I’m not asking for much.”

“Haha, brat, I won’t negotiate with you so carelessly. If you know my identity, you shouldn’t be bargaining with me, am I right?” The duck laughed.

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “You are mistaken. Even if it was the deities in the heavens, I would still be able to negotiate with them. I know you are very heaven-defying, but how do you think you compare to the old geezer beneath that cliff? In the past, I nearly tricked him to death, do you think I can’t do the same to you?”

“Hmph, I have neither desires nor ambition, so why should you trick me?” The duck was very annoyed with Li Qiye.

“So you don’t want this stone?” Li Qiye playfully juggled the stone with one hand and spoke: “I know you are amazing, but I’ll be frank with you, I’m not afraid of you and don’t care for your threats. If I really wanted to take care of you, I could have told Empress Hong Tian to destroy you for good back when she was still here. However, I didn’t do so because I am merciful, right?”

“I am someone who asks for nothing in return.” Li Qiye continued: “Plus, what I want is very simple. It is impossible to not pay a small price for this stone. I suppose if you want to try and rob me outright, just go for it. I’m actually curious to see how much of

the petrification you can handle once you leave the stone nest in your current state!”

The duck judged Li Qiye for a long time. Eventually, he opted to make a deal: “What do you want!”

“I heard that you have a bottle of Bluesky Water. I don’t want anything else, just that bottle.” Li Qiye cheerfully smiled.

“Bluesky Water?” The duck pondered for a moment: “It has been quite a while so I don’t remember very well. Maybe there was something like that. It is useless though, so why do you want it?”

“Haha, don’t try to fool me. You might be able to trick others, but it isn’t so easy to trick me.” Li Qiye responded: “Others might not know what you are capable of, but I know all too well. Your words have their own truth; the world does not know the use of this water, but the water — in their eyes — isn’t the same as the bottle in your possession!”

He paused for a bit while glancing at the duck: “You know just what that bottle of Bluesky Water can do. However, I know even more than you. I have been to that place before, so do you actually think I don’t know its effects?”

“Haha, brat, you are indeed difficult to grasp.” The duck laughed and shook its head: “Brat, you should know that this bottle of Bluesky Water is priceless to me.”

“This stone is priceless to you too. Which do you think is more valuable, this stone or the water?” Li Qiye continued to play with the stone and said: “You should be happy, if anything, since I only want your Bluesky Water. If I wanted to be cruel, I wouldn’t only ask for the bottle of Bluesky Water, I’d even bring up the item you obtained from the courtyard back then!”

“How do you know about that!” The duck suddenly stared at Li Qiye after hearing this. Even if one couldn’t see its demeanor, it was clear that it had become serious.

Li Qiye paid no mind to the duck’s austerity: “There aren’t many secrets that I don’t know. Plus, I’ve searched the courtyard for a long time so it’s understandable to learn a few secrets, right?”

The duck only snorted to show its annoyance towards Li Qiye, it didn’t say anything else.

Li Qiye stared at the duck: “Same as before, deal or no deal? If you are not willing to trade, then I will throw this stone away to the farthest reaches of this land. We’ll see if you can find it or not.”

“It is useless even if you have the Bluesky Water.” The duck shook its head: “The other thing is impossible to obtain. What’s the point of having the water?”

Li Qiye said with a smile: “Don’t forget, I am someone who has been to that other place. Moreover, you really are underestimating my abilities as the tyrant of all ages. You and I, we are different. Your eternal life relies on you turning into stone in this place, but I

can travel throughout the nine worlds. Do you still think it is difficult for me to obtain an item?”

The duck stared at Li Qiye for a while once more. In the end, it unwillingly threw a small bottle over at Li Qiye and said: “Take it, I’ve spent a lot of effort to get this bottle. I’ve always wanted to go to that place for a look as well, but I’m missing something else.”

“You can leave this place right now?” Li Qiye insipidly smiled: “But even if you could, what do you think your probability is of getting that other item? How long do you think you have to wait? One generation? Two, maybe three? Or ten?”

“Hmph, how long did you wait for the other one to appear back then?” The duck grunted.

Li Qiye smiled: “That item is based on one’s luck, it’s very difficult to force the matter. However, I am a forceful person. It took five generations of waiting before I obtained it.”

The duck contemplated after hearing this answer. This type of patience could only be done by someone with true eternal life. Its everlasting stone form wouldn’t allow for it to follow the same process.

Li Qiye put away the Bluesky Water and threw the rock the emperor left behind to the duck with a smile: “Congratulations, you have waited long enough to gather three souls and six spirits. It is finally complete.”

The duck snorted and glanced at Li Qiye. It pondered for a moment before speaking: “Brat, how about we make another deal? Give me your rock from earlier and I will give you the item I received from the courtyard, how about that?”

The duck was referring to the stone that drank a tremendous amount of Myriad Star Water.

“No. That stone is priceless and I will trade it for nothing, unless you can bring the Old Villainous Heavens here.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

“Hmph, you should know that my item is also very heaven-defying.” The duck tried to persuade him: “If you have this item of mine, myriad realms and their inhabitants would shake with fear once they find out.”

Li Qiye smiled: “I know that your item is a real treasure, but in my eyes, my stone is even more precious than your treasure.”

“Hmph, nevermind then, you are too blind to realize its value.” The duck resentfully grunted and could only give up.

“Okay, that was a good trade. I won’t bother you anymore. Keep on living forever, I do hope that you can obtain rebirth.” Li Qiye smiled and rode his wooden horse away.

“Brat...” The duck called for him again.

Chapter 915: Untraceable Past

Li Qiye stopped and smiled after turning around: “You have something else on your mind?”

The duck mused for a second before looking at him to say: “I don’t remember many things anymore, but I do worry about some things. If I am not mistaken, you said that you have been there before, correct?”

“Yes, not just once either. What do you want to know?” Li Qiye gently nodded.

It continued its inquiry: “Hmm, I wonder... how is it up there right now?”

“I understand.” Li Qiye smiled: “Those who have memories will undoubtedly long for something. Since you have forgotten already, I won’t speak of the details. I will only say that it is prosperous. No matter the race, they are multiplying well. This is the goal of living beings.”

The duck went quiet after hearing this. No one could read its thoughts at the moment.

“Frankly, I feel that you have done a good job in this regard.” Li Qiye smiled: “Though some people called you a bastard, a scoundrel, a worthless piece of scum... actually, I guess it’s more apt to call you a piece of stone dreg now...”

Li Qiye laughed at his own joke before continuing: “No matter what they might say about you, I think what you have done is pretty cool; after all, for those deities, it was harder to swallow than a fly. To tell the truth, I’ve never liked those bastards.” He ended with a gloating smirk.

The quiet duck looked back at him and asked: “What will you do in the future?”

“Don’t try to guess.” Li Qiye shook his head: “We are different. I have no responsibilities at all. Everything I do is for myself, so I have never thought about other matters.”

“Is that so?” The duck stared at Li Qiye and said: “Even though I haven’t left this place, I have heard a few Immortal Emperors talk about you, especially Immortal Emperor Min Ren. He said that you have been protecting the human race. Haven’t you thought about taking it to the next level?”

“Like what? Like what you did in the past, or perhaps what Immortal Emperor Fei Yang did? Hahaha...” Li Qiye shook his head: “Honestly, I have no interest in those matters. Plus, do you want me to do those things?”

The duck pondered before answering: “Perhaps Immortal Emperor Min Ren wanted you to do them.”

“Min Ren?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “That brat is not only kind, he sometimes also acts like a woman, whether by chance or not. He

likes to become involved in many different things. He must have come here before and coincidentally met you. Perhaps he confided some sad things to you. Alas, the brat also left very quickly. If I am not mistaken, you were the one who gave him some tips.”

“I have forgotten already.” The duck shook its head: “My memory is becoming worse and I forget some things completely as if they were mere dreams.”

“Forgetting is a good thing. Not being able to forget is the real pain.” Li Qiye smiled, but his words carried a sorrow that ordinary people wouldn’t be able to sympathize with. He looked at the duck and said: “If anything, you should be happy. The more you forget, the closer you will be to success. That day will come when you completely forget everything!”

The duck became a bit emotional and said: “Perhaps forgetting is not a bad thing. After forgetting, it will feel like being reborn.”

Li Qiye smilingly stated: “Such an event is worthy of celebration. Rebirth — something so many people desire. If you are successful, it will be a miracle across the eons, an accomplishment that would be admired by many emperors. For millions of years now, so many have attempted it just to fail.”

The duck was not happy to hear his praise. It replied: “Immortal Emperor Min Ren told me that you have been through so much, can you forget it all?”

“Forget?” Li Qiye stared towards the distance as his eyes became

lost in thought. After a while, he smiled and responded: “I have nothing to forget. Pain or happiness... whether it is a pain etched deep in one’s bones or a happiness that warms the heart, all of these are experiences of mine throughout the long years. I am most reluctant to recall the moments of happiness rather than those of pain. I haven’t forgotten, I just don’t want to think about them...”

With that, Li Qiye slowly rode his wooden horse away. His long shadow contained an indescribable loneliness that others couldn’t understand.

After he left, the duck looked up at the sky and murmured: “Old sentiments will eventually fade... Is it because of emotion or apathy...?” The duck was overwhelmed by Li Qiye’s words.

After a very long time, it regained its composure and smiled. In this moment, it felt relief and everything became as ephemeral as the wind in the sky. It chose to forget the past.

It squatted back down in its stone nest and turned into stone once more. From then on, it was a statue without emotions, without a past, and without any distractions!

Li Qiye was a bit lost after leaving the duck’s place; he aimlessly rode the wooden horse away. The duck’s words dredged up some of his memories.

The eons have been so long. He had met so many people and experienced so many things. He couldn’t forget some of them. Just like he had said, rather than forgetting, he chose not to remember.

However, some of these memories had been engraved deep in his heart, never letting him find solace.

To an indestructible being like him, pain was nothing to be afraid of. He dared to confront any physical pain and even soul torture. However, memories of happiness had turned into a different kind of agony!

These happy memories were unforgettable; even though the people were no longer here, he continued to live on. This was the price of eternal life!

After a while, he calmed down and smiled bitterly before murmuring to himself: “How strange, since when did I become so sentimental? The past has already gone by, I can only walk forward. I will not look back, for I am Li Qiye!”

At this second, he threw away all of his doubts and the past.

“Let’s march towards the destination. I must reap success in this generation!” At this time, the Li Qiye that loomed over the world had returned. His eyes focused on a particular direction as he hastened the wooden horse forward!

He was advancing towards the deepest part of the Drystone Courtyard. Along the way, the force of petrification became even more powerful. Moreover, there were very few stone statues in the area. People who were capable of making it to here were either Emperor Assailants or Immortal Emperors themselves!

At this depth, there were no more stones. Even Emperor Assailants wouldn't be able to escape the fate of being turned into stone here. Eventually, Li Qiye stopped because before him was a vast darkness. It was not the type of darkness from hell nor was it the type that would devour all things.

It was a unique and unapproachable type of darkness... Petrification Darkness! Because at this place, time had been frozen and the same could be said for space. Even the universal laws of the grand dao had been petrified!

Because of this, all had been turned into stone, rendering this place completely dark. Even the dark rays of light were petrified.

However, with careful observation, one would be able to find flashing glimmers in the deepest part of this dark expanse. It seemed that there was something over there. Moreover, it was an entire group of things.

People who stood here would come to realize that the petrification power of the courtyard most likely came from this place. Even deities and emperors would be frozen here.

Li Qiye stood before it and murmured: "What a terrifying force. The world would never believe this. Perhaps even Immortal Emperors would not be able to bear it after walking inside."

He stared at the deepest part of this darkness. Inside was a mystery that he must try to obtain!

“All the Immortal Emperors have failed. However, I must be successful this generation, I’ll never give up!” Li Qiye slowly uttered while glaring at the darkness.

At this point, all of his confidence from the past had no clout because he had tried again and again to no avail.

In fact, he was not the only one that had failed. Empress Hong Tian had been here before, the same with Immortal Emperor Min Ren and Immortal Emperor Wan Shi... All of the emperors who came here went to this place to give it a shot.

Emperors were invincible in the eyes of the world; there was nothing that they couldn’t do. However, the truth was that even emperors failed to succeed in this act!

Chapter 916: Boundless Darkness

Li Qiye took a deep breath and placed some Heaven Restoration Paste in his mouth but didn't swallow it. This was a supreme ointment personally refined by Li Qiye that was capable of treating all injuries. It could be claimed to be number one in the nine worlds!

After completing his preparations, Li Qiye took a deep breath and rode his wooden horse into this dark expanse.

“Zzz—” Even though he was riding the horse, the petrification force still injured Li Qiye. It was extremely potent and overwhelming.

However, the wooden horse emitted a black light to stop this force. It pushed away the particular energy from Li Qiye's body. Nevertheless, just one second later, the cracking sounds of stone splitting resounded, marking the start of the petrification once more. This horse was able to take Li Qiye all over the courtyard and remain unaffected by this power. Despite that it was using all of its power at this moment, it was still unable to completely stop the petrification. It was easy to imagine just how powerful this force was in this location.

“Zzz—” The wooden horse continued to carry Li Qiye forward towards the depths of the expanse. However, each step the horse made weakened its power to repel the petrification force that was hurting Li Qiye.

“Open!” Li Qiye cried out with all of his blood energy soaring to the sky. The World Seal opened. His first attack was also his ultimate move, the Pentadao Timeless Seal from the Heaven Sealing Pentagate!

Li Qiye used this supreme sealing power to protect his body. However, even with this power, a popping sound came out as he walked forward. Even the seal that could suppress all things couldn't block the petrification and shattered!

“Break!” Li Qiye screamed again. The World Seal unleashed one invincible attack after another; the Declivity-Mountain Bell's Divine Mount Meru, the Immortal Devouring Evil Jar's Extinguish, the Yin Yang Immortal Refining Mirror's Yin Yang Fish Citadel, the Brightflame Imperial Cauldron's Karmic Flame, the Divine Beast Zither's Nine Grand Supremes... One Heavenly Annihilation came out after another and repelled the force of darkness.

However, even against such invincible attacks, the petrification always returned like an unceasing tide.

In the end, even the World Seal's Heavenly Annihilations couldn't keep the force at bay any longer. This power was beyond anyone's imagination!

Keep in mind that even an imperial lineage would be destroyed under Li Qiye's unceasing barrage. However, even that was not enough here!

“Open!” This time, Li Qiye actually took out the weapons themselves. With the pentagate in hand, he unleashed a Resplendent Break. The gates instantly emitted the most brilliant wave of light in this world... the Pentadao Timeless Seal!

The real attack finally stopped the petrification force. Li Qiye did not stop and continued to tread forward! However, he was well aware that even this attack wouldn't be able to stop this power further in.

“Zzz—” Just as he expected, the sound came again. The petrification force finally managed to counter-attack against the pentadao as the gates gradually lost their power.

“Die!” With a scream, the thirteen palaces soared to the sky. They opened and the Ginseng Ancestor's group jumped out.

“Boom!” Another Resplendent Break came out. The Yin Yang Immortal Mirror came out. The ten worlds started to float around gigantic citadels. Countless Yin Yang Fishes turned into an enormous Yin Yang symbol and built a supreme grand dao for Li Qiye.

This was the mirror's ultimate attack. It was capable of killing Godkings as it stopped the petrifying force acting on Li Qiye.

At the same time, the immortal medicines were next to Li Qiye. The Ginseng Ancestor poured out a torrential amount of ginseng juice. The Immortal Injury Peony exerted itself to the utmost to cure the injuries resulted from the petrification process. The

Reincarnation Heavenly Soulvine lit up as if it was controlling a soul through the cycle of life and death so that it could protect Li Qiye. The Soldier Tree opened its tendrils and leaves then used its endless power of life...

However, the more Li Qiye inched forward, the more resistance he met. Li Qiye's weapons unleashed one attack after another, but it was still a losing battle.

His thirteen palaces were already in the sky while the four Immortal Physiques released their mightiest power. At this very second, Li Qiye was in his strongest state, a state capable of killing gods and devils.

Despite all of this, he couldn't stop the force of darkness that would always rear its head again and again. At this particular depth, the injuries inflicted by the petrification process were virtually impossible to reverse.

Fortunately, Li Qiye had prepared the Heaven Restoration Paste. With its effects and the power of the Immortal Injury Peony, Li Qiye was able to withstand the injuries.

"Shit, if this keeps going, we'll be drained dry." The Ginseng Ancestor had to cry. They were suffering grievous losses as well.

"Take this, recover for a bit." Li Qiye took out a Five Immortal Tendril, the oldest root from the Five Immortal Ginseng. It was large and rough with a medicinal effect that was too much to bear for anyone. Even Li Qiye couldn't eat a root by himself.

It was the most supreme supplement. The immortal medicines were ecstatic after seeing this. They gave Li Qiye one part while they divided the rest among the group.

After taking in the supplement, the group became spirited once more and cried out: “Good stuff!” They used all of their might to support Li Qiye once more.

Every single step was arduous as he rode the wooden horse forward. Nevertheless, he still made it to the center of the darkness.

At this place, one would finally be able to see the true form of the glimmers from before. These were shadows that had been petrified in this place. They were majestic and peerless, forever buried in this location!

They emitted boundless imperial auras. Even though they had turned into stone for millions of years, the power of petrification still couldn’t conceal their imperial auras.

“Shadows of Immortal Emperors...” Li Qiye commented with a tinge of emotion while withstanding the onslaught.

Even figures of the Godking level would be astounded by this scene, to say nothing of the rest of the world.

Immortal Emperor [Mu Zhuo](#), Immortal Emperor [Yao Zu](#),

Immortal Emperor [Ba Zhen](#), Immortal Emperor [Tun Ri](#)... the shadows of all of these peerless experts were trapped in this place!

Mu Zhuo = Wood Refinement

Yao Zu = Alchemy Ancestor (Alchemy Kingdom)

Ba Zhen = Eight Truths

Tun Ri = Sun Devourer

In an even deeper location among the shadows of the emperors was a proud shadow that still stood upright... Empress Hong Tian!

All of these invincible existences that had swept through myriad realms before had their shadows petrified here.

Li Qiye glanced at Empress Hong Tian's shadow and only softly sighed. However, he had no time to be sentimental. He roared in order to combat the power!

This many imperial shadows being sealed here was a terrifying sight to behold. For millions of years, many emperors had visited the Drystone Courtyard. All of them were tempted by the thing in the darkness; they all wished to obtain it. However, even emperors were not able to do so. The ultimate force of petrification forced the emperors to retreat with great haste. However, their shadows were frozen, forever to remain buried in this place.

Even emperors couldn't carry out this terrifying task. It could easily be imagined just how frightening the power within was.

Li Qiye came closer, but when he made it to the area with the

shadows of the emperors, he finally couldn't withstand the injuries.

“Nirvana Heavens...” In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye cried out and created life with a single thought. He finally used his most powerful attack.

The thirteen palaces began to derive their obscured profundities. A Li Qiye standing above the nine heavens emerged. The power of the Nirvana Heavens loomed above myriad realms. At this second, he was comparable to an Immortal Emperor, perhaps he was even more powerful.

This technique was met by an even stronger backlash from the force of petrification. It resumed its offense with constant buzzing sounds as if it wanted to freeze the entire Nirvana Heavens whole.

“Old Villainous Heavens, watch me! I will conquer all things!” Li Qiye screamed. The Nine Ants appeared. Li Qiye didn't have a care in the world and threw caution to the wind. Two small vessels appeared amidst all the commotion.

“Rumble!” Blood energy madly descended as if it wanted to destroy the entire dark expanse!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” At the same time, the boundless light of dawn emerged and lit up the entire area as if it wanted to obliterate the darkness.

The vessel of life and the vessel of genesis — these two major vessels were the products of the miracle of Li Qiye's Nine Ants merit law.

Within the endless blood energy, Li Qiye seemed to be giving life to billions of living beings. The light of dawn continued to spread as if Li Qiye was opening a new domain, as if he was creating a whole new nine worlds along with the countless spheres within...

Under the control of the Nirvana Heavens, the vessel of life and vessel of genesis were able to exert their power to their utmost limits. It was about to crack the darkness and suppress the strongest power in this place.

However, the force of petrification was beyond comprehension. It still frantically fought back against the two vessels!

“Buzz!” The Death Chapter emerged and its death energy engulfed this world of darkness. Its strands of universal laws quickly imprinted themselves onto the shadows of the emperors!

Chapter 917: Timesource Vine's Seed

“Whoosh!” Li Qiye opened his sea of memories. One Immortal Emperor appeared after another. Immortal Emperor [Min Ren](#), Immortal Emperor [Xue Xi](#), and Empress [Hong Tian](#) emerged... Their blessings emerged from his sea of memories.

Min Ren = Brilliant Benevolence; the name fits his kindness and sun techniques

Xue Xi = Blood Seal

Hong Tian = Vast Heaven

“Open!” Li Qiye roared. The vessel of life and vessel of genesis that carried the blood energy of countless existences and the power of creation rushed into the bodies of these Immortal Emperors.

“Rumble!” At this moment, the world seemed to be facing its destruction. The petrified shadows of these emperors were coming back to life.

“Boom!” The blessings from certain emperors inside Li Qiye’s memories made their shadows even more powerful compared to the others here. This was the fusion of two different power sources, causing their imperial auras to be countless times stronger.

“Even the high heavens above will be taken down by me!” Li Qiye loudly cried, for he was the king of all Immortal Emperors, a being higher than all else. With so many blessings, his two vessels erupted with power!

“Boom!” An explosion shook the entire nine worlds and myriad realms. Eventually, black holes opened one after another. Another domain emerged inside the domains of the two vessels. This new domain immediately became everlasting!

The third vessel finally appeared under these extreme circumstances... the vessel of athanasia!

At this moment, Li Qiye only had an idea of the third vessel; he still hadn't decided on the ultimate profundities within.

Nevertheless, under the blessings of the emperors and his own ultimate power, the vessel of athanasia actually made its appearance. Li Qiye seemed to have been enlightened with perfect wisdom, allowing him to understand its mysteries.

Everything became everlasting under athanasia. Even the force of petrification weakened, allowing Li Qiye to take the most crucial step forward!

If someone was standing outside of the darkness in the Drystone Courtyard, they would find that within the darkness, a flash of light would occasionally reveal itself. It appeared that this place had been stabilized and suppressed...

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” The world began to spin and tremble. The darkness had been shattered and lost its color. Prior to this, it was pitch black like ink, but now, it was fading into a gray color!

It gave the illusion that the tide was receding. Although the power of petrification remained unchanged, there seemed to have been a substantial change in its essence within this expanse.

After an unknown amount of time, a monotonous clicking of hooves from the wooden horse began to sound once more as it left the darkness. Li Qiye's body was currently full of cracks like a broken piece of ceramic. Just a gentle touch would shatter his body.

Li Qiye groaned in pain at this moment. He ate a little piece of the Five Immortal Tendril and began to recover, allowing his blood energy to slowly return!

After a long time, Li Qiye finally stood up. The different types of medicines allowed his energy to recover. His cracked body was becoming better as well.

Li Qiye took a deep breath, stared at the fading darkness, and couldn't help but grin. This trip's harvest went beyond his expectations. The gains were unbelievable to the point where no treasures could compare.

"Generations of effort, multiple lifetimes of planning... I finally succeeded today." Li Qiye mumbled to himself gleefully. He was very satisfied with this trip.

He had wanted this place for millions of years. In fact, he was certainly not the only one. All the Immortal Emperors coveted it as well, but none were successful.

Later on, he had an idea which he expanded upon from one generation to another. And now, he finally reaped his reward in this generation.

No one in this world knew what was inside. It had never been seen or heard of before. At this point, he let out a sigh of relief. His success was not only due to his efforts. The past emperors such as Min Ren, Tun Ri, and even Hong Tian had tried before. Due to their hard work, he was finally able to succeed today.

“One day, I’ll kill my way to the end of the nine heavens and suppress everything to rule the universe!” Li Qiye revealed a faint smile as he gazed upon the faded darkness.

There was another reason for his satisfaction — the unimaginable success of the vessel of athanasia.

He finally had an interpretation of this vessel. This meant that in the future, he would be able to explore more truths on the path towards immortality; he would tread further than anyone before him. In his eyes, no harvest could be better than furthering his understanding of this vessel. To him, this was the true priceless treasure.

With that, he smilingly rode the wooden horse away. With this secret move, he would have the power to control all circumstances and be able to steer his own course in the future!

He headed towards a particular direction and reached a huge

cliff. It seemed that the courtyard ended here. In front of him was a vast nothingness with no end in sight.

If there was something deserving of attention on this cliff, then it would be the rotten wooden bridge that seemed to be woven together with vines.

It seemed that in a distant past, someone had used these vines and turned them into a bridge to reach the other side of the emptiness. Perhaps there was something over there worth searching for.

However, the years went on and this wooden bridge had withered. There was only a little section left hanging on the cliff.

Li Qiye smiled and murmured while looking at the bridge: “It is time to go to the meeting point of the three ancestral veins.”

He was talking about the location where the three veins of the Stone Medicine World met, the source of the Alchemy Vein, the Beast Vein, and the Stone Vein.

There had been many theories about this particular source. The world knew that all three veins came from the same location. However, no one could enter this area. No matter how amazing one might be, they wouldn't be able to trace the veins back to their source by just following them.

Legend states that Immortal Emperors had attempted this before.

However, even they failed in the end. It was deemed to be impossible due to the three veins themselves denying anyone from reaching their source. Just think about it, their own powers were incredible. Moreover, they were related to the worldly grand dao. The world would never be able to understand the mysteries within.

Of course, there was still a method to reach the source. First, one had to jump out of the Stone Medicine World yet be within its boundaries at the same time. Second, they had to be able to find the coordinates of the source. Lastly, they must also be strong enough to access this primal source of life!

Thus, this feat required solving monstrous mysteries. Many Immortal Emperors had calculated the secrets within to find the particular coordinates! Because of these difficulties, no one was known to have been able to reach the source. There were naturally stories of success, but no one knew of any who actually managed to do so.

Li Qiye was currently standing in a location that could reach the source. There were several locations in the Stone Medicine World like this. However, Li Qiye found success with this one in the past.

“Time to begin...” While murmuring, Li Qiye took out two items and went to the rotten bridge.

One of the items was the Bluesky Water that he obtained from the duck not long ago. The other was the seed taken from the Alchemy Fowl’s body. Many people wouldn’t be able to recognize this seed.

He carefully dripped a small drop of Bluesky Water on this seed. The seed slowly absorbed the water. With the sound of something peeling, the outer layer of the seed fell off to reveal its body.

A shining golden bean appeared on Li Qiye's palm. It looked like a legendary immortal bean. Even those who were unaware would know that this bean was unfathomable.

“A seed from the Timesource Vine!” Li Qiye smiled a little and murmured: “This really is a seed from the Timesource Vine! I didn't guess incorrectly.”

Many had most likely never heard of this Timesource Vine, but it was definitely an inestimable treasure. When its seed reached maturity, it would normally use a shell for camouflage.

Chapter 918: The Legendary End Point

Only after being soaked in Bluesky Water would the Timesource Vine seed remove its camouflage and expose its real body. No matter who one might be, they required both the water and the vine to enter the source.

Both were completely indispensable. Moreover, they were both exceedingly rare from the start of time. Obtaining them was more prohibitive than reaching the heavens.

Take, for instance, the Timesource Vine. Once the vine was ripe, the seed would immediately fly away and fall into a larger world. However, this process couldn't be reversed, not even by an Immortal Emperor.

Moreover, these vines rarely produced seeds. There would only be three to five seeds each time. Think about it, only three to five seeds being lost in huge worlds... It would be easier to find a grain of sand in an ocean than to find one of these seeds.

Because of this, Li Qiye hunted down these seeds for five generations before he finally obtained one. Hard work paid off in the end and he was finally successful. He placed this seed on top of the rotten bridge by the cliff then poured more Bluesky Water on it.

In a short period of time, a miracle occurred. This seed germinated and took root in the muddy ground. In the blink of an eye, one could hear sounds of something crashing.

A huge vine sprouted out of the ground with many branches growing from it. These branches twisted into many different sections like a winding snake. These branches interwove with each other to extend the existing bridge. The impossible happened; this bridge began to extend into the vast emptiness, to the other side.

Li Qiye didn't dare to waste time, he immediately began to walk across the vine bridge that was quite lengthy. Once he reached the other side, nothing could be found around him, there was only an endless nothingness that seemed to break all temporal boundaries. In this place, time had stopped and space had disappeared.

This place gave the feeling that one was taking the first steps in an era. It seemed that this was the starting point of the world. There were no living beings here, and even time itself had yet to exist.

Li Qiye walked on the wooden bridge for an unknown amount of time before he finally reached his destination. He climbed down from the vine bridge afterward.

The moment his feet touched the ground, the Timesource Vine suddenly withered at a rapid pace. The entire bridge wilted in just a moment.

One could faintly see three to five seeds from the Timesource Vine within the bridge. They emitted their golden glow.

“Crash!” Right when the Timesource Vine died, the bridge

collapsed and the vines fell into the endless space. The seeds seemed to have grown wings and flew away at a supreme speed. They penetrated the void itself and disappeared from this location.

These seeds would then fly into the larger worlds. No one knew which regions they would land in. Even if someone were to find them, they wouldn't know of its true purpose. After all, very few people knew about the Timesource Vine.

Li Qiye only sighed after seeing the seeds flying away. Who knew who would be able to grab these seeds in the future and realize the treasures that were in their hands?

After calming down, Li Qiye turned around. Before him was a pond that didn't seem to be very special at a first glance.

The naked eye wouldn't be able to discern its magical properties. However, it would be a different story once someone opened their heavenly gaze. They would finally be able to see the majestic scene before them.

The pond was full of dao runes. These were the most profound and mysterious runes in the world. All the worldly laws seemingly originated from this place. No matter how brilliant one might be, they would be dazzled by these runes after looking at them for a long time. Those with weaker talents would faint on the spot or even die.

The water in the pond was even more incredible. It flowed like an immortal aqua and emitted a beautiful divine light. Each drop

exuded a transcendent aura and seemed to sustain three thousand worlds.

This was not pond water but rather the legendary immortal aqua! Even if someone had never seen immortal aqua before, they would think that the best aqua in this world could not be superior to this after seeing the water in this pond.

“Provenance’s Splendor.” Li Qiye gently sighed. He knew what it was even without opening his heavenly gaze!

Provenance’s Splendor was something the world had never even heard of before. If an Immortal Emperor heard its name, they would start to salivate and would try to obtain a bottle by any means necessary.

It was even more valuable than Worldly Prime Liquid or any of the other supreme essences in this world. The disparity was of an incalculable proportion.

Moreover, the even more wondrous aspect was that any existence could handle it, unlike the tyrannical Myriad Star Water!

There was a legend stating that the source of the three ancestral veins was the beginning of the formation of this world. In the beginning, countless essences gestated the nine worlds and myriad realms. A few items did not melt during that time and fell into the worlds. Perhaps these items would form the materials found here, at the source of the three veins. There was enough essence here to create a new world and sustain its inhabitants.

This legend had no basis. Nevertheless, the Provenance's Splendor was definitely the most valuable essence in this world. No existence would be able to escape its temptation.

Despite it being within his grasp, Li Qiye did not take any actions for he knew that it wasn't so simple. This was because the dao runes surrounding the pond were extremely powerful. Without the acceptance of these runes, even an Immortal Emperor would be teleported outside in an instant; they wouldn't be able to stay here any longer.

“Buzz!” The dao runes covering the pond began to light up. They came together with a splash.

These dao runes piled up onto each other like slow, flowing water. They began to change from one person to another. First was a handsome, burly man. Next was a mysterious person shrouded behind a cloak. Then suddenly, it was just an ordinary looking fella...

Eventually, the runes took on a complete form. A crow appeared before Li Qiye. The spreading of its wings blotted out the world; myriad realms were lost in darkness. This crow loomed over everything as it suppressed the heaven and earth.

“You still dare to come back to my place?!” The crow's speech echoed like a supreme Immortal Monarch's command, as if many Godkings were prostrating before him.

“Your derivation is wrong. This was my old crow form; my body is now a living being and not an illusion like before.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

It turned out that all the characters earlier were the different forms Li Qiye took to travel this world! Of course, those were only illusions and transformations rather than his true form.

“Buzz!” At this time, the crow disappeared. A different person appeared before Li Qiye. Anyone would gasp in shock after seeing this. This was another Li Qiye. All of his gestures and his demeanor were exactly the same. A stranger would find it impossible to determine which one was real and which was fake.

“So you’re here to trick people again?” The other Li Qiye glanced at Li Qiye with a leisurely and nonchalant expression.

“Okay, don’t transform into me or try to scheme against me. You are only a universal law without life or emotions, there’s no need to learn how to talk!” Li Qiye responded with a grin: “Your true self is the most important thing, these trivial aspects are meaningless.”

“Buzz!” This Li Qiye disappeared and a blurry shadow took its place. It carried the high heavens above and determined the fate of the universe below. All was within its grasp.

“There’s no need to transform into the high heavens either. You are not the high heavens, and to be frank, this is not its form anyways.” Li Qiye chuckled at this transformation.

“I’ll do what I want, it’s none of your business.” The blurred shadow replied with disdain.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile wryly. He rubbed his nose and helplessly said: “It seems like I am guilty. I shouldn’t have corrupted you last time, making you derive the emotions of mortals.”

“I am the law of this world. I can become anything, there’s no need for you to teach me.” The blurred shadow contemptuously stated with great arrogance.

Li Qiye had come here once before as the Dark Crow. Moreover, he stayed here for a very long time. Back then, the law of this location was not like this. Later on, it retained all kinds of habits from Li Qiye’s teasing.

“Yes, yes, yes, you are the law of the heaven and earth, capable of transforming into all things.” Li Qiye smiled.

The blurry shadow suddenly disappeared. In the blink of an eye, a woman appeared before Li Qiye. Her beauty was such that it couldn’t be described with mere words.

“Am I pretty?” She asked Li Qiye with an enchantingly scornful smile.

“Fuck! You dare to transform into her? You think I won’t tear

you into pieces?!” Li Qiye couldn’t resist cursing: “Your style is so unnatural, it really makes me want to puke!”

Chapter 919: What Are You?

“Fine then, I’ll stop transforming, what’s the big deal?” The woman quickly turned back into the blurred shadow situated in the most secretive recess of the sky, a location above all else.

Li Qiye was speechless after seeing the law transforming into so many different things. He felt a bit guilty after seeing this since he was the one who had corrupted the poor law.

The law protecting the pond was created from the heaven and earth. It was the purest of laws, one without life or emotions. However, it was able to transform into all things, or at least take their forms.

The blurred shadow asked: “Oh right, how is that woman doing now?”

Li Qiye looked at it with one eye and answered: “What does it have to do with you? You are not a living being, so stop caring about other people’s business.”

The blurred shadow quipped: “Oh, so you broke up. What’s wrong, did that woman dump you? Look at your pitiful state, I must be right. But yeah, who would like a crow anyway?”

Li Qiye angrily said: “Fuck, since when did a lifeless thing like you gain such a big mouth? You’re just like the gossipers outside, you love to babble on and on all the time.”

“Babble my ass.” The blurred shadow retorted with disdain: “Who was the incessant one back then? Just babbling in my ears all day about Su’er and then Zhan’er... you made me sick listening to it all the time.”

Li Qiye frowned after hearing this: “Fuck, I knew I shouldn’t have told you all of those things!”

“Hehehe, it is too late now. I already know so many of your secrets.” The shadow said gloatingly.

Li Qiye gave it a look: “I was only playing around with you. Besides, how could I actually tell you any secrets?”

“Please, playing with me? I am the law of the heaven and earth and can derive all things with ease.” The shadow asked: “How can I not differentiate real stories from fake ones?”

Li Qiye was slightly speechless. The opponent was not a living being or even an existence, it was just a universal law. However, the damned thing really knew how to banter; its attitude was just like him in the past. This nearly made him vomit blood.

The shadow said: “Hey, I gave myself a couple of names, tell me which one is the best.”

“Why do you want a name, your name is simply law.” Li Qiye answered.

“Nevermind then. If you don’t want to listen, don’t come begging for me later.” The shadow snorted with an arrogant demeanor that nearly drove Li Qiye crazy.

“Fine, tell me then.” Li Qiye had no choice but to acquiesce.

The shadow became spirited after finding a listener: “There are a couple, check them out. [Sha Qiye, Zhen Qiye, Mie Qiye, Tu Qiye, Zhan Qiye](#)... which one do you think is the best?”

After the shadow said more than ten names in one breath, Li Qiye almost vomited blood again.

“None of them are you, you should just name yourself ‘[Kill Your Sister](#)!’” Li Qiye’s face turned black.

With that response, the shadow tilted its head and seriously pondered for a bit before continuing: “I think it would be nice to call myself Dark Crow.”

“That’s my title!” Li Qiye snapped back: “Plus, you are just a universal law. You want a name? How about my ass!”

“Bah, who says I don’t want a name? I am the greatest in this world, the one and only across all the eons, so naturally I would want a cool name!” The shadow arrogantly declared: “This immortal wants your name. From now on, I am Dark Crow!”

“Okay, can we talk for real now?” Li Qiye felt helpless and weakly spoke: “Calling yourself Dark Crow is only copying someone else. If you are the greatest in this world, wouldn’t this be too shameful?”

“Makes sense.” The shadow thought some more: “I am the greatest, so why should I share a title with you? Okay then, from now on, I am [Zhan Xian](#)!”

“Why Zhan Xian?” Li Qiye curiously smiled.

“You said it before, in the ancient era, immortals were the only things in this world; they were above all else.” It arrogantly proclaimed: “Thus, I want to defeat and kill all immortals, hence the name Zhan Xian.”

“Very catchy, great name.” Li Qiye immediately praised. No matter if it was the truth or just flattery, it was better than letting the shadow have the name Dark Crow. Li Qiye thought that his prestige would be ruined otherwise.

“I know it is good. How could a name chosen by me not be good?” The shadow laughed in a very narcissistic and arrogant manner.

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “How is the thing in the lake?”

“Are you up to no good again?” The shadow immediately grew cautious and asked coldly after hearing this.

A universal law should be without emotions. However, it had been influenced by Li Qiye since he stayed here for a very long time in the past. It was even copying him to some extent.

“Nothing bad.” Li Qiye cheerfully smiled: “The truth is that I stumbled upon some new findings recently...”

“New findings? Not interested.” The shadow replied: “Plus, don’t think that I don’t know you are a bad person and have always been eyeing this place.”

“Well, I won’t deny that I’m interested in the thing inside.” Li Qiye smiled: “That is not a secret or anything. Just let me do what I want and perhaps it will be beneficial for you too.”

“What benefits? Don’t try to bribe me.” The shadow wasn’t very interested at all.

“If, say, that thing is completed, wouldn’t you be free as well?” Li Qiye smirked.

The shadow instantly became happy after hearing this. But afterward, it glared at Li Qiye to say: “Both you and I know that this is very difficult to accomplish! Don’t try to trick me!”

“I can guarantee you that it will definitely be successful this generation.” Li Qiye persuaded: “However, I’m just missing a little bit. If I can get that other thing done, then I can do this as well.”

“Haha, there’s no need to tempt me.” The shadow sneered: “I know just what kind of person you are. You tricked me last time, so I’m not listening to your crap again.”

Li Qiye didn’t blush at all. He smiled and said: “Yes, I tricked you last time, but technically, the thing inside already belongs to me since you lost, right?”

“So what if it belongs to you?” The shadow looked down on Li Qiye: “If I don’t let you through, you wouldn’t be able to take it even if it belongs to you.”

“How should I put this? Even though this thing could be considered yours back then, it is still ultimately an item without a master. But you’ve been here for so long that it really should be yours. Do you not want it at all?” Li Qiye tried to persuade it again.

The shadow spoke with a lack of interest: “Not interested. You’re right about one thing, I’m not a human or an existence or anything at all for that matter, I’m just a universal law. What do I gain from obtaining it?”

Li Qiye found this to be quite problematic. If it didn’t bite no matter what, then all of his plans were done for.

“What do I have to do for you to let me through?” Li Qiye smiled: “Because of our friendship, we don’t have to fight till the sky collapses in this place, right?”

“Sky collapses my ass.” The shadow said with disdain: “If I didn’t want you here, I could teleport you away the moment you attack. Just like you said before, even Immortal Emperors can’t do anything!”

Li Qiye regretted telling this thing all of this information back then.

“Moreover, I have no emotions so we don’t have any friendship to speak of.” The shadow looked at Li Qiye with one eye.

The shadow’s attitude left Li Qiye helpless. He raised his hands and said: “Okay, okay, I give up. State your conditions. If possible, I will meet all of your demands.”

“You sure?” The shadow immediately stared intensely at Li Qiye. Li Qiye was getting the willies from this glare.

“Fine, go for it.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The shadow’s attitude resembled Li Qiye very closely at this moment. It leisurely said: “Well, my condition is very simple. You will stay here and keep me company like in the past and I’ll let you through.”

“That won’t do.” Li Qiye shook his head: “You are taking complete advantage of me. Plus, I am not the same as before. In the past, I had everlasting life, but if I get stuck here now, that means I will be completely screwed.”

“Then forget it, I don’t care. Don’t even think about passing.”
The shadow sneered.

Li Qiye chuckled and said: “You shouldn’t say no so fast. How about this, to make things fair, we’ll make a bet. If I lose, then I’ll stay behind. If I win, you have to let me through.”

Sha = kill, Zhen = suppress, Mie = extinguish, Tu = slaughter, Zhan = slash/behead.

This is a common retort to say something rude + your sister.
Don’t think it works as well in English.

Zhan Xian = Fight (Against) Immortal.

Chapter 920: Another Bet

The shadow replied with disdain to the bet: “It was a bet last time too, and it ended with you throwing me into the pit!”

To which Li Qiye responded with a smile: “That was last time, now is now. Plus, you won’t be losing anything, right? If I lose, then I’m done for. I’m not immortal anymore, so staying here would ruin me.”

“Stop egging me on.” The shadow sneered: “No matter what you say, I won’t fall into your trap. Who doesn’t know that you are a liar who specializes in fooling people?”

“Your words do me injustice.” Li Qiye helplessly said: “This time, I came with sincerity. Just imagine, this treasure is completely worthless to you, but if I lose, I will have to give up everything. Just think about it, how heavy is my bet? This is the greatest gamble in history!”

“Stop acting like that. I already said I won’t be tricked by you.” The shadow immediately rejected. It was very cautious after already being fooled once.

“There’s nothing I can do if you don’t want to.” Li Qiye said with disappointment: “I guess I have to leave. The only thing I can say is that this trip was such a waste.”

“Really now?” The shadow snorted: “You spent a tremendous amount of effort to get here. Who would believe that you’re giving

up this easily?”

“I know you don’t believe me.” Li Qiye shook his head and reluctantly said: “But I can’t force you to trust me, so what else can I do besides leave? Do I have to assault this place? You know that I can’t penetrate your defenses anyway.”

“I’m not convinced at all.” The shadow sneered: “A lawless person like you would give up so easily? When was the last time you admitted defeat?”

Li Qiye said with a smile: “Times are different now. I’m no longer immortal, I no longer have unlimited time. Time is too precious for me right now. I would rather do other things outside instead of spending a thousand years in here. That would be much more exciting.”

“Hmph, whatever you say.” The shadow snorted, still unconvinced.

Li Qiye grinned in response: “Okay then, it seems like there’s no point in talking any further. Take care of yourself. Who knows if we will have the chance to meet again in the future. Goodbye, friend.”

With that, Li Qiye turned around to leave this place. Meanwhile, the shadow grew quiet.

“How do you want to bet?” The shadow finally broke the silence

and asked Li Qiye before he could get far.

Li Qiye turned around and looked at the shadow: “If you want to bet, then how about we wager with our lives? I know of your power. Your curse will certainly end in death; even Immortal Emperors would suffer the same fate. Thus, I want to try using my true fate to withstand your curse.” Li Qiye paused for a moment: “If I can’t live after my true fate is afflicted, then I lose. If I can come back to life, then you lose. What do you think?”

“Haha, don’t act like that. I know you are still immortal. Even if I curse you, it still wouldn’t be able to kill you.” The shadow snorted.

Li Qiye shook his head: “You still don’t believe me? You are the most profound universal law in this world. If you are still skeptical, then you can try and derive it. In this generation, I have reobtained my true body and escaped from the Immortal Demon Grotto. I stand before you not as an illusion, but as a living being with flesh and blood. If I was still immortal due to the grotto, would you be able to derive it then?”

“Fine, I’ll do it.” The shadow scowled and continued to change. Every single one of its transformations was very mysterious and profound. Even the most brilliant genius wouldn’t be able to understand its transformations.

After many changes, the profound law finally turned back into its blurred shadow form, still as powerful as ever as if it was the tyrant of all things.

“It seems like you are telling the truth. Your body is truly your original and the immortal power has disappeared.” The shadow finally acknowledged Li Qiye’s claim.

“I have no need to trick you since we have always been honest with each other.” Li Qiye smiled: “We have stayed together for so long, so how could I bear to trick you?”

The shadow coldly said: “Right, just like last time.” Although it shouldn’t have emotions, it still clearly remembered when Li Qiye tricked it last time and was very annoyed with him.

Li Qiye shook his head: “Strictly speaking, I didn’t fool you last time, it was just part of the plan. You and I both knew the conditions, I didn’t lie at all. Under the circumstances back then, I only made a subtle change, that’s all.”

“What about this time then? What are you going to do?” The shadow uttered: “I don’t believe that you are not afraid of dying.”

To which Li Qiye responded with a smile: “Of course I am afraid of dying. Nevertheless, I have been enlightened with a particular grand dao, so I am confident in withstanding your curse. I have absolute faith in it being able to stop even an Immortal Emperor. Come give it a try if you don’t believe me.”

“Such a big tone!” The shadow was instantly annoyed. Such words were completely underestimating its power. How could it swallow such disdain?

It continued on to say: “Even if you had accepted the Heaven’s Will, I could still torture you to death!”

“Come then.” Li Qiye provoked: “I’m not afraid of your invincible curse. I will stand strong and watch it be completely ineffective against me.”

With that, a series of rumbles could be heard. Li Qiye’s true fate emerged and floated around him. He smiled toward the shadow: “Come, let me experience the power of your curse.”

“Fine, I want to see just how powerful you are!” Li Qiye’s provocation infuriated the shadow. In the blink of an eye, the dao runes rushed forward like a flood. It turned into a very mysterious mantra with an unspeakable force. It seemed to be eternal. There was no return after being struck by its power!

“Zzz—” The mantra quickly imprinted itself on Li Qiye’s true fate like a branding iron burning flesh. This sensation was extremely painful, but Li Qiye still managed to withstand it.

After making its mark, the mantra immediately left his true fate but didn’t imprint itself at a deeper area.

It turned back into the blurred shadow and angrily said: “Son of a bitch, you tricked me again! You got the legendary Death Scripture!”

It was a law of the heaven and earth of an extremely profound level. However, the Death Scripture was also born during the inception of this universe. Even if it was unfathomable, it couldn't derive or calculate the Death Scripture. It knew that it had fallen into Li Qiye's trap the moment it imprinted its curse onto his true fate!

"Yes, I am cultivating the Death Scripture." Li Qiye faintly smiled. The agony from the imprint on his true fate was too much to bear. Anyone else would be rolling on the ground in pain. However, Li Qiye had suffered too many painful experiences. He was able to stand and smile without a problem.

"You tricked me again!" The shadow repeated.

Li Qiye smiled in response: "I didn't trick you and I never said that I didn't cultivate the Death Scripture either. I only said that I could withstand your curse, am I right?"

The shadow couldn't argue on that point, but it still coldly said: "Hmph, so what if you cultivate the Death Scripture? I can still kill you!"

Li Qiye smiled and said: "I believe that your curse can definitely kill me. However, I recall our bet was not about you killing me, but about whether I can survive or not. I never said that I would lose after dying, only if I can't come back to life."

"You spouted a bunch of nonsensical drivel just so that you could lead me on and distract me!" The shadow finally realized that it

had jumped into a hole dug by Li Qiye.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “As a universal law, you should always be in your most focused state to derive and calculate without being influenced by emotions.”

“Bastard, not again!” The shadow was furious.

“I know you are blaming me.” Li Qiye slowly said: “But it is not like I am not giving you a chance. The time has come for the thing inside, so long as I am successful. It will definitely take off and you will be free as your mission would be over. You are an extraordinary universal law, so you can go wherever you want.”

“Hmph, all of this talking doesn’t change the fact that you tricked me!” The shadow coldly uttered.

Chapter 921: Secret In The Pond

Li Qiye didn't mind the angered shadow as he explained: "I don't blame you for blaming me. Honestly, I corrupted you back then by contaminating you with emotions. I'm guilty of that. All along, I've always wanted the item in this place, I won't deny what I did back then. If you want to blame me, then wait until the day you are free, then you can come at me at any time. At that moment, we won't be betting or scheming against each other." Li Qiye gently sighed after finishing.

The shadow contemplated in silence after hearing this. It seemed that it had accepted Li Qiye's explanation.

Li Qiye sighed and slowly walked towards the pond. The shadow had no response and the dao runes on the ground didn't shift at all. Without a doubt, it had implicitly given him permission to pass.

Without its permission, even an Immortal Emperor would be teleported outside once they set foot into these thick arrays of dao runes!

Standing next to the lake and looking down at the pond full of Provenance's Splendor, Li Qiye immediately jumped in without the slightest hesitation.

He continued to sink after entering. This pond was very deep; after a long while of sinking, he finally saw the bottom.

There was a golden maelstrom at the base of the pond. It slowly

swirled around to the rhythm of this world.

It was unfathomable and seemed depthless. No one could tell where it led to.

Li Qiye floated above the maelstrom with thoughts rampant in his mind because there was a heaven-shattering secret regarding this matter. Moreover, this golden maelstrom was only a part of it.

However, time did not allow Li Qiye to contemplate at this moment. He took a deep breath and opened his sea of memories. With a series of explosions, a universal law that contained countless secrets flew out.

“Open!” The universal law pinned itself against the edge of the maelstrom. While Li Qiye’s hands were busy forming profound mudras, he shouted and a mantra flew out.

“Boom!” A mark emerged above the maelstrom, one that belonged to Li Qiye.

He had the chance to come here last time after defeating the blurred shadow. Because of this, he already had something amazing stored at the edge of the golden maelstrom. Naturally, this was something that only he was aware of.

“Go.” Li Qiye then hid another item in this mark. It disappeared inside and completely hid itself. At the same time, the mark also disappeared from the maelstrom so that no outsiders would ever

find out what just happened.

After doing so, his thirteen palaces loudly blared and activated the Nirvana Heavens. The vessel of life and vessel of genesis emerged as well and poured down their endless blood energy and power.

“Let me help you so that you can come out in this generation!” Li Qiye poured his blood energy and life force into the maelstrom.

At the same time, a silver glimmer came out from his mind. He obtained this silver glimmer from the deepest location of the Ancestral Realm back then!

“Rumble!” Waves of golden swirls escaped from the maelstrom, causing the earth to spin. Right when these swirls erupted, a golden light flew into Li Qiye’s mind.

The blurred shadow simply stood there and quietly watched the surging water in the pond. At this second, it was being its true self — emotionless and unstained by the mundane world.

After a long time, Li Qiye climbed out of the pond with a splash.

He was very worn out at this moment and seemed like he would crumble to dust at any time; his complexion was completely pale just like how his blood had been drained.

“Your endurance is pretty good, you haven’t fallen yet.” The blurred shadow emotionlessly stared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye sat on his butt and smiled. However, due to his fatigued state, his smile was even uglier than crying. He leisurely said: “I have always endured till the very end, even in near-death situations.”

The shadow only glanced at him without saying anything.

“Before dying, how, how about I bring up one more request?” Li Qiye was heaving heavily, completely out of breath. He didn’t have the strength to speak at this moment, he was only holding on before breathing his last breath.

The shadow coldly said: “Speak.” It didn’t seem to want to argue or be angry at him.

“I, I don’t know what fortune the Death Seal will give me, but, but before my final breath, can you send me to the Mortal Emperor World? This... this shouldn’t be difficult... for you...” Before he could finish his words, he fell flat down on the ground.

At this point, he could still move a bit and spoke: “I’m, I’m telling you, we... we will still be able to meet again. At, at that time, it still won’t be late if y-you want to deal with me...”

With that, his life finally faded; he died before finishing his

sentence!

The curse of the shadow was indeed very frightening. Although it didn't destroy Li Qiye's true fate, just one imprint made his death unavoidable.

Alas, Li Qiye was very heaven-defying. He didn't die immediately and actually withstood it until everything was over!

"Too much blabbering." The shadow coldly uttered. A light began to move along with the dao runes.

"Buzz." Li Qiye instantly disappeared inside the dao runes, teleporting him away in a flash! Although it didn't give its word, it still sent him off.

It was absent-minded afterward. The shadow was a universal law without any emotions. However, Li Qiye had stayed at this place for a very long time and taught it many things. Under Li Qiye's influence, it gradually changed and was no longer a pure universal law!

Although it knew Li Qiye came with a goal and tricked it twice, it didn't hate Li Qiye. Because of him, it was able to learn just how beautiful this world was! It understood many more things outside of universal laws and orders. It wasn't able to derive or transform into such things!

The shadow eventually murmured: "I want to be a person,

someone with emotions, just like those in his stories.” Li Qiye did not hear these words. This lifeless universal law wanted to see the outside world.

“Li Qiye, remember well. Once I am free, I’ll beat the crap out of you for tricking me!” The shadow laughed before disappearing.

After being sent outside, Li Qiye quickly crossed the void and entered the pathways between worlds. He was instantly brought into the territory of the Mortal Emperor World.

“Buzz!” His body lit up at this moment. A white flower emerged from his mind with eighteen petals. This was the Death Seal, one of the four great techniques of the Death Scripture.

Three of the petals were bright, signifying that Li Qiye had died three times. Outside of the death this time, he had died to Jian Wushuang once and another time back at the Beast Vein.

Li Qiye should have revived the moment the Death Seal appeared, but the seal didn’t immediately resurrect him. The light on the three petals began to move and turned into a fate loop!

The Death Seal had other effects outside of just revival once the number of deaths reached particular milestones.

One fate accumulated from three deaths, one item formed from

six deaths, one life changed from nine deaths, and eighteen deaths to reach the high heavens!

This meant that after dying three times, the energy of death would turn into a fate loop, giving him a new fortune.

“Buzz!” After Li Qiye flew to the Mortal Emperor World, the Death Seal dragged him through the spatial fabric of the realms towards the [Barren Earth](#).

Mortal Emperor World, Barren Earth! It was located in the southern region of this world and spanned endlessly.

As one of the five great realms, the territory here was no less impressive than that of the Eastern Hundred Cities or the Grand Middle Territory. Although it had the name Barren Earth, it was not a [parched land](#).

It was completely wrong to think of this land as a desert because it was full of water sources. Many areas in this realm were even known for their fertility!

Thus, very few people could explain the reason for the name. There were a variety of stories. One stated that during an ancient era, a war of the immortal level took place here. Immortals were able to incinerate the entire realm with a swing of their sleeve, scorching this great location.

Later on, under considerable efforts from supreme existences,

they were able to turn this land back into a [land of fish and rice](#).

Barren here can also mean crimson/barren/naked/bloody in nature/southern, but there are a few reasons why I chose crimson over barren in the early chapters. First, crimson is relatively safe before getting the details of the land. What if it was a lush land? Crimson can at least be the color of the mud. The second reason is due to a particular race in this place. Some names are always problematic to translate if the author doesn't give sufficient details. This particular word 赤 is an example. Changing names for accuracy is something I do want to do for ED, but it can be troublesome with the current client. If the new website provides an easier outlet, then name changes will be carried out more often for older chapters.

Okay, nevermind, Barren wins. Translating can be so fun... I won't be changing footnote 1 so that people can read my initial thoughts on this particular word.

Idiom for fertile and other synonyms.

Chapter 922: Sky Dome

There was another legend about this realm. In the ancient era before the myriad races came about, this place gave birth to something. Right at its birth, the creature opened its mouth and devoured the heaven and earth. It siphoned the blood of the billions of existences here as well as all the worldly energy in the surrounding area.

A long period later, this creature finally reached the end of its lifespan. It came back to the place that gave birth to it and met its end.

After it died, all the blood energy and essences were returned to this land. Many years later, this land became verdant once more, a land of plenty.

This creature was called the Blood Forefather later on, the progenitor of the Blood Race!

Some from the Blood Race scattered across the nine worlds accepted this theory while clan members denied it. The origin of the clan remains a mystery.

Although the legends of this creature and the Southern Barren Earth couldn't be proven, one thing was certain — this Blood Forefather truly existed, and the first branch of the Blood Race thrived till this very day.

At the most southern region of this realm was a huge desert.

Sand was flying everywhere among the dunes. If one could cross this desert, then they would be able to reach a certain location.

This location was called the primal ground of the Blood Forefather. This location was a holy mecca in the minds of many of the Blood Race.

The Blood Forefather's primal ground was where their progenitor was born. Legends went further to state that back in that ancient era, a drop of blood from an immortal fell down to this place. It turned into the creature that ended up giving birth to the entire Blood Race.

This legend was considered the most orthodox belief of their origin and was accepted by many.

Of course, there were also other legends besides this common one. Two of them were spread quite far.

One of them stated that during a dark era, the Blood Race's ancestors were a group of evil creatures hiding in the darkness, monsters that relied on siphoning blood to survive.

It wasn't until later that a master among these evil creatures got together with a woman. Their offspring eventually came to be the new Blood Race. This new Blood Race went to war with their ancestors and replaced them completely.

The other legend claimed that their progenitor was a devil. This

devil later on mated with a female corpse, and so came their race.

The majority of the Blood Race accepted the first legend. They considered themselves to be pure and righteous and naturally, they would deny the second and third legends. At the very least, the Blood Race members located at the Barren Earth believed that these two legends were fabricated by the other races to discredit their clan!

Thus, the Mortal Emperor World mainly accepted the first legend. This made the Blood Forefather very prestigious and influential among the Blood Clan members in this world.

This primal ground was controlled by a group that claimed to be the first branch of the Blood Race, the forefather's direct descendants.

For a very long period of time, this primal ground was able to command all the Blood Race's members across the nine worlds. Today, though its prestige was not as great as it was in the past, it was still very influential in the Barren Earth. Many blood tribes and even the imperial lineages situated here all acknowledged the prestigious position of the primal ground!

“Boom!” Li Qiye fell to the ground. The Death Seal lit up and seemed to be reversing time. Everything recovered, including Li Qiye's true fate that was imprinted with the curse.

He opened his eyes and flexed his blood energy. There was a horrible feeling as if an invisible force was locking down his dao

foundation, not allowing him to activate any laws.

“This is too devious. It is one thing to let me die, but it even added this. This is just torturing me on purpose.” Li Qiye felt that his dao foundation was sealed and couldn’t help but smile wryly.

He knew that the blurry shadow was angry at him, so it did this to his dao foundation. When he came back to life, he wouldn’t be able to channel his merit laws; he would become a man who couldn’t even do a good job of tying down chickens.

This curse was simply too powerful. Even Immortal Emperors would die if their true fate was subjected to its effect. The reality was that the law only sealed Li Qiye’s dao foundation and didn’t destroy it — this was already showing mercy. It didn’t want to ruin him, it only wanted to make it a bit difficult for him.

Li Qiye stretched his body and heard the sounds of bones breaking beneath him. He turned around to look and noticed that below him was a mountain of bones. Countless skeletons were piled on top of each other in this place. It was too messy to determine how many people had died here.

However, this was not the worst part. A frightening death aura was spread throughout the atmosphere, an endless amount of death energy that could corrode all things. Any living creatures that came here would die to this corrosion.

This might be fatal to others, but for Li Qiye who cultivated the Death Chapter, this could only be a meal or even a great medicinal

supplement.

Li Qiye finally had a good look at his surroundings. This was a huge stone cavern with bones everywhere.

Those who were more cowardly would soil themselves if they were lost in this place.

Li Qiye relaxed on top of the bones and looked around before murmuring: “Not bad.” He was still as nonchalant as ever despite being on top of countless skeletons.

His eyes fell upon the roof of the cave. Strangely enough, it wasn’t made out of rock. An endless amount of red lights moved at the dome as if this was not a roof but rather a sky. There were also clouds of a red shade floating around!

These red clouds continued to change as if they were trying to form something. These transformations were definitely creepy and gave off the sense that there was something secretive going on.

“This is...” Li Qiye’s eyes turned serious after he saw the transforming light in the sky, especially the bloody clouds. He tilted his head to take a better look around.

“Sky Dome...” Li Qiye finally felt a familiar sensation. He confirmed his location after seeing the transforming clouds in the Sky Dome.

“What fortune shall this grant me?” Li Qiye usually didn’t care for all the creations in this world. He was, however, a bit excited after recognizing this place.

“Crash!” After a while, a fate loop flew out from the bloody clouds and pulled out a long universal law. This law was dazzling and extremely profound. No one could look straight at its radiance.

“Rumble!” Li Qiye’s master palace opened. In the blink of an eye, it took in this universal law. Meanwhile, the fate loop flew to the Death Seal before disappearing. The Death Seal that resembled a lotus flower exploded once before re-entering his body.

“This is...” Li Qiye checked the law inside his palace closely before murmuring: “Did I get really lucky this time? If this is real, then this fate is too incredible.”

One fate accumulated from three deaths. Li Qiye had died three times, so the Death Seal took him to this place. Moreover, the fate loop even brought him an item like this. All of this was for a good reason. This was to give him an extreme fortune, a grand creation.

“Did I really get this?” Li Qiye meticulously looked inside his palace again. He wasn’t completely certain right now.

After a while, Li Qiye revealed a faint smile: “Just have to go out and give it a try to know if it is real or not.”

With that, he looked around and smiled: “Sky Dome, eh. The

Blood Race has always wanted this secret. If this is real, then this really is a case of being unable to find the destination after wearing out iron soles, then inadvertently finding it without any effort!”

Very few people would recognize the name “Sky Dome”. Even in the Blood Race, especially the younger generation, they wouldn’t know what it is.

However, the Sky Dome had a special significance for the origin of the Blood Race and their primal ground.

Li Qiye had come to this place before, in a distant era, and not just once since he wanted to obtain the legendary item in the Sky Dome.

However, as the Dark Crow, even though he was able to scheme from one era to another, he couldn’t obtain this legendary item. This was because there were no rules to the item, it was all based on fate.

In fact, all of the Blood Race and the primal ground had always wanted to obtain it because it was related to their origin — a heaven-shattering secret.

People from the clan came and went from this place. They obtained some benefits, but not the legendary item!

Chapter 923: Blood Forefather's Four Ladies

Eventually, Li Qiye looked at the huge stone cavern and smiled: “This is just in time for the Blood Primal Ground’s baptism test as well. It seems like I came right at the perfect time.” Li Qiye looked around before stepping on the mountain of bones and departing in a certain direction.

He didn’t get too far before he saw a few new skeletons. The death energy had yet to corrode the muscles from these skeletons, so it was easy to tell that they had only recently died.

As he went further, more fresh corpses could be found. These corpses paved a path as the powerful death energy slowly ate away their bodies. The closer he was to the exit, the more bodies he would find. This meant that the weaker cultivators would die very quickly upon entering this cavern while those who could go further were much more powerful.

“After so many years, the disciples from the Blood Race are still coming and failing in waves. They want to obtain the blessing of their progenitor in the Sky Dome to pass the baptism of blood.” Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head while looking at the fresh skeletons.

Li Qiye’s location was called the Sky Dome, a place desired by countless cultivators from the Blood Race. It was also very dangerous.

The disciples of the clan believed that if they could enter the Sky

Dome, they could obtain a great fortune — their progenitor's blessing. Experiencing the baptism of blood was the same as a carp jumping through the dragon gate!

There was a myth regarding the Sky Dome. It stated that after the Blood Forefather died, he left his skull behind, and it became the Sky Dome.

It was precisely due to its origin that a horrifying death energy that could devour all living things existed here. The disciples from the clan aspired to enter in spite of the numerous deaths because of the secret hidden within, along with the many other great creations.

Passing through a baptism successfully after obtaining the forefather's blessing meant that one's value would increase a hundredfold overnight!

Both the Sky Dome and the blood pond for the baptism were under the jurisdiction of the primal ground. Every once in awhile, they would organize a baptism with the name Blood Legacy. No matter the sect, any member of the Blood Clan was eligible to participate as long as they were able to enter the Sky Dome and obtain the blessing. Success was all dependent on their own abilities.

Eventually, Li Qiye left the Sky Dome and crawled out from the cavern's entrance. This was the only way inside the Sky Dome.

At this time, it was completely surrounded by four different

groups. They camped there quietly while gazing at the cave.

The groups were led by four women that each had their own charm. Their only similarity was that they were all very young with great figures.

They wore embroidered dresses. However, these loose dresses still couldn't hide their tall and voluptuous bodies. One could see the rolling hills and faintly discernable valleys.

Moreover, they all wore masks so no one could see their faces. All four masks had different colors, the same with their dresses.

One had a golden mask with a yellow dress, another had a red mask and a red dress. The third had a blue mask with a blue dress while the last had a white mask and a white dress.

Dozens of experts were behind these four ladies. They all wore the same colors as their leaders as well. It was clear that they were from the same branch.

The four groups came from the Blood Primal Ground. Although the primal ground claimed that they inherited the legacy of the forefather, they themselves were divided into four branches.

The four leaders were the primal ground's Skymatrons. They had extraordinary bloodlines and represented the four branches.

They usually never showed themselves to the world and were not

at all famed in the Mortal Emperor World. However, they had an exceedingly important position in the hearts of the Blood Race's disciples. Their existences were crucial to the race itself.

At this time, they commanded the experts of their groups to guard the entrance to the Sky Dome. However, after several days, the Sky Dome had no reaction.

For the baptism this time, many disciples entered but no one came out alive after all this time. Thus, when Li Qiye crawled out from inside, all eyes were immediately fixated on him.

The four women and the experts were looking at him intensely. After several days, Li Qiye was the only person who came out alive. More importantly, he was not from the Blood Race, he was only a human. How could they not be taken aback by this?

“A human...” The experts all glanced at each other in confusion. A lot of their clan members entered the Sky Dome, but no one noticed the entry of a human back then.

“Where are the others?” One of the Skymatrons finally spoke with a voice as clear as an oriole. This matron had the yellow embellishment.

The four matrons represented the four seasons. Yellow was spring, red was summer, blue was autumn, and white represented winter.

Li Qiye looked at the matron and smiled: “The legendary Primal Skymatrons, interesting... What is going on this generation for even the matrons to run here and show their faces I wonder?”

The Spring Matron that spoke earlier shouted: “How presumptuous!”

“Bam!” A dragon-like rod immediately aimed for him and coiled around his body in an instant.

“Girl, take it easy. I am the only person who made it out alive from the Sky Dome, so I have become your forefather. If you do this, I’ll make you clean the toilet.” Li Qiye was still as carefree as always.

The other three matrons were intrigued after hearing this. The Autumn Matron attacked as well. She raised her pretty hand, sending her sleeve towards Li Qiye while speaking: “Lil Sister Spring, you can’t have him all to yourself.”

The Spring Matron’s whip suddenly shifted and lunged forth like a dragon towards the sleeve.

“If he is the only survivor, then he belongs to me.” The Winter Matron also rushed forward to grab Li Qiye.

“Big Sister Winter, there’s no need to be so hasty. The changes in the Sky Dome this time are strange. There must be something going on if he is the only survivor, so how can you monopolize

him?” The Summer Matron also smiled and attacked the Winter Matron.

All of a sudden, the four matrons were fighting each other because of Li Qiye. Although none of them were truly angry, their techniques did not show any leniency.

Li Qiye gently shook his head after seeing the four women going at it without any consideration for anything else. He gently walked forward and stood together with the experts from the four branches. He placed his right hand on the shoulder of one of them and cheerfully asked: “Are your matrons the ones in the legends, or are they part of a newer generation?”

The experts at this moment all looked at him in confusion. This brat was being a bit too bold, right? It was one thing to run into their primal ground, but now, he was completely undaunted! They didn’t know whether the fella was stupid or insane.

They would never dare to discuss the four maidens openly, so naturally this expert didn’t answer his question.

“Aizz, it is said that your matrons all have extraordinary bloodlines. If they are part of a newer generation of matrons, then their actions are just too childish. They’re like children fighting for a piece of candy.” Li Qiye shook his head and smiled: “However, if they are the generation in the legends, then that would be scary. Do you know what mortals say is the scariest thing in this world?”

This expert didn’t dare to say anything. The four matrons were

right in front of him, so how could he make a comment?

Li Qiye continued to smile after seeing the non-responsive expert: “One mortal told me that the scariest thing in this world is not the heavens, not sickness or death, but an old woman! An old woman is already so scary, so a group of old women is even worse...”

Such a comment left the experts speechless. Black lines could be seen on their foreheads as they looked at Li Qiye as if he was a madman.

Not to mention disciples like them, even their ancestors wouldn't dare to make comments about the four Primal Skymatrons. But now, this brat had done it. He was just a junior from the human race... The guy was either insane or dumb as a rock.

Sure enough, after Li Qiye said his piece, the four matrons that were fighting each other immediately stopped and all glared at him.

If a stare could kill, then Li Qiye would have died countless times already!

Chapter 924: Origin Of The Blood Race

When the matrons' sharp glares came over, the expert standing next to Li Qiye cried in agony on the inside. He lamented his bad luck and why he had to be standing next to such an unlucky star!

“Bam!” Right at this second, the four matrons attacked Li Qiye with their whips and sleeves. They surrounded him in a flash.

“Whoosh!” They instantly hauled him to the sky and left him hanging there while standing in four different directions. It seemed that they were ready to inflict the dismemberment by four horses punishment.

The four matrons then stared at each other. None of them wanted to stop. If this kept on going, then Li Qiye would be divided into four pieces by them.

“Hey, you four, how old are you? If you are just little girls, then the old geezers back at the primal ground are too untrustworthy. They actually sent a bunch of emotional brats here to deal with this matter...”

“... But if you are the old grandmas from back then... it would be a bit too scary. So old yet still so competitive. Let me tell you something, just calm down. My time is very precious. We should perform the baptism and the ceremonial procedures, then all of us can be happy.” Li Qiye calmly spoke while hanging in the air.

The crowd turned silent again. This brat was simply a lunatic! He

actually dared to say such things!

The four maidens' eyes became fierce; they seemed to be readying themselves to tear him into pieces. They also increased their pulling strength. The whips and sleeves that were wrapped around Li Qiye's body were creaking as well.

"Ugh." Li Qiye was in pain from their pulling. He stared at them and said: "Damned grandmas, the four of you actually want to dismember me? Wait until I become the Blood Forefather, then I'll exile you all to do hard labor, or you can be my palanquin bearers instead!"

The experts from the four branches were astounded after hearing this. Where did this crazy guy come from? He's so insensible and reckless! Anyone else would have been scared to death already.

"Such audacity!" The four matrons were enraged, especially the Spring Matron who had a hot temper; her hair was swaying in the air. She was definitely ready to teach Li Qiye a lesson.

"Okay, little girls, don't get angry." Li Qiye interrupted the Spring Matron and said: "Do you actually want to kill me? I am the only survivor from the Sky Dome, and I also obtained a fortune from within. To be more blunt, I will be your future Blood Forefather. Hurry and take me to the blood pool instead of torturing me here."

"Such a big tone!" Such words made the Winter Matron, who had the coldest personality here, utter: "You aren't the only one that

has received the blessing across all the generations.”

“Of course I know that.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “However, across all the generations, I am the only one who can become your Blood Forefather.”

The Summer Patron, who was more lively among the four, curiously asked: “So? What kind of blessing did you receive?”

“You wouldn’t know even if I told you. I don’t care if you are the old matrons or ones from a newer generation, you wouldn’t be able to understand the blessing required for someone to become the Blood Forefather. Even the old men from your primal ground wouldn’t know ...” Li Qiye explained nonchalantly.

“However, all of you should mentally prepare for when I become your Blood Forefather. I am a vengeful person, and you all have offended me. After becoming your forefather, I will definitely assign all of you to servitude!” Li Qiye smiled at this point: “I personally hope that you are the generation of the legends. Yes, making the four of you carry my palanquin is not a bad idea at all!”

“Stop spouting nonsense!” The Autumn Matron, who was the quiet and graceful one, slowly spoke: “Even if you have received the blessing, a human like you wouldn’t be able to become the Blood Forefather!”

Her words were reasonable. For millions of years now, countless Blood disciples had entered the Sky Dome. However, none of them had received the legendary blessing, not to mention a human like

Li Qiye. Even if he obtained something, it wouldn't be the legendary blessing!

For the Blood Race and especially those in the primal ground, they didn't think that their progenitor would pick an outsider to become their new forefather!

"Whether I can or not will easily be determined after the baptism in the blood pool." Li Qiye calmly spoke: "For your race and the primal ground, the second coming of the Blood Forefather is a grand event. The forefather will be able to command the Blood Race..."

"... As your forefather, I am worried for all of you due to your amateurish conduct here. You four actually hurt your precious forefather like this and have become the sinners of the clan. Even if I pardoned your crime, it would still leave a bad mark on your bloodline!"

Such a remark left the four matrons furious to the point where they almost vomited blood.

The Winter Matron coldly said: "It seems like you know a lot."

Li Qiye smiled: "Well, this is due to your lack of knowledge. As a cultivator, you shouldn't just be training all day. One should read more, understand? In your clan, the matter of the Blood Forefather isn't a secret or anything. Time flows by so people would naturally write things down. The more you read, the more you know. Do you not understand such simple logic?"

The matrons were quivering with anger right now. They had extremely high statuses in the Blood Clan, but Li Qiye dared to talk like this in front of them. Where did this crazy guy come from?!

Li Qiye relaxingly said: “Well, it doesn’t matter whether you are part of the old or new generation, it seems like something strange is going on when the four of you have been relegated to this task. We shouldn’t waste time, let us go to the blood pool.”

“Hmph, you aren’t in charge here!” The Spring Matron snorted.

Li Qiye continued with his carefree demeanor: “I only want what’s best for you four. Just think about it, if you are the generation in the legends, then you have been living for too long. How hard must it be? Sealed inside Blood Era Stones for ages... each time you come out, your lifespan would deplete...”

“Every emergence would result in aging. Which girl isn’t afraid of aging? Your beauty would wither, turning you all into old grandmas — that wouldn’t be good. I am someone who is very considerate of the fairer sex, so I would have a guilty conscience if I just stand here and watch the four of you turn into old grandmas!”

“If you blabber less, we would waste less time!” The Winter Matron retorted.

“Hahaha, I know now.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “I don’t need to remove your masks to prove your identities. So the four of you really are the matrons from the legends. Aizz, how wonderful, how

unfathomable. After so many years, you all are becoming younger and younger. It seems that your bloodline is indeed incredible. The four of you actually managed to break through the chains of your blood!”

“Aizz, women who become younger as they age, even I wasn’t able to recognize it.” Li Qiye was very proud of his discovery.

The four matrons were extremely annoyed with him. The graceful Autumn Matron stared at him and said: “It seems like you have some ability with scheming. Spouting nonsense for half a day just to find out our origins!”

“Thank you.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “I’m only curious about the current level of your bloodline, that’s all. Even though you are a bunch of old women that have lived for countless years, your personalities are still like unruly little girls. Aizz, what a lamentable thing.”

“Take him away!” In the end, the four of them completely lost their patience with him. They knew that Li Qiye was neither crazy nor a fool. He tried to figure out their true identities several times, showing that he was more than what he seemed!

The experts from the four branches came and carried him away.

No matter how he was being carried, he was still as calm as ever. He lied there and teasingly glanced at the four matrons: “Little girls, it is not too late to apologize. Be my palanquin bearers and this forefather shall forgive you, or else I’ll really exile the four of

you to manual labor!”

The four matrons ignored him. If it wasn't for him being blessedd, they would have made sure to dismember him.

“Aizz, it seems like all of you don't believe that I can become the Blood Forefather.” Li Qiye leisurely stated: “I'll let you know something. Once I become the forefather, I'll use that thing in the blood pool to spank your butts.”

Chapter 925: Blood Race's Secret

The rude teasing enraged the four matrons once more. They glared at Li Qiye, wanting to tear him into pieces. Alas, they had to endure this anger. The Winter Matron said: “You alone actually want to take it? No one has ever been able to! Stop daydreaming!”

Li Qiye slowly said: “Mmm, I’m now relieved. So that sword is still there, very good, I’ll definitely take it.”

The four matrons immediately turned silent as if there was an egg in their mouths. They didn’t know whether to be angry or go crazy. Li Qiye was simply toying around with them. They scowled and chose to ignore him. The other experts didn’t say anything either. This seemingly insane fella was trying to find out more information by provoking them.

“Aizz, when I was studying back then, I heard this one legend. It says that your Blood Primal Ground isn’t the direct branch of your progenitor. It states that it usurped the original Blood Race...” Li Qiye was being carried by his limbs by four experts. However, he didn’t seem to care at all while leisurely talking to the four matrons.

This vexing attitude towards the matrons made others think that he wanted a beating. The matrons learned their lesson and chose to turn the other way. They knew exactly what he was up to.

Although no one paid attention to him, he still kept on going: “I saw in an ancient scroll that you guys made up the legend about

the immortal blood turning into a living being, your Blood Forefather. Another one claims that your real progenitor was a devil that mated with an old female corpse that gave birth to your race...”

The Autumn Matron immediately shouted: “Nonsense! Watch your tongue!”

Li Qiye didn’t care for such a threat and lazily went on: “I’m not the one who said it. There is evidence for this. You four are the matrons in the legend, so you should also know about these old matters. Outside of the Mortal Emperor World, some Blood members believe these theories. Even if you cut off my tongue, you still won’t be able to stop the rest of the world from talking about it. It isn’t a big secret at all. Back when the different groups competed for the main lineage and caused a big commotion, the entire nine worlds found out about it!”

“Hmph...” The Autumn Matron scowled. Although she was reluctant to admit it, it did cause a huge uproar back then.

“Immortal blood turning into a living thing.” Li Qiye pondered for a moment before speaking: “How should we go about this theory? You know, if your primal ground really wants to prove your bloodline, it isn’t that hard. First, immortals must exist in this world. If there are no immortals, then everything is wrong and your theory has no basis, right?”

“There are immortals!” The Spring Matron looked at Li Qiye and sneered: “Just how vast is this world? How could a junior like you imagine its immensity? Your vision is limited to the nine worlds!”

“So there are other locations outside of the nine worlds.” Li Qiye said: “I have read millions of volumes so how come I didn’t know about these places?”

“Just because you don’t know doesn’t mean that they don’t exist!” The lively Summer Matron added: “There are many things that aren’t written down in the records and places not known to people since the start of time. Immortals are in places unknown to the world.”

“Really? I’ve read a lot of books, don’t think about fooling me.” Li Qiye shook his head to say: “There’s no point in talking without proof. You guys don’t know if there is such a place or not, you’re only making assumptions. You’re trying to prove that your lineage came from the legendary immortals by gossiping.”

“Why do you think we don’t know?!” The Winter Matron snorted.

“Then are you saying that your primal ground has attempted to find these locations before?” Li Qiye laughed then leisurely continued: “It seems like the ancient records weren’t wrong. The Immortal Emperors from your race indeed left behind some findings for your primal ground. I’m a bit curious, what kind of findings are they? Is there anything to prepare for the future?”

The four matrons almost vomited blood again. The guy spoke for almost half a day only to dig another hole for them to jump in. He managed to trick them and obtained even more information. The

other experts became even more scared. This insane guy was too devilish, they had to be more careful.

“Really, I’m about to become your Blood Forefather, so you can talk to me about it.” Li Qiye continued: “Maybe you will even need me in the future.”

The Autumn Matron coldly looked at him and said: “It seems like you know a lot of things!”

Li Qiye laughed while being full of himself: “Reading ten thousand books is the same as walking one thousand miles. I have countless records stored in my head. I know of the blue sky above and the underworld river below. There is nothing that I don’t know and nothing that can elude my understanding. Even though my cultivation is limited and I’m not too handsome, my very being is priceless. Someone like me becoming your Blood Forefather will be the glory of your race.”

“Really now?” The Autumn Matron sneered: “Fine, I’ll test you then. If you can answer this, then it will show that you are somewhat capable. Even if you can’t become the Blood Forefather, I will still forgive you of your insolence!”

“No, no, you are mistaken. Me becoming the Blood Forefather is already written in stone. It is not you that will forgive me but me that shall be forgiving you. Of course, I still need to think about it.” Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head.

His arrogance was so rage-inducing that it caused the four

matrons to glare at him. Nevertheless, he didn't seem to care and nonchalantly chuckled: "But if you want to test me, then I'll show you just how knowledgeable your Blood Forefather is so that all of you will prostrate before my great style..."

"... Aizz, I am a person who can't say no to pretty girls. It is one thing if you are part of a newer generation of matrons, but I can't do anything about it if you are part of the legendary generation. How could I say no to such pretty girls?" Li Qiye teasingly winked after saying that.

"Nonsensical junior!" The Spring Matron yelled: "No one in this world has seen our true appearances!"

"Not necessarily." Li Qiye smiled: "There is no absolute secret in this world. Perhaps someone had seen your faces and painted you all. And perhaps I have coincidentally seen these records."

At this time, all four matrons had dark expressions. The Summer Matron had to yell: "Rubbish! If you keep on talking, I'll pull out your tongue!"

"Haha, don't be so aggravated, I'm only kidding. Judging from your style, you all must be very pretty beauties." Li Qiye quickly calmed her down: "When I become your forefather, I will definitely take off your masks to look at your faces for a bit."

The four matrons only stared at him coldly while the experts here didn't dare to say anything. However, they were curious about what the four matrons looked like as well. Very few people

in the primal ground had seen their real appearances! Perhaps not even the ancestors had had this privilege.

“Okay, since you guys have such a negative impression of me, if I don’t show off my talents, you would really start to think that I am just bragging.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “Go ahead and ask your questions. I’ll let you see my peerless talents.”

The four matrons really didn’t like this narcissistic fella, but they had to admit that he was a bit talented and knew quite a few things.

They glanced at each other and eventually, the Autumn Matron broke the silence: “Very well. You said that you had seen the different theories regarding our Blood Race in an ancient record, so I’ll test you about that. Since that legend created such an uproar, it won’t be any secret anyway. Hmph, devil? Are there real devils in this world? That was only a fake accusation.”

“Oh, little girl, you are trying to fool me. But I don’t mind, it can only be said that you are not knowledgeable enough.” Li Qiye leisurely added.

This was met with an angry glare from the Autumn Matron. He continued on cheerfully: “You certainly know a little bit about this, but you’re not completely certain. In fact, even your primal ground itself is not sure about this. Back then, the supporters of the other theory of the Blood Race’s origin had an unfathomable item, I won’t say more about it...”

Li Qiye coughed here before resuming: “According to the ancient records in a distant era, there was a corpse left behind that was full of evidence...”

“You!” The four matrons’ expressions quickly shifted after hearing this.

Li Qiye chuckled: “There’s no need to be alarmed. You four as well as the rest of the Blood Race in this world have never seen it, you all only know of the corpse’s existence. However, just like the others, you do not know what this corpse proves.”

Chapter 926: Blood Pond

The matrons were shocked after hearing this because very few were aware of this secret, yet Li Qiye was about to spill it so easily. They couldn't help but take a more careful look at him; they no longer dared to look down on him. This brat knew too many things and would flaunt his knowledge in such an astonishing fashion.

“Really now, maybe you and your primal ground will ask for my help. After I become the Blood Forefather, I will gladly lend you a hand.” Li Qiye was as relaxed as always: “Of course, although I am a nice person, I still wouldn't offer my assistance for free, even if we are family. I have to charge something because if I provide my service for free, others would start asking and my legs would break from all the running.”

At this time, the four matrons were no longer willing to test Li Qiye because some secrets couldn't be discussed carelessly.

They, along with the experts, carried Li Qiye to the blood pond. Recently, this period of time was very different for the primal ground, so it had no outsiders. The entire location was closed off and all worship was suspended.

The blood pond was a very important location to the primal ground. Legend states that the Sky Dome was the skull of the progenitor while the blood pond was his ocean of blood. Inside were many secrets of the Blood Race.

For millions of years, the primal ground and the entire race had

wanted to obtain something from this pool of blood. However, across the generations, although many disciples were baptized and they obtained quite a few things, they still couldn't obtain the legendary item.

The baptism was very popular and many disciples willingly participated, especially those with humble backgrounds. The cultivators from weaker backgrounds would become great after receiving the blessing as well as the baptism. They could then choose to stay at the primal ground or join the imperial lineages of the Blood Race.

These imperial lineages would be happy to accept such disciples due to their unlimited potential. Thus, this was a great opportunity for lowly cultivators; it was akin to a carp jumping over the dragon gate!

Of course, a few geniuses had experienced the baptism as well because they wanted to prove themselves. After the ceremony, not only did they get amazing treasures and heaven-shattering creations, they also managed to prove that they were the heavens' proud children, those that were accepted by the progenitor.

The dual ceremonies had a great significance for the tribe. It showed that the person's bloodline was extremely noble!

The blood pond was located in a dark region. It was a heavily guarded old palace. Outsiders simply couldn't enter.

"A human?" After Li Qiye was carried into the palace, a hoarse

voice came about from within the darkness as if they were very surprised by this development.

Each baptism was presided over by some ancestors from the primal ground from the dark because they wanted to see how talented the disciples were, as well as what creations they would obtain. If the disciples were amazing, then the primal ground would hold them back for training.

Until now, only the Blood Race was able to exit the Sky Dome, so others could only dream about participating in a blood baptism. For the primal ground as well as the entire race, the baptism was too important so it should naturally only belong to their Blood disciples.

But now, a human came out of nowhere. How could the ancestors running the baptism not be taken aback?

“A human, is this possible?” Another old voice appeared. He was suspicious of this matter as well.

This was not to say that there were no humans in the primal ground or the other sects of the Blood Race. In fact, many sects, including even imperial lineages, had human disciples. Some human disciples held power as well.

But this was different when it came to the two ceremonies. This was an internal affair of the Blood Race. The appearance of a human was too sudden.

“He is the only survivor from the Sky Dome this time. He said he received the blessing from the progenitor.” The Summer Matron spoke.

“Words are not sufficient in this case.” An ancestor pondered in the darkness before speaking.

Li Qiye looked into the darkness and smiled: “It seems like this time is special, so many old geezers have come out from your primal ground.”

“Junior, do not be disrespectful.” A different voice emerged from the darkness.

Li Qiye laughed: “I am not being disrespectful. I am only curious as to what is different this time around. The four matrons themselves are taking the lead and so many geezers are overseeing the blood baptism. It seems that your pool has changed.” With that, he walked towards the blood pond.

The blood pond was located in the center of the palace. It was not large and resembled a typical looking pond. In this dark palace, it emitted waves of light.

There was liquid flowing inside. However, on a closer examination, it was not a liquid but more like moving flames that resembled blood.

It was spewing out something that had the features of both blood

and fire, giving off an indescribable sensation as if it was from the deepest parts of the earth. If the earth had blood, then the thing flowing from the pool would be the blood of this earth.

What was even more extraordinary was that this fiery blood was reversing space and time. In the middle of it all was something that resembled a mirror. To be more exact, it was a portal that led to a different world, or at least that was the illusion it gave.

“So this is the case. No wonder all of you are placing so much emphasis on the baptism this time.” Li Qiye looked at the pool of blood and murmured: “Fiery blood resembling a mirror... this is a special sign. According to the legends, this has only happened once before!”

The ancestors in the darkness were silent. This brat was too much to handle. Even the most incomparable geniuses and their ancestors would be extremely deferential in the presence of this blood pool. However, this brat didn't seem to care at all.

“Junior, don't say crazy things...” An ancestor raised his voice in the dark. This was a stern warning.

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve dismissively: “Okay, don't try to trick me, I am someone who has read a lot. Even the four matrons cannot fool me, let alone other people. I remember that this was written down in the ancient records, a scene of fiery blood forming a mirror in the blood pond!”

With that, his eyes shifted towards the four matrons as he slowly

spoke: “It went on to say that the changes in the blood pond that time had something to do with the legendary four matrons!”

“What else was recorded in your book?” The Winter Matron’s eyes were fierce at this moment. She stared at Li Qiye with animosity.

In fact, she wasn’t the only one. The other three matrons were also glaring at him. Without a doubt, the four matrons were very sensitive about what happened in the past.

“No, that’s all. It doesn’t mention what happened exactly. It seems like the wise sage who wrote the scroll didn’t know either.” Li Qiye shook his head.

The four matrons glared at him, aiming to find some clues from his demeanor. However, they couldn’t notice anything and could only scowl.

An ancestor in the darkness inquired with a serious tone: “Who is this kid?”

No one, not even the four matrons could answer this question because no one knew how Li Qiye got into the Sky Dome.

Li Qiye shook his head and said: “Who I am is not important, wouldn’t you say? The important part is my baptism right now.”

“Kid, you know this is the blood pond, but you are a human.” A

different ancestor reminded him.

The person was not malicious, he only wanted to remind Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smiled in response: “If I am not mistaken, there are no rules forbidding humans from participating in the blood pond in your primal ground!”

The ancestors in the darkness pondered for a bit. An ancestor eventually responded: “Although there are no rules about it, the baptism’s guidelines are up to our primal ground to decide!”

“I know.” Li Qiye added: “However, have you thought about this possibility? Why is it that after millions of years of baptisms, after millions of years of receiving blessings, your primal ground has yet to produce a Blood Forefather? How is it that your progenitor still hasn’t passed his lineage down to a Blood disciple? Or maybe this is the reason why your primal ground does not want to have other races involved.”

An ancestor thunderously shouted: “Preposterous!”

Li Qiye only smiled in response: “How could you know without trying at all? Only a baptism will show whether I am speaking the truth or not.”

“So, you think you can become the Blood Forefather?” Another ancestor coldly uttered.

A human coming out of nowhere completely disrupted the expectations of the ancestors. They thought that an extraordinary Blood disciple would come out of the Sky Dome and would receive the supreme blessing.

Chapter 927: Legends Of The Blood Forefather

However, the inexplicable appearance of a human boy that was so arrogant and lawless left the ancestors slack-jawed. A human receiving the blessing was completely outside of their expectations.

Li Qiye only smiled towards this ancestor: “If I become the Blood Forefather, are you all ready to have a human take this role?”

Such sharp words left the ancestors thinking. This was indeed a problem. They were not prepared for a human to become their Blood Forefather. How could they face the Blood Race after this? This issue left these experienced ancestors silent.

“That is impossible.” An ancestor stressed: “How could the bloodline of our progenitor be passed down to a human! This will never happen.”

Li Qiye smirked: “Is that so? Don’t you think you are a bit too certain? You’re all just a bunch of geezers that have lived for too long. Ask yourselves, where did the Blood Race come from?”

An ancestor immediately quipped: “What a load of rubbish. The world knows where we came from.”

“Okay, then we’ll talk about it a bit. According to you, your progenitor was originally a drop of immortal blood that eventually gave birth to the entire Blood Race. Here lies the issue, who

actually gave birth to all of you?”

“...” This question left the ancestors in the darkness dazed. Everyone had heard of this legend, but who actually gave birth to them? This question had never really been touched before.

Li Qiye smiled: “From the various versions of your origin mythos, it can be assumed that your progenitor was male, so there has to be a woman that gave birth to your Blood Race, right? Your progenitor couldn’t be the only one.”

In fact, whether if it was the nine worlds or those within their clan, there were no exact writings about this issue. No one really discussed this matter either.

Li Qiye went on: “If we take a step back and assume that your progenitor was a woman, then who would the father be?”

Not to mention the ancestors present, perhaps no one of the entire Blood Race could answer Li Qiye’s question.

He leisurely went on before the silent crowd: “No matter the sex, your progenitor needs the other half to give birth to your race, but your race has never thought about how half of your bloodline might be different than your progenitor’s!”

“You speak as if you know!” The Autumn Matron stared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smiled: “You are asking the right person. I have indeed read an ancient record with a particular tale. It says that your Blood Matriarch was a human. In other words, a human female gave birth to your race.”

“How absurd! How could a human exist within our race!” An ancestor shouted, immediately denying this theory.

Li Qiye disagreed: “After so much talking, your primal ground still doesn’t want to admit this truth! You all claim to have the purest bloodline from your progenitor but deny your matriarch’s bloodline. This is the most ridiculous and funny thing I have ever heard!”

“How can we believe a false claim?” An ancestor gently shook his head.

“It doesn’t matter. Ultimately, you all are still avoiding the issue and won’t recognize the truth that your bloodline is not pure.” Li Qiye dismissively said: “With regards to the three most widespread versions of your origin, you claim that your version is the most orthodox.”

“Then let us talk about the other two versions for a bit.” Li Qiye didn’t look at the ancestors in the darkness and instead turned his head towards the four matrons: “There is something similar about the other two versions — the other half of your progenitor, or your matriarch...”

“... One of them states that the king of your ancestors married a

woman and eventually replaced the original race. The other one says that your progenitor mated with a female corpse to give birth to your race! Only your version avoids talking about your matriarch, don't you think this is quite interesting?"

The Winter Matron coldly uttered: "So what?!"

Li Qiye smiled: "This makes me think that your older ancestors are privy to the origin of your matriarch, so they purposely avoided it. Although descendants like you might be unaware, your ancestors probably know this secret!"

"Despite the writings in the ancient record about the change in your blood pond back then, a human descendant like me has no way of knowing. However, one thing is certain, you all have found something that relates to the secret of your bloodline, or at least formulated some guesses. Otherwise, the four of you wouldn't have been able to break the chains of your bloodline!"

"With that, things get interesting. You all don't actually dare to deny the existence of the other half of your bloodline, a bloodline that may even be human. Because of this, the anomaly in the blood pond forced the four of you to come out and take control. And I, a human, fits your speculations perfectly, it is just that you don't want to admit it."

"Young man, you have quite a rich imagination." An ancestor interrupted him and coldly said: "This is only your one-sided speculation! You're merely indulging your rampant imagination!"

“Fine, we won’t talk about this anymore.” Li Qiye did not deny the accusation. “Then we’ll get to the point! Everyone is here right now, so is it time for my baptism to begin?!”

The ancestors once again turned quiet. Letting a human participate in the baptism was completely unprecedented. This was not in accordance with the rules of their primal ground and their race as a whole.

“I am a straightforward person, especially with threats. If you let me participate, then everyone will be happy. If not, however, then my apologies, I will do so anyway.” Li Qiye smiled and said: “Will all of you accept a human as your Blood Forefather? Of course, I am well prepared to break all formalities. I hope all of you are prepared to accept your new forefather as well!”

Li Qiye was not longer joking around this time. He carried an aggressive momentum that gave no room for negotiation!

“Such a big tone...” An ancestor’s eyes turned fierce like a lamp in the night.

“These are not empty words!” Li Qiye interrupted him and coldly uttered: “I am only stating facts to all of you so that you can mentally prepare yourselves. When I become the Blood Forefather, all of this would be deemed as a disrespect! To be frank, I do not need your primal ground, it is the other way around!”

His eyes swept through the rest of the ancestors in the darkness: “Without a Blood Forefather, do you think your primal ground is

worthy of its title? All I need to do is to run outside and I'm sure many lineages in the Blood Race would be willing to worship me as their forefather!"

"Once that happens, do you think your primal ground can maintain its untouchable position in the Blood Race?! If you want to command the Blood Race, you will definitely need me as your Blood Forefather!" Li Qiye appeared quite forceful at this time.

"You think you can become the Blood Forefather?" An ancestor stood up in the darkness. A terrifying aura engulfed the sky like the awakening of a God-Monarch.

"Is it time to play hard?" Li Qiye's eyes narrowed as he slowly spoke: "I don't care either way. Although I am weak, destroying all of you won't be hard as your forefather!"

"No." At this point, the Autumn Matron gently shook her head: "Ancestors, let him have his baptism!"

An ancestor asked: "Is that appropriate?" After all, a human undergoing the baptism was an unprecedented matter.

"Let him be!" Even the Winter Matron added with a serious tone: "He is not guaranteed to become the forefather! This is a type of fate since he has been blessed."

"I agree. We won't lose anything by letting him undergo the baptism." The Spring Matron nodded in agreement.

“A human blessed by the progenitor... let us see just what kind of blessing it is.” The Summer Matron stared at Li Qiye with curiosity in her pretty eyes.

The ancestors also privately exchanged their opinions. Eventually, an ancestor spoke: “Fine, Junior, you can be baptized. Since you are blessed, it is your own fortune. As for what that fortune is, that will depend on your own fate.” The four matrons had agreed, so the ancestors didn’t have a reason to oppose them. Moreover, they also wanted to see what kind of gift an outsider like Li Qiye would get.

At this point, the four matrons were staring intensely at Li Qiye because they knew more than the ancestors. It was just like he had said, they had a few speculations in their minds!

Chapter 928: Dao Sword

The Spring Matron eventually spoke: “Begin. If you can’t become the Blood Forefather, we’ll teach you a nice lesson!”

Prior to this, Li Qiye repeatedly teased the four of them and even tricked them. They had been wanting to teach him a lesson for a while now.

“Little girl, don’t worry, you guys won’t have the opportunity.” Li Qiye smiled: “Just be ready, I am a petty person. The four of you have offended me, so prepare to become my palanquin bearers!”

The four matrons were not happy with this response. However, they ultimately endured it and only scowled.

Li Qiye looked at the blood pond and smiled: “The dream of so many across millions of years! My turn.” With that, he stepped inside the pond.

“Boom!” Him entering the pool made the entire blood pond erupt like a volcano. A boundless amount of fiery blood rose and swallowed him whole!

“What’s going on?” Both the matrons and the ancestors in the darkness were shocked by this development.

“Open!” Li Qiye roared in response. He opened his mind and a universal law flew out. This was the law he obtained from the Sky

Dome. It split itself at an unbelievable speed. Different dao runes came out, thinner than strands of hair.

These silk-like dao runes quickly pierced all the fiery blood that erupted from the pond and integrated into it. If the rivulets of fiery blood were strings of yarn, then the dao runes were needles. The dao needles seemed to be under the control of a masterful pair of hands. They quickly came together to form a pattern. The entire process was too fast and ended in the blink of an eye.

“Buzz!” After the dao runes finished weaving the fiery blood together, they started to withdraw. Their withdrawal resulted in all of the blood forming a huge sequence of runes. This scene made it look like the dao runes were weaving a huge net that they then started to extract the fire from.

After doing so, the boundless blood fire frantically soared towards Li Qiye’s body as if it wanted to tear him apart.

“Absorb!” Li Qiye cried out and opened his fate palace; his cauldron of life jumped out. With a huge explosion, it swallowed the fiery blood. It seemed to be bottomless and aimed to devour the entire blood pond.

“How, how is this possible!” All the spectators gasped at this scene as they stared on in disbelief.

For tens of millions of years, many disciples had undergone the baptism process from one generation to the next. However, their baptisms all consisted of slowly refining the blood. It was a very

gentle process like a type of training.

An attempt as violent as Li Qiye's had never happened before. Moreover, they didn't know that a rune sequence like that was hidden in the blood.

“Rumble!” The pond and even the palace started to shake with Li Qiye's devouring.

It seemed that the sequence hidden in the fiery blood was gigantic like a net being thrown into a vast ocean. The dao runes crazily dragged out the sequences as if they would never give up until they got the very last one.

Meanwhile, his cauldron of life continued to absorb the fire. In just a short period of time, the pond was drained dry by Li Qiye!

However, it didn't end there because of the monumental size of the sequence. Li Qiye had pulled out a lot, but the other half of this sequence was still hidden within the blood pond.

At this time, despite the valiant efforts of the frenzied dao runes, they couldn't take out the other half.

Li Qiye shouted: “Open for me!” One palace soared up after another. With a series of explosions, all thirteen jumped out and lined up. At this time, everything became hazy. Li Qiye had disappeared along with the blood pond.

“What?! This is impossible!” All the ancestors were frightened. Even the matrons were aghast and took several thumping steps backward.

For the cultivators of this world, having twelve palaces was already virtually unique across the eons; thirteen palaces was simply unimaginable. However, this unimaginable sight was right before their very eyes, leaving them horrified.

A person eventually appeared from within the vast nothingness; it was Li Qiye! Strictly speaking, this was not his real body, it was the Nirvana Heavens. This figure was even more frightening and powerful than the current Li Qiye.

“Buzz!” His Nirvana Heavens attacked and sealed the world. All the ancestors and the matrons felt an urge to prostrate. Before the Nirvana Heavens, all beings would tremble in fear and reverence.

At this moment, Li Qiye was the high heavens, the ruler of all. He was the lone sovereign of the universe and myriad realms!

“Boom!” The Nirvana Heavens dragged out the remaining half of the sequence buried below the blood pond.

“Rumble!” After doing so, the entire pond exploded. The initially withered pond spewed out even more fiery blood. Without a doubt, there was even more blood hidden beneath the pond.

Li Qiye’s cauldron of life continued to devour the billowing

blood. Eventually, the blood was gradually depleted by his cauldron.

At the same time, the sequences had been completed. They became a complete heavenly chapter that was truly profound. No one could see through it, as if it was the origin of the myriad dao in this world!

“This is...?!” An ancestor stood out and exclaimed after seeing this complete chapter while all of his peers were shaken.

Eventually, this complete chapter buzzed and imprinted itself into Li Qiye’s cauldron of life. It was an eternal engraving, forever indelible.

“This is a great feeling.” Li Qiye emotionally said after devouring all of the fiery blood and engraving the chapter deep into his cauldron of life. This supreme and comfortable feeling made it seem like he was controlling the myriad dao!

“Zzz—” At this moment, thick universal laws came out from the bottom of the pond like serpents. Li Qiye reached out with his hand and the chapter that was imprinted on his cauldron lit up. These laws that resembled spirit serpents swam into his hands and slowly coiled together.

“Dum!” Finally, all the universal laws came together to form a sword. This sword exuded a glow as dark as ink. However, with a careful observation, one would see that it was made from an incredible amount of dao runes!

Li Qiye sighed with the sword in his hand. The myriad dao were in his tyrannical grasp!

Li Qiye pointed his sword at the sky and emotionally muttered: “Dao Sword, just like the legends say.” With this sword in his hand, he became invincible across the eons!

“What...” An ancestor lost his mind and couldn’t speak for a moment. Eventually, he managed to blurt out: “The legend, the legend is real!”

Everyone was astonished at this moment since Li Qiye had drained the pond dry. From now on, the pond would only be a dry pit!

He didn’t only obtain the entire blood pond but also the legendary treasure!

There was a secret within the primal ground; inside the blood pond rested the most profound and ultimate chapter of their origin! All the ancestors knew that those that could obtain the chapter would be recognized by their progenitor and obtain the real legacy to succeed the Blood Forefather.

Today, Li Qiye didn’t only obtain this chapter, he also obtained the legendary item! Their primal ground had always coveted this sword, but they had never been successful!

“Clank!” The Dao Sword turned back into universal laws and disappeared into Li Qiye’s body!

Li Qiye slowly set his gaze upon the four matrons and then the darkness. He leisurely asked: “Now, do you think I am qualified to be your Blood Forefather?”

Suddenly, the entire palace went quiet. Even the four matrons had nothing to say. If, say, Li Qiye wasn’t qualified, then no one else in this world would be. He had obtained everything from the Blood Race, including its origin chapter and legendary treasure!

“But, but you are human!” After a long silence, an ancestor finally spoke.

The primal ground was caught in a dilemma. Letting a human become their Blood Forefather was unsuitable no matter how they looked at it.

Chapter 929: Void Trap Desert

Li Qiye smiled in response to the hidden ancestor: “Yes, I am a human — nothing can change this fact, and there is no need to change it. Right now, you will either worship me as your Blood Forefather or get out of my way and we won’t owe each other anything. Don’t think I don’t know just because all of you are lurking in the shadows!”

“Please be more courteous with your words.” An ancestor unhappily replied.

“Courteous?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile: “It should be all of you acting courteously towards me. If I’m in a good mood, then I’ll think about being your Blood Forefather. If not, then I’ll decapitate all of you like chopping watermelons! Even if I’m weak right now, I can still cut down all of you with the Dao Sword in my hand! Want to try me?!”

The ancestors looked at each other to plan their next step since Li Qiye was so overbearing.

The four matrons, at this time, had reached an agreement. The Autumn Matron revealed their decision: “Let him go.”

An ancestor eventually responded from the darkness: “If Sir is willing to stay behind, then our primal ground welcomes you. Sir can stay as long as you wish, but as for the matters of the Blood Forefather’s role, we must discuss it. We hope for a perfect solution.”

At this moment, the ancestors were very cordial towards Li Qiye and didn't dare to slight him.

“Very well, all of you and that geezer Bloodbull Godfiend can talk it over. It seems like your group of old men can't make a decision right now anyway.” Li Qiye chuckled.

“Sir...” The ancestors were shocked to hear this because an existence like the Bloodbull Godfiend was only known to the ancestors. Even the disciples of the primal ground didn't know him.

“There aren't that many secrets in this world for me.” Li Qiye interrupted the ancestor: “As for staying around, there's no need. My time is precious, it can't be wasted on talking with you guys. Once you've made a decision, come and find me.”

“If Sir is willing, we can order experts to escort you to any place you wish.” An ancestor finally said after another quick deliberation in secrecy.

For their primal ground, Li Qiye was a very precious commodity. They didn't want anything to happen to him.

“No need, you will be hard-pressed to find someone who can kill me without my permission.” Li Qiye denied the offer: “Come and find me when a decision is made; otherwise, don't bother me. I only have one condition to be your Blood Forefather, and that is absolute loyalty from your primal ground. As for my part, I can

lead you on a path of glory, allowing your primal ground to rule the Blood Race. What I can give you will forever be beyond your imagination!”

This bold rhetoric left the ancestors speechless. Those who didn’t know the full story would think that Li Qiye was spouting nonsense. However, the ancestors knew very well that Li Qiye was completely qualified to make such claims. Thirteen palaces — this was enough to represent it all. Moreover, he obtained their most primal chapter, and the extremely terrifying Dao Sword was in his hands as well.

“Then, Sir, have a safe journey.” In the end, the ancestors could only say these words. Even if they wanted to make him stay, they didn’t have the courage. It was just like he had said earlier, he could chop off their heads like chopping watermelons!

“Very well, I will wait for your good news. I hope that you will make a sensible choice.” Li Qiye smiled then left the blood pond, making his way outside.

At this time, the pond was completely dried and had lost its value.

“Oh right, four little girls, if I become your forefather, don’t forget that you all will have to become my palanquin bearers.” Li Qiye paused at the door and turned around to smile at the four matrons.

The four matrons were naturally angry, but they showed no sign

of their temper and chose to remain silent.

Li Qiye left the primal ground while it chose not to do anything. No one sent him off either. The primal ground acted inconspicuously when Li Qiye left because they didn't want the news of Li Qiye obtaining the primal chapter and Dao Sword to spread outside.

After leaving the primal ground, he took a deep breath while staring at the distant horizon and murmured: "Southern Barren Earth, I'm finally here again!"

With a touch of melancholy, he recalled the things that had happened here across the long years. There was one particular event that the future generations referred to as the Battle of the Gods. It remained a fascinating topic from one era to the next.

In the eyes of the historians, this war was glorious. However, it was a cruel war for Li Qiye!

His generals fell one after another. The Godkings that had pledged their loyalty to him died in battle. Without their blood, there would not be the nine worlds of today!

"Battle of the Gods... too cruel!" Li Qiye eventually sighed.

He moved on without hesitation. He had grown used to the pain and become numb to the suffering. No matter what the future had in store, he would still face it with a proud smile on his face!

The Blood Primal Ground was located in the most southern region of the Barren Earth. Moreover, it was separated by a huge desert named the Void Trap. One must cross this vast and dry desert before leaving the primal ground completely.

The Void Trap Desert was a very dangerous area. There were spatial traps everywhere. Even cultivators wouldn't want to travel in this place. Of course, it was not hard for the real masters, they just needed to fly straight through it.

However, Li Qiye didn't take the path of the sky. It was too easy for him to cross it, so he chose to walk instead.

The first step was met with a gust of hot air rushing into his face. The scorching sand beneath his feet was a great source of annoyance.

Li Qiye not only walked, he even withdrew all of his blood energy and aura. He wanted to walk through this desert just like a mortal!

This was not a decision made from having too much spare time. He wanted to use this time for training because Zhan Xian had sealed his dao foundation. Thus, he must unlock it!

He knew many methods to reach this goal. However, the best one was by training, to let the flesh and dao foundation be polished time and again through suffering. Then, by breaking through his limits he would be able to unlock this seal.

Li Qiye knew that Zhan Xian did this on purpose so that he would suffer. Of course, he didn't really mind it. This type of physical torture was not worth mentioning in his eyes. He had tasted much worse before. As for the agony of the dao heart, it was even more meaningless. This level of torment was only a meal to him.

Not to mention all the other dangers entailed in walking through this desert, just the blazing sun and hot sand alone were insufferable. This was exacerbated even more by the intolerable thirst that drove people insane.

A cultivator wouldn't have a hard time traveling through this desert, but Li Qiye had let go of his advantages and chose to walk on the path of a mortal through this vast desert. This carried an inconceivable level of difficulty.

One day passed after another. The sweltering heat burnt him black. He was now extremely dehydrated, causing his lips to crack. He was walking barefoot, thus his soles were full of blisters...

Bearing such a long ordeal would force cultivators to give up and start to fly out early. However, Li Qiye walked undaunted. He walked through the desert as if he was taking a stroll. It had no effect on him or his dao heart.

Although his current appearance was quite disconcerting and made him resemble a beggar, his demeanor was still relaxed. He could manage a smile despite his cracked lips as he trod through this place that, in his mind, was the same as a garden.

This method was very effective. As he continued to train and suffer, the seal on his dao foundation showed signs of weakening.

Of course, it would require a relatively long period of suffering before he could break it completely. This was Zhan Xian's goal after all, to see Li Qiye in pain after his revival. It was Li Qiye's own fault for tricking it!

The night in the desert was especially bright. There were stars everywhere in this vast and tranquil desert. This scene was of a moment of serenity.

Li Qiye was hiding in a sand pit. His body was emitting one bright corona after another. As they changed, an absolute domain was formed. No one would understand this strange phenomenon unraveling. This was an earth-shattering secret! Very few would understand the existence of the domains from the Immortal Physiques! One could easily count the past users of this technique with their fingers.

Immortal Physique's domain — another secret from the Physique Scripture! Once two Immortal Physiques reached half completion, their domains would appear.

Of course, there was no such thing as half completion for Li Qiye because he cultivated the most perfect physique laws in this world, allowing him to always exert their greatest potential even before reaching this colloquial step. In other words, for those who cultivated the physique laws from the heavenly scripture, the

limitation of reaching half completion was null.

Chapter 930: Heavenly Dao's Beginning

After cultivating two Immortal Physiques and surpassing the Life Reduction, one would be able to cultivate these domains! This was due to having the sufficient blood energy required to support these domains.

The world had always thought that cultivating multiple Immortal Physiques was impossible, but this was far from the truth! Of course, only existences like Li Qiye were able to spend enough time and effort to create a heaven-defying merit law like the One Thought, Myriad Physiques.

At this time, there was a bright radiance in front of his chest. All four Inner Physiques appeared in two pairs.

When these pairs were made, they would give birth to the absolute domains!

Li Qiye let the Hell Suppressing and Soaring physiques go together. This created the Stagnation Domain while the Void Imperfection and Sky Destroyer Physiques combined to form the Demise Domain!

Since the start of time, perhaps no more than three people had been able to cultivate these domains. One of them was the Black Dragon King. Of course, in the end, only the king was able to reach grand completion with two Immortal Physiques.

The Stagnation and Demise Domains kept on rotating until Li

Qiye could use them at his whim. He withdrew his Inner Physiques and the domains disappeared as well.

Next, he opened his fate palaces and the pillar of life and cauldron of life emerged. Li Qiye then began a process that caused a rune to appear on the pillar of life that was crackling with lightning. The rune changed once more to reach an unfathomable level. There seemed to be an endless ocean of lightning inside this rune.

At the same time, the chapter imprinted on the cauldron of life was also laid out. The universal laws inside the chapter changed again and again. Eventually, a full system came into being. There seemed to be myriad dao inside. No geniuses would be able to understand their profundities.

After both sides finished transforming, the rune and chapter finally resonated. Both of them erupted as if they were being led by an unknown power. However, there was something missing and a true form couldn't emerge.

After seeing this complete evolution with reactions from both sides, Li Qiye finally sighed and murmured: "Yes, just like the legends!"

The rune was taken from the Void Gate and hidden in the pillar of life. The chapter was taken from the blood pond and was imprinted on the cauldron of life.

Before obtaining the chapter, Li Qiye had always thought about

how to use it together with the rune. However, he lacked past references despite knowing an ancient legend regarding the myriad dao in this world.

Despite his calculations, he couldn't perfect this rune due to a lack of information. However, with the chapter, he was able to see the real mysteries inside, allowing him to complete the evolution.

“Ancient Void Rune and Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter.” Li Qiye murmured: “I am still missing something, I have to find the missing parts somehow to complete it.”

The Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter left behind by the Blood Progenitor was not about the origin of the blood race at all. It had nothing to do with the race, it was just that the progenitor managed to obtain it later on.

However, his descendants didn't know this and assumed that it was their origin chapter, the focus of all of their cultivation; they were completely unaware of the truth.

According to the geographical divide, the Void Trap Desert should belong to the Blood Primal Ground. However, the primal ground was special and ignored the events of the world. They focused on passing down their legacy instead of competing with the world.

Because of this, it simply didn't consider the desert to be part of its territory despite the abundance of minerals and ores below.

Thus, many cultivators came to the desert and established mining camps. Although there were many sects here vying for these resources, conflicts were rare. The reason was very simple; everyone was here to invest in profits, so no one wanted to attract the primal ground's attention.

Li Qiye continued his long trek. The sand below and sun above made sure that the trip didn't lack heat or dehydration, allowing him to train himself further and loosen the seal on his dao foundation.

He was challenging and refining his own body as a mortal. The desert's harsh environment was definitely a great place to break through one's limits. Along the way, he met many cultivators. Some flew while others darted forth with haste. There were sightings of flying treasures as well...

Some came alone while others came with their sects. No matter their strength, they came and left without caring for Li Qiye.

At this time, he looked like a commoner walking barefoot, completely battered by the desert. What stood out was his lack of blood energy and aura. It made others think that he was only a mortal.

A mortal was no different from an insect in the eyes of cultivators, so no one wanted to give him another glance, let alone

waste time on him. However, there were always good people even among cultivators.

On one day, Li Qiye continued to move forward under the blazing sun. A magic carpet flew over his head. It was very large with around a dozen cultivators sitting on it. Their leader was an old man with an aura of water. He had a friendly appearance and a pair of bright eyes. Although he was old, his blood energy was still rich; it was easy to tell that he was an expert.

“Young man, are you lost?” The old man asked Li Qiye while riding his carpet.

Li Qiye stopped and looked at the people on the carpet. Outside of the old man, there were more than ten young men and women behind him. There was one particular girl that stood out. She had an elegant aura and occasionally smiled.

He then looked at the old man and gently shook his head with a smile: “[Grandpa](#), you got it wrong. I am only walking through this desert, I know the way.”

“Grandpa” here is respectful.

“What is there to look at in this desert? It isn’t a scenic place at all.” The elegant girl chuckled.

Li Qiye glanced over at her in response: “Little girl, you don’t understand. Sceneries aren’t to be enjoyed with just one’s eyes. You have to use your heart to truly enjoy their beauty.”

“Such a big tone, not knowing the immensity of the heaven and earth!” A handsome boy next to the girl scowled and coldly glared at Li Qiye.

In his eyes, Li Qiye was only a mortal. How could this mortal call his junior sister a little girl without invoking his rage?

“[A’ Bao...](#)” The old man gently waved his sleeve and stopped the young man. He shook his head to say: “The boy’s words are not without reason. There are many things that require the mind to feel.”

The “A” in A’ Bao here is a familiar prefix; like ‘er.

Li Qiye smiled. He was pleased with the old man’s attitude: “Are you all here to dig?”

“Sort of.” The approachable old man replied: “Our [Suhang](#) Country has a mine here in this desert. This old man is taking these young ones out to broaden their horizons.”

I actually don’t know how to translate the name of this country. It looks to be the names of two provinces as part of this particular idiom: “the beauty and affluence of Suzhou and Hangzhou is comparable with heaven.” I’m just going to leave it as Suhang. Paradise Country was another option, but it seems too much.

“Mmm, this is a good thing. Although the Void Trap Desert can be dangerous, it is not too life-threatening. It is a good place to train.” Li Qiye nodded.

The old man was the royal lord of Suhang; his name was Yi Chuan. After hearing this, Yi Chuan had to take another look at Li Qiye. Although the fella's appearance was ragged and reminiscent of a beggar, his demeanor was relaxed and carefree. His dirty state didn't seem to bug him at all.

Yi Chuan had the feeling that this young man was not walking on a desert but rather his own garden.

“You're just a mortal, what do you know about training?!” The young man named A'Bao coldly snorted. Li Qiye's answer annoyed him since he felt that it was not the place of a mortal to make such a comment.

A'Bao's attitude was not too strange. It was already pretty good that he wasn't treating Li Qiye, a mortal, like an insect!

Li Qiye didn't mind the young man's words and only chuckled. Yi Chuan was still curious and asked: “Oh? So you are also a cultivator? What sect are you from?”

Li Qiye smiled: “You guessed wrong, I'm not a cultivator. I simply picked up a few random merit laws and trained them casually.”

“You stated some clear logic so I thought you had a good teacher. So it was all talk and nothing more.” A'Bao snorted. He was not hostile towards Li Qiye, but he couldn't stand Li Qiye's bragging style.

“A’ Bao, don’t be rude.” Yi Chuan stopped the young man and shook his head again. He glanced over at Li Qiye to say: “So, you came to this desert to train.”

Chapter 931: The Secret Within The Secrets

Li Qiye nodded in response: “Yes, I happened to be passing by this desert and found that it was very suitable to train the body, so I chose to do so.”

“Cultivation is about refining the dao foundation, what’s the point of training the flesh? Even if your body can become stronger, is it going to be as strong as a weapon?” A’ Bao wanted to go against Li Qiye.

Li Qiye looked at A’ Bao and smiled: “The pain of the flesh is the most direct type of pain. Only when one can withstand the pain of the flesh would they be able to bear the pain of the mind. If one can’t even withstand pain, then there is no need to talk about the dao heart. The dao heart is the true foundation of cultivation.”

Yi Chuan couldn’t help but praise after hearing this: “Little friend is still young and not from a famed sect, yet you have such wisdom, truly extraordinary! The phrase ‘dao heart is the true foundation of cultivation’ is quite enlightening, just like the morning bell.”

With that, he told the disciples behind him: “You all need to learn from this little friend. There are many types of training, enduring suffering is one of them as well.”

Many disciples looked down on Li Qiye’s training. However, they didn’t dare to comment in front of their senior. In their eyes, a mortal walking through a desert was not training at all, it was only

the suffering entailed in a mortal's life!

“So you are refining your dao heart.” The girl whose name was A’Li curiously stared at Li Qiye and thought that he was quite a strange guy.

“No.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I am only taking a walk. There is no need to hone my dao heart. It is as firm as a rock — completely unshakable.”

“Such arrogance! Even a Virtuous Paragon wouldn’t dare to claim that their dao heart is unshakable. At least make your bragging more believable.” A’ Bao scowled and thought that Li Qiye was completely blustering.

Li Qiye only smiled. He was too lazy to reprimand a young man like A’ Bao.

“Little friend, goodbye for now, I still want to take them training.” Yi Chuan laughed and bid farewell to Li Qiye before flying away on his carpet.

Li Qiye continued forward through the desert, braving the hot sun in the day while researching countless mysteries at night.

He had to ponder too many things, especially the vessel of athanasia. It had many details that required his effort. At the same time, he had a lot to learn about the Ancient Void Rune and the Heavenly Dao Primal Chapter.

The ancestors of the primal ground believed that they could find a heaven-shattering merit law by researching the chapter. However, Li Qiye's focus was not in this regard. His aim was not merit laws since he had many powerful ones already.

He wanted to make them even more perfect, but even after many derivations and calculations, he didn't gain any ground.

This was because he was lacking another piece of the puzzle. From a merit law or cultivation perspective, both the rune and the chapter were complete as far as training manuals went.

However, Li Qiye didn't want such a thing. He wanted to reform the two to create a complete system! Nevertheless, this was not an easy matter. He only had two parts of the system, and he couldn't figure out the remaining parts with just these two.

In fact, Li Qiye wasn't the only one who couldn't do so. No one could, not even Immortal Emperors.

The rune and chapter were involved in great secrets. Across the eons, no one had been able to gather the complete version! It could even be said that very few people truly knew about the existence of these two; not even emperors knew about their legends!

Eventually, Li Qiye put the two away and sighed. Just as the legend stated, creating a complete system was countless times harder than reaching the heavens.

“Dum—” Laws intertwined and the Dao Sword appeared in Li Qiye’s hand. Li Qiye immediately had an extraordinary feeling with it in his grasp.

This pitch-black sword lacked the sharpness and frightening edge of a sword. If it was thrown onto the ground, perhaps no cultivators would even want to pick it up.

Li Qiye gently stroked the blunt and harmless blade edges. Of course, he was not trying to feel the sharpness of the sword but rather the power of the laws and the nature embedded within. Controlling this sword was the same as controlling the supreme myriad laws, allowing one to become the ruler of all!

“Dao Sword, this is something that would make others salivate with greed.” Li Qiye gently stroked the sword and murmured: “Unfortunately, the Blood Progenitor back then never managed to utilize its real effects!”

“Dum—” Li Qiye put the sword away. His mind opened and two different rays of lights intertwined. One was a shimmering silver while the other was gold!

They coiled together like two little flood dragons and formed a perpetually revolving spiral!

The silver light was something he obtained from the silver maelstrom after destroying the Ancestral Realm while the golden light was from the golden maelstrom in the pond of Provenance’s

Splendor.

In the past, Li Qiye understood their mysteries as well as the secret of the silver maelstrom in the Ancestral Realm after a lot of research. Now, he was looking at the golden version. He knew a bit about it beforehand as well, but he wanted to completely unravel its mysteries.

Eventually, Li Qiye closed his mind and the two rays disappeared. He opened his eyes and smiled: “The secrets are all in my hands! Immortal Demon geezer, you only know one part of the puzzle! The real secret is still in my hands!”

With that, Li Qiye stared at the far horizon and murmured with a serious glare: “I’ll come back one day! Emperors, gods, even the high heavens, I’ll slay everything in my path!” He was very much looking forward to that day.

Next, he started to meditate inside his sea of memories. He carefully searched inside, not daring to miss the tiniest of details!

There were many secrets stored inside his mind. A few of them came from the old man at the base of the precipice in the Drystone Courtyard. Moreover, his secrets were very scary, so scary that they could frighten even Immortal Emperors!

In a distant past when the Dark Crow was still inexperienced, before the days where he could do as he pleased, he was tricked by the old man when he arrived at the Drystone Courtyard.

The old man wanted the secrets in his memories, but he couldn't grab them due to the seal within. At that time, the old man came up with a strange method. He directly connected his memories to Li Qiye's. From then on, the two's memories were linked.

The old man found out some information about the Immortal Demon Grotto and a few secrets from Li Qiye while Li Qiye also found out the old man's secrets.

Back then, the old man was a very heaven-defying existence with extreme confidence. He believed that Li Qiye would never be able to escape his grasp. He didn't expect for Li Qiye to endure for such a long period of time, so long that Li Qiye eventually fooled him completely and stole all of the secrets in his mind!

Li Qiye paid a huge price at that time, but he was rewarded with many great secrets. He even wanted the ultimate secret from the old geezer! Back then, he thought that this secret was hidden in the old man's memories, but he couldn't force it out. After this trip, the old man revealed that he had already obtained it. Alas, he still didn't know where this ultimate secret was hiding right now.

Because of this, Li Qiye was going through all the secrets he squeezed out from the old man to figure out that ultimate secret.

"Old man, you're really something special. I didn't notice it at all." Li Qiye flipped through the dust-laden memories and murmured: "Although you destroyed my body back then, you allowed me to massacre that place because of your secrets and preparations! When I'm fully ready again, even without your ultimate secret, I would still be able to make rivers of blood run

across that land again!”

No matter how much he tried, he couldn't find the ultimate secret. However, he was sure that the old man was not lying to him. The issue was that he was overlooking something. Nevertheless, he was not in a rush. He gazed at the sky and told himself: “Maybe the real trick to unlocking this secret requires me to make my way back there! I'll definitely do so this generation no matter what! Just wait, those false gods will tremble beneath my feet!”

On the next day, Li Qiye continued on barefoot with the sun's rays scorching him from above!

Chapter 932: Suhang Country's Yi Chuan

This was a long journey since Li Qiye took his time. This barefoot walk might be a type of torture to others, but Li Qiye was enjoying it. He was able to let go of everything in this desert.

His goal, at the moment, was to leave the desert. All else was left behind.

“Little friend, we meet again.” A carpet appeared above Li Qiye again. It was Yi Chuan's group.

Li Qiye looked at them and smiled: “It seems like all of you had a fruitful trip.”

Without a doubt, the juniors behind Yi Chuan were a lot more lively than last time. They must have had a good training session.

The excited A'Li smiled and blurted out: “We obtained a lot of ores.”

“A'Li, you can't just expose having treasures to others or they'll be tempted.” A'Bao, as the senior brother, quickly reminded his junior sister.

In his eyes, Li Qiye was only an outsider. Such information naturally couldn't be revealed to an outsider since it might bring about unnecessary problems.

Li Qiye smiled and told A’Li while ignoring A’ Bao: “I was talking about your dao heart and spirit. Compared to these benefits, the ores are just external materials. There will be many chances for treasures later on, but dao heart training is not only a process, it is a type of fate. Such gains cannot be found all the time.”

“Little friend, that is quite profound.” Yi Chuan couldn’t help but praise. He looked at Li Qiye with growing skepticism. These weren’t words that should come from a young man. It sounded like something a weather-beaten and experienced man should say.

“Just a casual remark.” Li Qiye smiled without complacency. Such phrases truly were casual remarks to him.

“That’s all theoretical.” A’ Bao snorted. He was dissatisfied with Li Qiye regardless of what he said due to having some prejudice against him.

Yi Chuan smiled and asked Li Qiye: “Are you still training? Do you want me to bring you the rest of the way?”

Li Qiye looked ahead and shook his head: “No need, it doesn’t look like it’ll be long until I’m able to leave this desert. I’ll just go by myself.”

“Not bad.” Yi Chuan gave him a thumbs-up and said: “Walking barefoot through the Void Trap Desert is not a difficult task for cultivators. The hardship lies in the trouble; how many cultivators would be willing to bear this burden as a mortal? It requires great perseverance, it’s definitely not easy.”

Cultivators were able to do many things. However, they would usually grow used to being high above others. Many of them would not be willing to act as a mortal again.

“All of you should be learning from this dao brother. Cultivation is not just about honing your merit laws, it is also about training your willpower and determination to sharpen your mind.” Yi Chuan turned around and told his disciples. He wanted to use Li Qiye as a role model.

The disciples were quiet. They could only listen to their senior. Of course, they didn't pay Li Qiye's words any mind. In their eyes, Li Qiye was only a nobody, someone not much better than a mortal. There was nothing worth learning from him. The majority of them considered themselves to be much better than him. They came from a great sect and had trained in powerful merit laws from a young age and took in wondrous medicines. In their eyes, learning from Li Qiye, who was basically a mortal, was a shameful matter.

“Little friend, I won't bother you any longer. May we meet again in the future.” Yi Chuan bid his farewell in a very polite manner.

He had a noble status as the ruler of a country. However, he was exceptional in one regard — his vision was not something the disciples behind him could compare to. In his eyes, although Li Qiye was a vagrant cultivator, he would have a colorful future due to his dao heart and determination.

He really liked young people with great perseverance like Li Qiye. These were the ones who were most likely to have big success.

Li Qiye smiled and also bid farewell to Yi Chuan before continuing on his way.

After walking for another long period of time, he finally made it out of the desert and was met by a wave of humidity.

Right outside the desert was a land full of water. There were rolling green hills and rivers all around. One could see boats setting sail and rowing on the currents. Under the sparkling waves, the fat fishes jumped out of the water while heron swept by across the surface. On both sides of the river were green puffs of smoke as if this was a paradise.

The contrast between a desert and a land with a great river made it seem like two different worlds meeting here. It gave the sensation of stepping from an arid land to a prosperous location that could only exist in a painting!

Anyone would become relaxed while walking in this land of paradise.

Li Qiye emotionally commented: “Jiangnan River, Southern Border.” This was indeed a nice and refreshing location. Each time he came by here, he would stay for some time due to his adoration of the place.

The desert was next to the primal ground while the Southern Border was next to the desert, a rich land full of water. Anyone would feel that creation was such a magical thing. A land with a mighty river and a desert separated by only one path — this was quite difficult to believe.

The Southern Barren Earth was huge and contained many things. The entire place was quite fertile, especially the most southern region. This southern region was called the Southern Border or Land of the [Southern Tang](#).

Southern Tang was also known as Jiangnan, the river listed above. The author is using real locations for names right now, so I'm keeping the pinyin.

The reason why it had this name was that it was under the jurisdiction of a nation named Southern Tang. The Southern Border didn't only consist of the Southern Tang. In fact, there were more than ten different nations here along with countless other small sects.

However, all of these nations were tributaries of Southern Tang, the biggest lineage in the Southern Border.

The weak being subservient to the strong, smaller sects being under great sects — such things were too common in the world of cultivation. However, it was different in this region. Southern Tang did not bother with managing their tributary states or interfering with their affairs.

To a large extent, the status of tributary was only in name. The

smaller nations didn't need to pay tributes or act as vassals. At the same time, they were very supportive of Southern Tang as well. There were very few disputes, so the citizens in this region were able to lead peaceful lives, just like living in a paradise.

Li Qiye made it to an ancient city after a little walking. This particular city was different compared to the others in this region. There were no high walls or huge pathways, just a clear lack of magnificent architecture. Surrounding this city was a river that branched to each corner of the premises.

As long as one had a boat, they would be able to go anywhere in this city. There were many huge trees here offering their shade. Flowing water was everywhere and gave a pleasant yet all-encompassing feeling.

Li Qiye was quite tattered at this moment with dirt all over his face. He looked like a mortal in the city. At best, people would only consider him to be a beggar.

Cultivators wouldn't give him a second glance, only mortals would throw him a few coins at times.

Li Qiye didn't have to go too far before receiving a lot of coins. The reason was quite simple, this was a land of plenty. People had homes and jobs so the mortals here were quite well off. They were willing to give to a beggar like Li Qiye.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile while looking at the coins in his hand. He put them away anyway.

As he walked by a huge tree that blotted out the sky, a familiar voice rang out: “Little friend, care to come for a drink?”

This towering tree grew near the river. There was a finely-crafted winehouse in its shade. It was clear that not just anyone could come here to drink.

There were more than ten cultivators next to the street of the restaurants. They could be considered Li Qiye’s acquaintances since they were all part of Yi Chuan’s group.

Yi Chuan held a wine cup and greeted Li Qiye in a polite manner.

Li Qiye smiled back and strode inside before sitting down confidently before Yi Chuan. This forced the disciples sitting next to Yi Chuan to make some room.

A few disciples were very unhappy to see Li Qiye acting so disrespectfully before their royal lord. However, Yi Chuan didn’t mind at all. He had taken quite a liking to this young man ahead of him.

“[Deference is no substitute for obedience](#).” Li Qiye sat down and said with a smile.

This phrase means that it is better to say yes than to say no in a respectful manner. It’s more of a polite, conversational tool.

Li Qiye’s downtrodden look and his confident attitude conflicted

with each other. However, it seemed so natural when it was Li Qiye doing it.

Chapter 933: An Old Acquaintance Is Coming?

Yi Chuan called someone to fill Li Qiye's cup. Li Qiye drank it down in one gulp and sighed with emotion: "This is the taste. Great wine with great waterside sceneries, this is definitely different from other places. I always want to drink whenever I come by here."

Yi Chuan smiled and asked: "So little friend must not be from Southern Tang?"

"The four oceans are my home." Li Qiye leisurely answered: "However, Southern Tang is indeed a place worth remembering. It gives a very relaxed feeling and soothes the soul."

Yi Chuan continued: "You haven't had thoughts about staying here? To find a sect and embark on the path all the way to the door of the grand dao?"

"Are you saying you want to take me in as a disciple?" Li Qiye set his cup down and smiled while staring at Yi Chuan.

"Hmph, don't act so impudently in front of His Majesty!" A'Bao couldn't help but scowl after seeing Li Qiye acting so condescendingly.

Yi Chuan gently waved his hand to stop A'Bao. He smiled and said: "To tell the truth, [I do have such a notion](#). If little friend is

willing to join my sect... I won't dare to say that I can help you reach the top of this world, but I can definitely give you a stage to display your abilities.”

Yi Chuan did like Li Qiye, so he wanted to take him in as a disciple. He thought that it was actually easier to find a talented disciple than one with great determination and perseverance.

“I appreciate your goodwill.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “But I like traveling. The entire world is my home, so settling down with new responsibilities would make me feel uncomfortable.”

Li Qiye's answer was only a half-truth. The first half was made up while the latter was his real thoughts on the matter.

“Little friend thinks my sect is too small?” Yi Chuan smiled in response: “If that's the case, I don't really mind.”

Yi Chuan was not a big shot in the Barren Earth, but he was still a relatively influential character. Despite not having supreme talents, he was a broad-minded person who was easy to get along with.

“Hmm! Our Suhang is a big country even in the Southern Border! His Majesty is a Heavenly King; it is your honor that he wants you to be his disciple!” A'Bao expressed his dissatisfaction after hearing Li Qiye's refusal.

In fact, the juniors behind Yi Chuan were unhappy as well; some were even glaring at Li Qiye. In their eyes, it was a great honor for a mortal like him to become His Majesty's disciple. So now, they felt aggrieved by this refusal.

“Don't make such comments.” Yi Chuan gently shook his head and told the group of A'Bao: “People have different aspirations. This is nothing strange.”

He was a royal lord, but he didn't have the arrogance that would normally accompany the role.

Li Qiye drank another cup and leisurely smiled: “You really are a good person. Today I drank your wine so I owe you one. In the future, you can come find me, Li Qiye, if you are ever in need of assistance.”

When Yi Chuan heard the name “Li Qiye”, he felt that it was a bit familiar, as if he had heard it before. However, he couldn't put his finger on it, causing him to sink deeper into thought.

A'Li playfully blinked and asked: “We can come to you about anything?”

Li Qiye looked at the little lady and nodded his head: “Yes, anything. However, you may only come to find me once.”

“Really?” A'Li chuckled and said: “This sounds a bit boastful. You are only a mortal, when would our master ask you for help?”

Li Qiye looked at her and blinked back. He smiled and said: “Well, you will find out later. Remember this, my favor is worth a lot of money.”

The group, especially the male disciples, were very discontent. In their minds, Li Qiye was just teasing their junior sister!

“Hmph, such blustering. Our Majesty will never need the help of a mortal.” A’ Bao snorted.

Li Qiye only smiled, ignoring A’ Bao while taking another sip of the wine. This infuriated A’ Bao even more, but he couldn’t do anything about it.

Li Qiye looked at the contemplating Yi Chuan and said: “You couldn’t have been waiting here for me. If I recall correctly, Suhang is very far from here.”

Yi Chuan returned from his thoughts and smiled: “It is a type of fate to meet little friend once more. We came to the Void Trap Desert for their training and were on our way back. However, it turns out that Her Majesty is on a patrol around here, so we came in order to grace the juniors with her presence.”

“Her Majesty?” Li Qiye was a bit surprised to hear this. Yi Chuan was already the royal lord of Suhang, so not many people would refer to as Her Majesty by him.

Yi Chuan quickly replied: “Her Majesty Chuyun, the great lord of Southern Tang. Everyone refers to her by her imperial title. She is also our pride.”

Li Qiye finally remembered someone and asked for confirmation: “Ye Chuyun, right? [The inheritor of the Pure Lotus School](#).”

“The great lord succeeded the Pure Lotus School and has presided over Southern Tang for many years immediately after becoming a Virtuous Paragon.” Yi Chuan elaborated.

Li Qiye finally remembered the person — Ye Chuyun! Back at the Heavenly Dao Academy, she was still just a little girl. She came with Bing Yuxia, and he even brought her to the World Tree!

Many years passed in the blink of an eye. She was already the lord of the Pure Lotus School, the royal lord of Southern Tang! Under her control was her sect as well as the entire lands.

The Pure Lotus School could be considered an imperial lineage. Their progenitor had a deep relationship with Immortal Emperor Yan Wu. Moreover, their school had received part of the emperor’s legacy.

It even built Southern Tang and governed the vast Southern Border. The school itself was affected by Immortal Emperor [Yan](#) Wu, lacking interest in interfering in worldly affairs. This was the reason why Southern Tang was formed, to take their place in governing the world.

The disciples behind Yi Chuan were full of admiration when it came to Ye Chuyun. In their opinion, it was a great honor to be able to meet the lord of their region.

Li Qiye casually asked: “Miss Chuyun is coming here?” If Ye Chuyun was here, he must go see her as he had something that required her assistance.

Yi Chuan smilingly replied: “Her Majesty is on the southern patrol path. After she gained control of Southern Tang, she began going on these inspection tours every few years to alleviate the disputes between the countries here. She just so happened to be passing by this time. The many sect masters and royal lords of this region are organizing a banquet for her tonight, so I’ll be bringing the juniors to see her.”

Li Qiye came up with an idea, so he asked: “Where can I meet her?”

“Hmph.” The unhappy A’ Bao immediately said: “The great lord is our ruler. She is supreme and noble and not someone you can meet as you please!”

“A’ Bao, do not be rude.” Yi Chuan stopped him: “The leaders are holding the banquet at the Waterside Garden. From what I’ve heard, Her Majesty should be coming today. Does little friend want to see Her Majesty too?”

Li Qiye only smiled and didn’t reply.

Meanwhile, A'Li chuckled and added: "It is understandable that you want to see Her Majesty. At our Southern Tang, everyone says that her beauty is peerless. Her Majesty is not only a Virtuous Paragon, she is also incredibly pretty. Who knows how many young geniuses lost their minds because of her? If you go see her, maybe you will be awestruck by her beauty as well."

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile at the innocent A'Li. He gently shook his head in response: "Little miss, you are mistaken this time. I'm afraid there are not many women who can charm me."

"Please!" The few male disciples looked at Li Qiye with one eye, especially A'Bao. He spoke with disdain: "No woman can charm you? That is because you haven't seen any beautiful ones! Just wait till you see Her Majesty, your soul will leave your body."

"A'Bao, stop your nonsense." Yi Chuan couldn't help but wryly smile at the conversation between the youths. He gently shook his head and told A'Bao to stop.

This ridicule was met with silence from Li Qiye who continued to drink.

"Oh? Isn't this Royal Lord Yi? What is it this time? Your Suhang Country has no inheritor, so you have to stoop to recruiting a beggar?" At this time, a group came down from the upper floors. [The leader was a young man wearing an imperial robe decorated with a four-clawed dragon.](#) He had an imposing appearance and a threatening aura.

His entire entourage consisted of powerful experts. It was easy to tell that their background was extraordinary.

“Minor-Form Crown Prince.” Yi Chuan wasn’t angered by this provocation. He only dismissively said: “A hero is a hero regardless of his background, material possessions, and sect.”

This young man was the crown prince of the Minor-Form Country, one of the ten nations under Southern Tang’s jurisdiction. Minor-Form and Suhang neighbored each other. Both sides had been at odds even till now. Although there had never been a bloody conflict, these provocations upon them meeting were too common.

“Is that so? Then feel free to continue recruiting these beggars. I hope that you can find a descendant from the bunch of them.” The Minor-Form Crown Prince looked down at Li Qiye and laughed: “Hopefully, it will be someone excellent. Otherwise, your mediocre disciples over there shouldn’t even dream about competing with me. Royal Lord Yi, before you grow old, you better find someone before it’s too late.”

Such words made A’bao’s group glare at him, but the prince didn’t mind at all. He let out an arrogant laugh before leaving with his entourage.

The juniors behind Yi Chuan were incensed as they watched the prince leave. He purposely humiliated them!

Very polite and humble pronoun usage here from Yi Chuan when referring to himself. “Old man” instead of the “I” for kings or for

nobility/important people.

World Tree Arc.

This is a bit interesting. Yan is an interesting word because it has conflicting meanings by adding some strokes. It can mean satisfied/pleased, hate/tired from having too much, or just hate. You can see how problematic translating this name can be without context. But now, context was given. His title must mean “Tired/Hatred of All Things”.

The Hongwu Emperor of the Ming Dynasty emulated the Yuan Dynasty rules on the use of the dragon motif and decreed that the dragon — with five claws — would be his emblem. The four-clawed dragon would typically be for nobility and certain high-ranking officials. The three-clawed dragon was used by lower ranks and the general public (widely seen on various Chinese goods in the Ming Dynasty). The dragon, however, was only for select royalty that was closely associated with the imperial family, usually in various symbolic colors. It was a capital offense for anyone — other than the emperor himself — to ever use the completely gold-colored five-clawed dragon motif. Improper usage of dragons and colors was considered treason and punishable by the execution of the offender’s entire clan.

Chapter 934: Waterside Garden

A'Bao gritted his teeth and said: "Hmph! That Minor-Form Crown Prince is too contemptuous. His Majesty is still in the same generation as his father. He only got lucky drinking some treasure blood; that's the only reason why he is ahead of First Brother, he's nothing special. Without that fortune, he wouldn't be stronger than First Brother!"

"No need to be angry." Yi Chuan shook his head: "As long as you're strong enough, no one will dare to mock you. The Minor-Form Crown Prince's words are not all that unreasonable. His talents are indeed higher than your First Brother's. You all still have a long way to go before you can compete with him. This is true for your First Brother as well."

Yi Chuan didn't have exceptional talents, but he had great eyesight and kindness. Because of this, Suhang continued to grow under his leadership.

A'Bao only scowled without saying anything else. The other disciples couldn't swallow the anger from this humiliation either. Yi Chuan was the only one who took it in stride.

"Let us go. Since the crown prince left so early, it seems like Her Highness is about to arrive." Yi Chuan let a disciple pay the bill while ordering the other disciples.

These disciples immediately turned excited again after hearing about being able to see Her Highness.

“Little friend, I hope that we can meet again.” Before leaving, Yi Chuan was still as polite as ever towards Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smiled and nodded. He continued to drink his wine and was in no hurry.

The group made their way towards the Waterside Garden. Along the way, A’Li curiously asked: “Master, why are you so courteous towards that Li Qiye? Does he really have that much potential?”

She wasn’t the only one who wanted to know. The rest of the group wanted to ask as well.

Yi Chuan gently shook his head in response: “Child, you cannot judge and look down on other people based on appearances alone. Sometimes, the most powerful expert would seem like the most common bystander.”

A’ Bao said with skepticism: “Master is saying that Li Qiye is already very powerful? I feel like he’s only a mortal, though.”

Yi Chuan continued: “This Fellow Daoist Li might not necessarily be powerful, but his future will be bright or even unlimited. All of you think that you are strong. With regards to cultivation and background, this Fellow Li might be weaker than you, but the truth is that in terms of dao heart, wisdom and perseverance, all of you can’t compare to him at all. This isn’t only because of his determination, it is because he remains undaunted even in the face of a landslide.” With that, Yi Chuan looked at the juniors:

“Cultivation is not just about becoming more powerful. It requires strengthening your mind as well! Only when one’s cultivation and mind are both powerful would one be able to walk even further on the dao.”

“Remember well, geniuses aren’t the only ones who will become the strongest.” Yi Chuan thoughtfully explained: “For ages now, countless geniuses and brilliant experts were born into the world, but in the end, only one will become the Immortal Emperor. Moreover, there were plenty who were even more incredible compared to the emperors, but in the end, they turned to nothing...”

He paused for a second before continuing: “More often than not, it wasn’t because these geniuses were not strong enough. It was due to the fact that their dao hearts were lacking. Some couldn’t rise again after a minor setback and forever disappeared among the crowd. I know you are all very prideful, but think about it, if you started as a mortal or a vagrant cultivator, would you be so carefree and relaxed today?”

The group turned quiet after hearing this. This speech functioned as a warning for them.

In the winehouse, Li Qiye finished his fine wine before leaving. He asked for directions to the Waterside Garden and then headed there.

In fact, he wasn’t the only one to do so; many cultivators were heading there. A lot of them were vagrant cultivators.

Prior to this, the news of the great lord's southern patrol had been spread far and wide. All the cultivators here came running in order to see her once.

Many people loved talking about Ye Chuyun. It could even be said that in the entire Southern Tang, many people saw her as their pride.

They spoke her tales as if they knew it like the palm of their hand. For example, she had surpassed her Life Reduction many years ago and became one of the youngest Virtuous Paragons in the Barren Earth after the Difficult Dao Era ended!

"The great lord's story can only be described as brilliant." These cultivators couldn't contain their excitement as they discussed her stories.

A youth narrated: "That's right, our lord is the number one expert among our Southern Tang's younger generation. Way back then, she visited the Eastern Hundred Cities and trained at the Heavenly Dao Academy. She even became a student of the Sacred Era Hall!"

Another spoke while full of admiration: "Yes, the Sacred Era Hall! This is the gathering place of the greatest talents in the Mortal Emperor World. So many geniuses couldn't get in!"

"Her glorious deeds didn't stop there. Rumor has it that she had even climbed to the top of the World Tree, something that even

imperial descendants couldn't do. People said that only a few people like Deity Jikong Wudi and Goddess Mei Suyao made it to the top, yet our lord was able to do so as well. It is easy to imagine just how powerful she is..."

Self-restraint became a rare sight when the topic was about Ye Chuyun's past.

The Waterside Garden was located in the southern area of this city. It was surrounded by rivers and beautiful sceneries. Moreover, spirit energy flowed all around. This type of land was not something a mortal could own.

This was the property of a great power. This sect immediately prepared it to greet the great lord that was about to make her appearance.

The moment Li Qiye arrived, many experts and vagabonds had already been quietly waiting.

Any cultivator was able to meet her during her patrol, no matter their background or current sect. Thus, the garden was completely packed and consisted of people ranging from royal lords and sect masters to cultivators with humble beginnings...

There was no other requirement to gain entry outside of being a cultivator. Nevertheless, the garden still had bodyguards to

prevent any mishaps.

“Mortals cannot enter!” The guards immediately stopped Li Qiye at the gate. Without a doubt, he was included in the no-entry category.

Even if he was not a mortal, he still couldn't enter with his current shabby appearance. Letting someone like this in was an affront to their Southern Tang's reputation.

“Get out of my way.” Li Qiye flipped his hair while looking at the two guards that blocked him with their spears.

The moment his calm eyes fell upon them, the two guards couldn't help but quiver. This pair of dull eyes didn't have any prestige. However, it exuded an unspeakable oppressive force that caused them to feel an instinctive fear as their legs grew weak!

The two had weak cultivations, so how could they withstand his glare? They simply didn't dare to stop him and let him in.

After Li Qiye entered, the two guards finally heaved a sigh of relief. They felt a cold chill and glanced at each other: “[That, that was so bizarre!](#)”

Raw was, “we've truly met a ghost!” But the meaning in the localized version has the same meaning in this case. The ghost expression feels a bit weird here for this usage.

At this point, the cultivators quietly stood there, waiting for the

arrival of the great lord. The leaders who knew each other started to converse.

As for the vagabonds and lowly cultivators, they knew themselves full well and chose to stay in the far corners. They didn't dare to compete against those experts and leaders for the better spots.

Of course, the powerful leaders were sitting at the front. They were qualified to meet the great lord first.

During their friendly greetings, someone saw Li Qiye coming in and asked with surprise: "Who is that?"

Suddenly, many looked at him. They noticed his appearance and frowned.

"Where did this beggar come from? Why was such a fellow allowed in?" A sect master saw him and furrowed his brows.

In their eyes, the reception for the great lord was a big event. How could they be happy to see a beggar in this place?

"Hmph, why is he here? Is this a place where he can come?" A'Bao, who had always been unhappy with Li Qiye, snorted.

Even Yi Chuan was caught off guard to see Li Qiye here.

“Junior, are you lost?” A sect master was completely disgruntled towards Li Qiye and raised his voice aggressively. A mortal would fall to the ground due to this aura.

Li Qiye slowly turned to face him and asked: “Is this the Waterside Garden?”

“Yes, this place is the Waterside Garden, but it isn’t a place where you can come and go as you please...” The sect master spoke as a royal aura emerged from his body.

Li Qiye waved his hand dismissively and interrupted him: “Then it’s right, I didn’t come to the wrong place.”

“Oh? Isn’t this Royal Lord Yi Chuan’s friend? What’s going on, does your friend want to come here to beg?” A sarcastic voice came about. It was the Minor-Form Crown Prince.

The prince did this in order to humiliate Yi Chuan before everyone. He was deliberately causing trouble.

Chapter 935: Meeting An Old Friend

Many quickly shifted their gaze over towards Yi Chuan. A few sect masters who wanted to chase Li Qiye away looked to Yi Chuan as well.

As the old saying goes, one has to look at the owner before beating their dog. Yi Chuan was a big character in Southern Tang. Anyone would have to show some consideration towards him. The Minor-Form Crown Prince's frank attitude towards him was part of the minority.

A'Bao's group, at this moment, were angrily glaring at Li Qiye. In their eyes, Li Qiye was throwing away their country's face. He was purposely making it hard for their ruler to step down!

Yi Chuan was a bit embarrassed. He coughed and said: "I do know this little friend." He didn't deny being Li Qiye's acquaintance.

Li Qiye waved his hand and said: "Me coming here has nothing to do with Royal Lord Li. There's no need for all of you to worry, just do as you please."

"Haha, brat, if Yi Chuan didn't bring you here, how could you enter in the first place?" The crown prince provoked again.

"Which eye of yours saw Our Majesty bring him here?!" A'Bao couldn't help but glare at the prince's blatant attempt at shaming their king.

“A’ Bao, do not be rude.” Yi Chuan gently shook his head: “It is not a big deal even if I brought this little friend here. Our great lord’s patrol is meant for everyone to see.”

Li Qiye only smiled and proceeded to sit even in this situation.

“Junior, scram to the side, that isn’t a place for you to sit!” A royal lord immediately shouted after seeing where he sat down.

Cold glares fell upon him. In their opinion, Li Qiye was truly too outrageous to actually be sitting all the way at the front. They thought that someone like him should be sitting in some obscure corner. Perhaps even the vagrant cultivators would be unwilling to sit beside him.

But now, he did just the opposite and took the front row, grabbing everyone’s attention. This was simply asking for a beating.

Li Qiye slowly turned around to look at this royal lord and leisurely said: “I can sit above the nine heavens, let alone this spot. Shut the hell up!”

“You...” The royal lord was shaking from anger and furiously glared at Li Qiye. It was too humiliating to be shouted at by a nobody such as him.

“Haha, it seems like someone is relying on Royal Lord Yi Chuan’s

prestige to act so arrogantly.” The Minor-Form Crown Prince sneered. His country and Suhang had always been at odds, so he was fanning the flames to humiliate Yi Chuan.

The royal lord who yelled at Li Qiye earlier told Yi Chuan in a serious tone: “Royal Lord Yi, if this is your disciple, then discipline him to avoid being shamed before the great lord.”

If Li Qiye was Yi Chuan’s disciple, then it wasn’t his place to discipline him, so he wanted to pressure Yi Chuan instead.

“Royal Lord Yi, you need to reign in a disciple like this better, how shameful! Junior, go sit behind your senior, this is not the place to act disrespectfully!” Another sect master was very unhappy with Li Qiye’s actions and coldly voiced his objection.

Even A’ Bao’s group was glaring at Li Qiye. Li Qiye’s actions made it very awkward for their king and lost him all face.

Yi Chuan was a bit embarrassed. He couldn’t help but wave at Li Qiye: “Little friend, come sit behind me. You are sitting in a sect master’s spot.”

Yi Chuan’s attitude was very friendly towards Li Qiye. If it was someone else, they wouldn’t bother protecting Li Qiye.

Li Qiye sat there firmly and motionless. He only smiled and said: “Royal Lord Yi, thank you for being considerate, but I rather like this seat right now.”

Yi Chuan could only smile wryly at this while A'Bao indignantly said: "Your Majesty, just leave this ungrateful person alone."

The crowd present had all kinds of expressions as they gazed at Li Qiye. Some felt that this brat was crazy while others thought that he was quite interesting. A few sect masters and royal lords thought that Li Qiye was challenging their authority by taking one of their spots.

"Junior, if you continue to not know any better, I will throw you out myself." The royal lord from earlier uttered with ill intent.

"Shut up." Li Qiye closed his eyes and interrupted him harshly: "If you keep buzzing in my ears, I'll twist you up like a piece of bread!"

The royal lord vomited blood from anger after hearing this. He immediately stood up while his blood energy erupted!

"The great lord is here." Right when this royal lord was about to take action, a message came from outside.

"The great lord is here." Everyone inside the garden stood up and went to greet their lord.

The royal lord that wanted to attack Li Qiye scowled and swallowed his anger, then he quickly went to greet the lord as well.

Under the receptive crowd, the current ruler of Southern Tang, the Pure Lotus School's Ye Chuyun appeared before everyone.

“Welcome, great lord.” Everyone hurriedly greeted Ye Chuyun. It was not only because she was the great lord of the region, but also because she was a Virtuous Paragon.

Across the entire Barren Earth, very few people in the younger generation were Virtuous Paragons. It could be said that those who reached this level could be counted on one's hand, and she had become one many years ago on top of that. She was plenty powerful enough, someone worthy of being both feared and the pride of her people.

Li Qiye looked for Ye Chuyun who was surrounded by the crowd. After so many years, her style was even more brilliant than before.

She was still wearing an aqua-colored dress and her almond eyes contained a hint of charm and elegance. Her aura of nature was accompanied by a dignified and noble air that had a touch of indescribable femininity.

Unlike the past, the current Ye Chuyun's actions had a world-turning momentum, as if she could cause rain to fall with the flip of her palm.

There was no doubt that reaching Virtuous Paragon carried a great significance. It was the first step into the supreme grand dao, the beginning of a deified title in the future!

Outside of the sect masters and royal lords gathering around her, even regular and vagabond cultivators tried to find an opportunity to introduce themselves and leave a good impression. In the future, if they needed help from Southern Tang or the Pure Lotus School, at least they could pretend to be acquaintances.

Yi Chuan also brought his juniors to meet her. A’ Bao’s group was excited to see Ye Chuyun for the first time. For both the males and females, the great lord was their goddess and role model; it was their honor to be able to see her in person.

Ye Chuyun was not arrogant. She nodded her head as a greeting towards everyone. Before she knew it, she was surrounded by sect masters and royal lords.

At this point, her gaze paused for a moment as she inadvertently saw a lone person sitting at the front. His clothes were ragged, but that figure, that figure was all too familiar.

Ye Chuyun was shocked because he had been missing for a very long time. No one knew his whereabouts, but now he suddenly appeared in this place — this was quite astounding.

“Your Majesty, this beggar snuck in here, let me chase him out!” The Minor-Form Crown Prince thought that the great lord was angered by the sight of the beggar and quickly headed for him in order to claim this merit.

“Foul Beggar, get out of here, don’t defile Her Majesty’s view!” The prince shouted and reached for Li Qiye.

“Pop!” The prince couldn’t catch him before a crisp slapping noise resounded. No one saw how Li Qiye slapped him. The prince spat out a mouthful of blood; all of his teeth were broken.

“Little bastard!” The prince became furious and wanted to behead Li Qiye.

Ye Chuyun composed herself and shouted: “Step down!” She was a Virtuous Paragon. Her shout alone was enough to cause the prince to take several steps backward before falling down. He was no longer able to stand up since the gap between the two was too large.

Li Qiye remained seated with dirt and grit all over his face. He looked at her and smiled: “Miss Ye, long time no see.”

This address left many people breathless. In Southern Tang, no one dared to call the great lord by her name outside of Virtuous Paragons from the previous generation.

Ye Chuyun quickly walked towards him and replied: “Brother Li, long time no see. I didn’t expect Brother Li to make an entrance. If you told me, I would have personally gone to greet you.”

This scene left the sect masters and royal lords present dumbfounded. One could imagine the person’s identity if their great lord had to act so politely.

A’ Bao’s group behind Yi Chuan watched on in disbelief. Li Qiye was completely filthy. No matter how they looked at him, he was not worthy of such grand treatment.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “You are too polite. I have only recently returned and just happened to come to Southern Tang. However, I do have something to ask of you.”

Ye Chuyun looked at Li Qiye. Though she didn’t know what had transpired, she understood that Li Qiye had experienced something incredible. Just think about it, this man before her could nonchalantly destroy a sect. A slight gesture from him could trap many ancestors from imperial lineages to death.

“I will do my best to provide assistance for whatever you need.” Ye Chuyun quickly answered: “You must be tired from the journey. If you don’t mind, how about staying at my place for a few days?”

“Very well, since Miss Ye is showing such magnificent hospitality, I can only obey.” Li Qiye smiled and nodded his head, intending to stand up.

Ye Chuyun quickly helped him up. She gave orders to the disciple next to her before personally accompanying him away.

Chapter 936: Ye Chuyun

In just a second, the entire Waterside Garden turned quiet as everyone watched the great lord help Li Qiye leave hand-in-hand.

They were shocked by this scene. No one knew the identity of this dirty youth. Such actions from their great lord were beyond being polite. It was at the level of deference!

Suddenly, their heads went blank and they felt suffocated. Ye Chuyun was not only the current ruler of Southern Tang, she was also a paragon. Among the youths in the Barren Earth, she was definitely among the top talents.

But now, she personally accompanied this young man away with full respect. It was easy to see how highly she regarded him.

No one here could believe such a thing, not even Yi Chuan. He only thought that Li Qiye was an ordinary vagrant cultivator.

As for the group of A'Bao, their mouths were wide open and wouldn't close for a long time. The great lord was their goddess who was completely unreachable. However, she was personally helping Li Qiye away. Such a respectful attitude was too unbelievable!

Prior to this, they were very unhappy towards Li Qiye. But now, they thought that the ignorant ones were themselves!

“It’s over...” The Minor-Form Crown Prince dropped to the ground with a completely pale complexion. Even their great lord was so respectful, yet he offended the person.

The royal lord who wanted to attack Li Qiye was drenched in cold sweat. He didn’t think that this inconspicuous beggar had such a great background. At this time, a few people were reminded of Yi Chuan. He was the only person here who was Li Qiye’s friend.

“Brother Yi, what is the background of that young noble earlier?” Many royal lords and sect masters quickly swarmed towards Yi Chuan to ask for Li Qiye’s information. They actually thought that Yi Chuan knew his identity.

Yi Chuan smiled wryly and shook his head: “I don’t know that young noble’s exact background either.”

Li Qiye was sitting inside Ye Chuyun’s carriage. She noticed his ragged appearance and showed concern: “What happened to Brother Li?”

She was still a paragon, so she was able to notice a thing or two after a look.

Li Qiye smiled in response: “No big deal, it is just that I only got back from the Stone Medicine World with a bit of difficulty.” Li Qiye answered in such a nonchalant manner, but Ye Chuyun’s

expression shifted. The pathways between the nine worlds had yet to be opened. Forcefully breaking through the world barriers was definitely courting death, even for a God-Monarch!

“Are you okay?” Ye Chuyun asked with concern.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “There’s no need to worry, Miss Ye. It was only a small matter. I only made a bet with someone and my dao foundation got sealed — just a minor inconvenience.

Ye Chuyun naturally understood that this “minor inconvenience” was definitely a heaven-shattering event to anyone else.

She welcomed him into the Pure Lotus School and prepared the best place for him as well. All of this was carried out with the most prestigious reception possible for an esteemed guest.

Ye Chuyun was already waiting in the hall by the time Li Qiye finished taking a bath. She saw him coming and immediately stood up then bowed: “I left in a hurry back then and couldn’t show you my gratitude. Please accept this bow today.”

Li Qiye waved his sleeve and smiled: “It is all in the past, there’s no need to mention it. You didn’t need to thank me for back then either.”

“No, without your guidance, the me standing here today wouldn’t exist.” Ye Chuyun insisted on bowing and continued in a

formal manner: “My achievements today were mostly given to me by Brother Li.”

Back then, Li Qiye brought her to the World Tree which led to her obtaining quite a big fortune. This allowed her cultivation to suddenly rise after returning. Some even said that she was the first Virtuous Paragon of the young generation after the end of the Difficult Dao Era!

She left quickly back then and couldn't thank Li Qiye. Today, she bowed solemnly in order to express her gratitude upon meeting him again.

Seeing her persistence, Li Qiye sat down and accepted her grand gesture.

After handing over her gift, she sat down with Li Qiye. He looked at her and smiled: “Miss Ye is an acquaintance, so I won't be too reserved. First, I want to ask about the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect.”

“Brother Li can rest easy about this.” Ye Chuyun smiled. When a gentle girl like her smiled, it was especially pleasing to the eyes. She said: “The Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect is extraordinary in present times. Although I have not been to the Grand Middle Territory, I still hear some news from there. It is said that Miss Li and Miss Chen have reached half completion of their Immortal Physiques, and the same goes for your sect's Master Su. They are a threat to the Grand Middle Territory and even the entire Mortal Emperor World! Back when they reached half completion, the majority of the sects in the world went to congratulate them.

Unfortunately, I was undergoing a cultivation session so I couldn't go and instead only sent disciples with gifts."

Her answer was not an exaggeration. One sect with three Immortal Physiques... It was no wonder that this would shock the entire world. Three half completion Immortal Physiques could force any Virtuous Paragon to back off! This was not taking into account the fact that they could become three grand completion physiques in the future.

If one sect could have three grand completion physiques, then even if an Immortal Emperor was present, they wouldn't carelessly start a fight. One grand completion Immortal Physique was enough to assail an Immortal Emperor. Just imagine the power of three in the same sect!

Of course, the world didn't know about Chen Baojiao's physique. However, someone gauged her physique's power and assumed that she was cultivating an Immortal Physique as well, despite not knowing the exact one.

After hearing this, Li Qiye sighed in relief and nodded his head: "Then I'll ask Miss Ye for a favor."

Ye Chuyun quickly said: "I will do my best, just let me know what you need."

Li Qiye responded: "Miss Ye is too polite. I only want you to help me send news to the Cleansing Incense Sect about my return."

“This is simple.” Ye Chuyun replied: “I will let my disciples do so right away. However, Brother Li should know that we can’t send this news to the Cleansing Incense Sect right away. Our sect and yours are not connected by a dao portal. I’m afraid we need to use the Eastern Hundred Cities as a transit point and the Icy Feather Palace’s dao portal.”

Directly teleporting was the quickest way for cultivators to communicate, but this type of teleportation required the dao portals of the two sects to be connected. Only sects with great relationships would have such a thing.

There was another type of teleportation — blind teleportation. They would only know the approximate position and couldn’t teleport accurately. This type of teleportation not only required a huge amount of refined jades, the chance for mistakes was high as well. It could even teleport someone to dangerous locations.

“No rush, as long as it is sent.” Li Qiye nodded. He didn’t intend on returning to the Grand Middle Territory for now. He had other plans at the Barren Earth that still needed to be carried out.

“We will definitely send the news for you.” Ye Chuyun said: “May I ask how long you will be staying at the Barren Earth? If you are in no hurry and don’t mind, then you can stay at my humble abode for a while. I still want to ask you for some pointers.” Ye Chuyun was very forward with her intentions.

“Since Miss Ye has shown me such great hospitality, I will do as you ask.” Li Qiye was not reserved. He looked at her and asked: “Have there been any big events at the Mortal Emperor World in

these past few years?”

“Since Brother Li left, the Mortal Emperor World has been very peaceful.” Ye Chuyun responded: “Your battle back then served as a warning to the rest of the world, so in these recent years, many sects here have only been training and training. Very few people caused trouble.”

She was correct in this matter. The battle back at the Heavenly Dao Academy acted as a deterrent to the entire world, especially when the Realm God easily crushed the Brilliance Ancient Kingdom. Many lineages didn’t even dare to breathe loudly afterward.

With a powerful existence like the Realm God around, anyone would need to think twice before causing trouble in the Mortal Emperor World.

Li Qiye only chuckled and didn’t comment on the matters of past.

“Recently, the most sensational news is the Buddhist Funeral Plateau announcing that the [Nalanda Temple](#) and all the other temples under its jurisdiction were opening again to enlighten all the destined ones in the world.” Ye Chuyun told Li Qiye what she knew.

Nalanda is a real place, a large buddhist monastery in India.

“The plateau finally opened.” Li Qiye narrowed his eyes upon hearing this.

“The Difficult Dao Era is over, so the Nalanda Temple wants to welcome the world.”

“Countless cultivators go to the plateau each day. However, in recent years, several geniuses have been converted so people have been very careful when they go there, especially the younger generation.” Ye Chuyun explained.

Li Qiye couldn't help but gaze at the far horizon and murmur: “Buddhist Funeral Plateau...”

It was one of the twelve burial grounds with many secrets within. Some of them were beyond human comprehension.

“Brother Li wants to go there?” Ye Chuyun asked after seeing his expression.

Li Qiye slightly shook his head: “No rush, it will not go anywhere. If the Nalanda Temple has opened again, they won't close their doors so quickly. After I'm done with my business, it still won't be too late to go there!”

“Will you need my assistance?” Ye Chuyun went straight to the point.

Li Qiye smiled: “I will definitely ask if I need help.”

“As long as you need it, just let me know and both the Pure Lotus School and I will try our best.” Although Ye Chuyun was born in the prosperous southern land, as the ruler of the region, she was not long-winded at all.

Chapter 937: Inseparable

Li Qiye stayed back at the Pure Lotus School. Outside of refining his dao foundation, he used his time to meditate on the supreme mysteries in order to perfect the vessel of athanasia. He had a particular vision in his mind: once all three vessels were perfected, an entirely new framework would be formed.

Li Qiye knew that with regards to life creation alone, other people had gone much further than him.

However, no matter how powerful one might be on this path, they would have to pay a terrible price. This was a heaven-defying matter, a challenge to the high heavens.

Because of this, Li Qiye's new idea was to rise against the heavens and surpass all things. Creating life alone was not enough. If this was his limit, then it would be over for him.

Due to this reason, he must make the vessels support each other instead of being independent existences, to form a new system that had never existed before, to reach an unprecedented height!

Thus, there was still a long way for Li Qiye to go. In his eyes, becoming Immortal Emperor was only the beginning.

During his stay, Ye Chuyun was not reserved at all. She directly asked him for help whenever she had questions on cultivation. She didn't have the same meekness of southern women. She was frank yet graceful. More importantly, even as a Virtuous Paragon, she

still consulted him with sincerity and modesty.

She knew better than anyone else that despite being a paragon, Li Qiye was much more powerful than her. Even a genius like Bing Yuxia was full of respect towards Li Qiye, so she had nothing to be arrogant about.

Li Qiye didn't hold back either and solved all of her questions as well as pointed out her shortcomings.

After obtaining his guidance, Ye Chuyun had a new sense of enlightenment. Many things that she couldn't understand before suddenly became clear.

“I can't catch up to your understanding of the grand dao even if I try for the rest of my life.” She was absolutely convinced by his knowledge.

Li Qiye only smiled. He could even teach an Immortal Emperor, so this level of guidance was nothing special.

Li Qiye smilingly said: “It is only because you can also understand. If you give me an ox to teach, then even if I could spew out a deluge of heavenly lotuses with my words, it still wouldn't understand.”

Ye Chuyun's talent was high. Although there was still a gap between her and Bing Yuxia, she had a heart with the characteristics of an [orchid](#) flower. This made up for her

weaknesses.

Orchid is the symbol of perfection and elegance in Chinese culture.

She chuckled after hearing this. The gentle smile made a gentle girl like her even more charming than before.

She became immersed in cultivation with Li Qiye's guidance and became his friend, an inseparable shadow.

This made the disciples in the school think that their school master had found a dao companion. Even the ancestors thought that Ye Chuyun had found her love. They specifically called for her and asked: "Child, when is your wedding?"

After hearing the ancestor, Ye Chuyun didn't know whether to laugh or cry. She realized that her ancestor misunderstood, so she smiled and shook her head: "Ancestor, I didn't say that I want to get married."

"I understand that you care for the sect, but you cannot let go of your own marriage as well. If you have someone you like and he is right for you, then just go marry him." This ancestor said: "Our school is different from the others, our school master can marry. We have no ambition to compete with the rest of the world, just living in peace is enough. The seniors in the sect don't want you to waste your chance just because of the sect."

Ye Chuyun didn't know how to respond after hearing this. News of her always being together with Li Qiye had long spread around

the school. There was no disciple who didn't know about them. However, the truth was that nothing happened between them.

He told Ye Chuyun: "I have checked out the brat staying with you. He really isn't bad; he's not afraid of the world and has a firm dao heart — definitely an extraordinary character. If you like him, then marry him. The seniors in the sect all support you."

She laughed awkwardly before denying: "Ancestor, this is an impossible matter. Plus, even if I want to marry, Brother Li wouldn't be willing. There are so many beauties by his side and all of them are geniuses."

"You need to fight for your marriage. As long as you try, there will always be a chance." The ancestor spoke profoundly.

Ye Chuyun was at a loss for words. Eventually, she bade farewell to the ancestor as she didn't want to discuss this matter any longer because everyone had misunderstood her relationship with Li Qiye. Moreover, it was getting worse and worse. Nevertheless, she didn't try to clarify this misunderstanding. Li Qiye was too lazy to as well. Because of this, everyone assumed that they had truly become a couple.

Li Qiye was very content with his time here at the lotus school. There were no worries and every trivial detail was dealt with by Ye Chuyun. Their cultivation time together was very pure and untouched by the ravages of life. He enjoyed the days passing by like this.

Although both Ye Chuyun and Madam Zi Yan were gentle, there was a big difference between the two. Madam Zi Yan was as soft as water, like spring rain pouring down on Li Qiye's daily life. Meanwhile, Ye Chuyun was a surging stream that washed away his secular worries.

Ye Chuyun followed him and did not let anything interfere with his meditation. However, on one particular day, she had to interrupt him.

“There is a message, would you like to hear it?” She was worried that he would be distracted, so she wouldn't bother him with ordinary matters.

“What is it?” Li Qiye casually asked.

“Our disciples obtained some new information. Several days ago, an immortal river surged from the Godwar Mountain. I asked my ancestors before after hearing about it and found that this is something that has never happened before.” She elaborated: “A couple of days ago, you expressed interest in going there, so I'm wondering if you want to go right now?”

In fact, she was actually hoping for him to stay at the Pure Lotus School. Their time together was very enjoyable.

“Immortal river? Elaborate.” Li Qiye expressed some interest by narrowing his eyes.

“I don’t know the exact details. The disciples said that it looks like a rising crown.” She gently shook her head in response.

After hearing this, he immediately stood up and slowly spoke: “We’ll go tomorrow.”

“To the Godwar Mountain?” She asked.

Li Qiye shook his head: “No, we’re not in a hurry to go there. We’ll head for the Heavenguard Sect first.”

“Heavenguard Sect.” Ye Chuyun was surprised and said: “The Heavenguard Sect does not meet outsiders these days. I don’t think they want to compete in this generation either.”

“They will meet me, I left something behind there.” Li Qiye replied.

Ye Chuyun stared at him and softly spoke: “How about I go with you? If you don’t find it appropriate, then I won’t make things difficult.”

She was as gentle as possible at this moment and exuded an indescribable charm with each of her actions.

Li Qiye met her gaze and nodded: “We’ll go together then. After finishing with the Heavenguard Sect, I’ll be going to the Godwar Mountain, then it is off to the Buddhist Funeral Plateau. You don’t have much to see at the Godwar Mountain, but the plateau is

definitely a place worth visiting. You will be able to benefit from the trip.”

“I appreciate your guidance.” Ye Chuyun grew happy and bowed in excitement.

Li Qiye gently stroked the hair flowing down her forehead and said: “This is not considered guidance but more that I fancy you. Your will to reach the dao is like flowing water, free yet persistent like the tranquil rain in spring. In the future, you won’t become an Immortal Emperor, but you will still be a supreme expert.”

“I’m very happy to hear your praise.” She smiled as her brows lifted gracefully. She had a particular appeal to reach straight into the heart.

Li Qiye ordered: “Go get ready since you will need to leave for a long time.”

Ye Chuyun didn’t hesitate at all and began her preparations. She left the matters in the sect to the elders so that she could visit the Heavenguard Sect with Li Qiye.

On the next day, they embarked on their journey. Ye Chuyun didn’t bring any disciples so as to not bother Li Qiye.

Southern Tang was also near the extreme southwest area of the Barren Earth while the Heavenguard Sect was in the southeast region, so the two of them headed east.

However, Li Qiye was not in a rush. Rather than taking one portal after another, they opted to take a boat to cross the mountain ranges.

Along the way, he stopped at some other places. They were all different; ancient capitals, mountains, rivers, divine peaks...

His expression kept on changing after stopping at these places; silence, sadness, dazed...

No matter the time or occasion, Ye Chuyun only quietly stood by his side and kept him company.

The Barren Earth had a different significance in Li Qiye's mind. If the Eastern Hundred Cities was memorable due to it being the origin of the human race, then the Barren Earth was a place he didn't want to think about.

However, at the same time, this was the place Li Qiye wanted to stop by the most.

Chapter 938: Heavenguard Sect

Too much hot blood had been spilled at the Barren Earth. It could be said that all of the most tragic battles back then took place here.

Each time he visited this place, Li Qiye couldn't help but recall all of those souls. Sometimes, he wished that time would stop so that he could stay with these lost comrades!

While standing near the bank of a broken river, Li Qiye quietly listened to the moving current. Ye Chuyun stood beside him and held his hand for comfort.

Li Qiye looked at her then pointed at the broken area ahead: "Did you know that in a distant era, this place was piled with corpses? Without the bodies of those heroes, the nine worlds of today wouldn't exist."

"I don't know much about the battles in the past." Ye Chuyun held his hand and spoke: "But I do hope for you to keep on moving forward. Our ancestors worked hard so that their descendants could continue to tread forward. I am sad to see you feeling so down."

Li Qiye gently sighed while looking at the sceneries ahead. That war was far too cruel. Countless generals and soldiers in his strongest legion died on this land!

"Come, let us go to the Heavenguard Sect." Eventually, he shook his head and moved on.

Ye Chuyun continued to quietly accompany him as they headed eastbound. Sometimes, she would introduce the land to him, hoping to see him smile.

The Heavenguard Sect was a lineage whose fame had long since spread across the entire Mortal Emperor World. It had three emperors, thus its prestige was difficult to match.

In the Barren Earth, there were two sects with three emperors. One was the Heavenguard Sect while the other was the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain. If the mountain was a prosperous heritage, then the sect was on a downward slope. This was especially true for the recent few generations. The sect had been low-key for a long time now.

Nevertheless, its high status in this world was not only due to its number of emperors, but also due to its efforts!

In the distant Ancient Ming Era, there was a legend. It stated that the Heavenguard Sect participated in many conquests and countless geniuses fell in those battles! It paid a heavy price after each war.

Keep in mind that the sect was extremely powerful since this was before the Emperors Era. Some people even calculated that it produced the highest amount of Godkings and True Gods. They even claimed that it was the strongest lineage with three Emperors in this world!

If it wasn't for their involvement in these incredible battles and losing many Godkings and geniuses, perhaps it would have surpassed the unequaled Soaring Immortal Sect!

It has been said that the Heavenguard was the pride of the human race, its protectors. Because of this, other imperial lineages were very respectful towards the Heavenguard Sect.

Li Qiye and Ye Chuyun finally arrived. They saw many majestic divine peaks. All of these peaks towered high into the sky as if they were the abodes of gods.

No matter who they might be, anyone would feel insignificant while standing outside and gazing at this sect from a distance, as if they were mere insects. The supreme momentum in the sect's ancestral ground made it seem like the stars were orbiting this location.

There was a monolith erected immediately outside of its entrance. There were no words carved on it, only the image of a crown that seemed as if it belonged to an Immortal Monarch of the nine heavens.

Li Qiye softly sighed while standing outside of the sect's entrance. He had finally returned to this place after so many years.

In those far-off days, every time he left this place, he was accompanied by the men of this sect on his expeditions. During the Ancient Ming Era, not many of them returned alive.

Thus, later on, he didn't want to return to this sect as he no longer wanted them to follow him. He didn't wish to see its disciples riding his war chariots!

In his eyes, the sect's sacrifices in that last battle during the Ancient Ming Era alone were a heavy price for it to shoulder. It had always supported him in his war against the Ancient Ming.

His legions clashed against the Ancient Ming time after time during the endless war. Many of his troops were from the Heavenguard Sect. He felt that the sect had paid its dues, so he no longer returned.

Back when Immortal Emperor [Zhen Yu](#) and Immortal Emperor [Mu Tian](#) were young and aspired for the apex, he had helped them many times. Nevertheless, he didn't set foot in this place during the Emperors Era and had always refused the two Emperors' continuous beseeching.

Zhen Yu is Hell Suppressing

Mu Tian is Heaven's Shepherd

While the two stood outside of the gate, a guard from the sect shook his head and told them: "Dao friends, please return. Our sect does not meet guests."

Li Qiye looked at him and said: "Yes, but I'm not a guest."

The disciple couldn't help but look at him again and asked: "May I ask for your name?"

Li Qiye didn't answer him. He told Ye Chuyun: "You settle down here. I will go meet them." With that, he went closer to the stone monolith and opened his mind. Two golden universal laws flew out and went straight into the monolith.

"Buzz!" The wordless monolith suddenly lit up with golden light.

"Clank!" The two universal laws actually turned into two words — [Emperor](#).

This can be a bit confusing because it is two words in CN — 天子. I kept it as two instead of changing it to one because there were two universal laws forming two words. The second part is that this is not the traditional word or the common word that we use for "Emperor". Strictly speaking, this is more of a historical/political/cultural usage of "Emperor". It literally means Son of Heaven, which is what ancient kings were called in order to justify their claim to the throne. In terms of accuracy, I would use Son of Heaven rather than Emperor here, but Emperor fits the context better when translated into English with regards to the novel's plot.

The word "Emperor" was dazzling with a majestic and carefree aura. Next, the word disappeared and the monolith opened. A golden crown emerged; it was also formed from the two universal laws.

Li Qiye took it and solemnly placed it atop his head. While being on top of his head, golden tassels emerged and dropped down in front of his face. He immediately began emitting an awe-inspiring aura that made it seem like he was an [Immortal Monarch](#)!

I do think the particular usage for Immortal Monarch sometimes in ED is not the cultivation title and is referring to a great deity, just like the Golden Immortal of the Great Firmament. This is a type of immortal in traditional daoist mythos — extremely powerful. Authors often used this as an expressive idiom; it has been used in ED before as well. This can lead to confusion in an English translation since it seems out of place in the beginning. Back to the Immortal Monarch's case, yes, it could just be a general description of someone looking like a heavenly king. Just keep both possibilities in mind.

Ye Chuyun was moved by Li Qiye's current appearance. Anyone would be awestruck by him at this moment.

The disciples guarding that gate were shocked as well. This monolith had been standing here for so many years, but they never knew about this magical effect.

Li Qiye told the guards at the entrance: "Go, ring the bell, the Emperor has returned."

"The Emperor has returned..." The disciples shook once in shock. They calmed down and quickly ran inside without questioning him.

Li Qiye wore his golden crown and headed inside the Heavenguard Sect! There was an unspeakable burden in his heart as he stepped into this all too familiar land.

"Clangg—" A sonorous bell rang for miles and miles. Even the

ancestors sleeping in the deepest depths of the sect could hear it.

“The bell! The Emperor is back!” These hibernating ancestors were woken up by the sound of the bell. One of them murmured in astonishment: “Is this real?!”

Li Qiye entered a temple and sat in the highest position before commanding the disciples: “Tell your ancestors or sect master to come see me.”

The guards were startled, but they didn’t dare to show any disrespect and quickly carried out the order.

A moment later, a middle-aged man hastily rushed in. After coming inside, he saw Li Qiye sitting in that place and was shocked. He carefully looked at Li Qiye, his gaze pausing on the golden crown above his head for a long time.

“All of you, leave.” After confirming his thoughts, the middle-aged man commanded the guards. All of them obeyed and left.

Li Qiye looked at this man. He was a pudgy fella who looked a bit like a shopkeeper in the mortal world.

However, do not be fooled by his obese appearance since he was very famous in the Barren Earth! He was the Heavenguard Sect Master with the title of Forheaven. He forcibly reached Virtuous Paragon during the Difficult Dao Era, causing his awe-inspiring prestige to echo far and wide.

Forheaven bowed towards Li Qiye and spoke with reverence: “May I ask for your name?”

“Emperor, Li Qiye!” Li Qiye emotionlessly spoke: “What is your purpose?”

“Protect the Emperor and guard the heaven’s prestige...” Forheaven quickly shouted and prostrated on the ground: “The sect did not greet Emperor’s return with the proper welcoming ceremony, this was my mistake.”

Li Qiye gently motioned with his hand and said: “There’s no need for the troublesome formalities of the past, we are not strangers.”

Forheaven stood up with great excitement. There was a legend in their sect stating that the mission of all future disciples was to wait for the Emperor’s return.

It was their purpose — to protect the Emperor and guard the heaven’s prestige! This creed had been passed down from generation to generation!

However, so many years had passed and the Emperor did not return. Although Immortal Emperor Zhen Yu and Immortal Emperor Mu Tian had news of the Emperor, he never came back.

The sect stayed hidden for many generations while awaiting their Emperor. Only with the presence of their Emperor could the

Heavenguard truly be itself!

Chapter 939: Sect Master Forheaven

Sect Master Forheaven regained himself from his excitement and prostrated before Li Qiye: “The return of the Emperor shall be our sect’s glory...”

Li Qiye interrupted him by waving his sleeve: “Sect Master, I do not plan on staying here for long. There’s no need to speak about other things, the sect shall stay as it is and continue on its course. Nothing should change because of my return.”

“But Emperor...” Forheaven was stunned after hearing this, not knowing how to respond.

Li Qiye slowly spoke while looking at him: “Sect Master, I know you are thinking about many things right now, but what I bring to the Heavenguard Sect is not glory, only death!”

“For generations, our disciples have all been willing to fight for the Emperor. Death on the battlefield is our glory!” Forheaven emotionally spoke: “The Heavenguard exists for the Emperor. If we do not protect the Emperor, how can we continue to be the Heavenguard?!”

“I know.” Li Qiye gently sighed before replying with some weariness and forlorn: “I have never doubted the loyalty of the Heavenguard Sect. Until now, all of you have been absolutely devoted, but you have paid too much. Your sect was almost destroyed in the Ancient Ming War. It only recovered after the great struggles of the two Immortal Emperors, Zhen Yu and Mu

Tian.”

Forheaven solemnly spoke: “We, the Heavenguard, are willing to serve the Emperor even if it costs all of our lives. This is the oath and ancestral teaching left behind by our progenitor, Immortal Emperor [Qi Zhen](#)!”

Qi Zhen = Truth Starter. Truth here is most likely dao related.

Li Qiye shook his head and said: “No, you don’t understand. To be frank, Qi Zhen does not owe me, I owe Qi Zhen! Qi Zhen created the Heavenguard Sect back then after countless efforts! I do not wish to see the sect be destroyed by following me!”

“We...” Forheaven wanted to speak.

Li Qiye interrupted him with a wave: “I understand what your ancestors are thinking. I know that they want to come back under my banner. I understand it very well. However, ask your oldest ancestors, do they still remember the Azure Dragon Legion back then?”

Forheaven didn’t know how to answer this.

Li Qiye sighed and said: “Even time is unable to erase some things. I understand the Heavenguard’s loyalty towards me. For many millions of years, especially during the Ancient Ming period, your sect sacrificed too much. I was the one who brought them along to fight everywhere, but how many of them actually returned alive?”

“Guardians of the human race and the Mortal Emperor World — these glories do not belong to me. They belong to those who fought and died on the battlefield, to those whose bones are buried in lands foreign to them!” Li Qiye lamented: “If your Heavenguard Sect has a candidate to become the Immortal Emperor, then I will strongly support them. To tell the truth, I do not wish to see you all following me on my conquest anymore.”

Forheaven grew quiet after hearing this.

With that, Li Qiye looked at him and asked: “Which generation of disciple are you of Worldguard?”

“Dear Emperor, I am Master’s direct disciple.” Forheaven was still prostrating on the ground while shouting: “Master has told me of Emperor’s magnificent deeds, I have always kept it in my heart...”

“Rise, your master has worked hard and contributed greatly.” Li Qiye waved his hand and said: “As a True God, it really hasn’t been easy for him to live until now.”

Worldguard True God — there might not be a single person in this world who still remembers this name. However, he was a very frightening existence, someone capable of withstanding the long years. Not many were qualified to meet him, even within the Heavenguard Sect.

Although Forheaven was his disciple, the fact is that the true god

rarely taught him anything. Forheaven was taught cultivation by a different ancestor of the sect.

Li Qiye emotionally sighed after hearing that his old friend was still around. Not many of his followers were still alive after so many years.

“Does Emperor want to meet my master?” Forheaven asked for the command.

“No.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It will be hard to seal Worldguard again if he comes out. I don’t have anything particularly important either, so there’s no need to bother him.” Li Qiye stared at Forheaven and continued: “This time, I came to get an item from you. Once I’m finished with it, I will return.”

“What might that item be, Emperor?” Forheaven asked with haste.

Li Qiye slowly said: “I left something to Mu Tian back then. If I remember correctly, he left this thing behind the mountain.”

“That thing...” Forheaven immediately knew what Li Qiye wanted. He hesitated for a moment while rubbing his palms nervously with a slightly embarrassed look.

“What, not convenient right now?” Li Qiye stared at him inquisitively.

Forheaven was put in a tough spot. He coughed and slowly said: “Emperor, umm, this, this item, we...”

He hesitated for quite a while and still didn’t utter the whole sentence. In fact, his scalp was tingling as well since he didn’t know what to say.

“What? You guys don’t want to?” Li Qiye stared at him with narrowed eyes.

“No, no, that is not our intention...” Forheaven was startled by Li Qiye’s expression. Others might be unaware, but he knew very clearly the type of existence that stood before him.

He hastily spoke: “Emperor, hmm, it is not that we are unwilling, but, but we have our own problem... We, we are only juniors, so we can’t be the ones to say it.”

Li Qiye waved his sleeve and said: “Speak, I shall pardon you.”

Forheaven was on pins and needles. He was very distressed at this moment; he finally understood why the ancestors didn’t want to come out and pushed him into this fire pit instead.

However, he had to face it. He smiled awkwardly and spoke: “Umm, this, this is how it goes, if Emperor doesn’t stay behind, or, if, if you come to take the item, then you will have to marry our [Empress](#).”

Daughter of Heaven.

“Empress? Since when did your sect have an Empress?” Li Qiye narrowed his eyes and stared at the sect master.

Forheaven was lamenting his fate in his mind. Why did he have to be the one to say this? Nevertheless, he braced himself: “This, this claim is a bit strange. It actually dates back to the generation of Forefather Mu Tian. Well, it didn’t appear before, but in this generation, we actually have an Empress of the righteous bloodline.”

Li Qiye slowly uttered towards Forheaven: “I don’t care for this Empress or whatever. Moreover, my business is not for someone else to decide. Sect Master Forheaven, you should know that I don’t need your approval to take that item away. I came today out of respect for everyone.”

“Emperor, please, please don’t misunderstand.” Forheaven was startled and quickly replied: “We, we didn’t mean it like that. We absolutely will not cause trouble for you, it’s just that we cannot breach our ancestral teachings either. Forefather Mu Tian left it behind and said that you yourself agreed to it.”

“I agreed to it? Since when did I agree to marry your Empress?” Li Qiye glared at the sect master.

“Emperor, we, we have the forefather’s personal letter, this isn’t just us making things up.” Forheaven was scared out of his mind. Those ancestors knew that something like this would happen, yet they still pushed him in. They truly had no honor!

“Fine, bring Mu Tian’s letter to me.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve. He truly couldn’t recall when he promised Mu Tian to marry this Empress.

Forheaven immediately went to get the forefather’s ancestral letter. After a while, he finally came back while respectfully holding a divine box with both hands.

Li Qiye took it and opened the box containing the letter. After flipping it over, a majestic and supreme Immortal Emperor aura poured out. There was no way to fake this kind of aura. It could only come from the inheritance of an Immortal Emperor.

“Fuck, this brat Mu Tian actually dared to trick me!” Li Qiye couldn’t keep from cursing after reading the letter.

At the same time, Forheaven down below was quivering in fear. He was afraid of Li Qiye becoming angry. This was the agreement between their Emperor and Immortal Emperor. Juniors like them could only be trapped in distress in this matter.

Of course, the one suffering the most was him, unlike the hiding ancestors who were using him!

Li Qiye sat down on his chair and casually threw the letter back into the box with a wry smile. All along, he had been the one to deceive and fool others, but now, he had been duped by Immortal Emperor Mu Tian!

Back then, Immortal Emperor Mu Tian tried to persuade him to come back to the Heavenguard. However, Li Qiye didn't do so and only agreed to accept one request from the emperor. He didn't expect for something like this to be the request.

“Emperor, about this...” Forheaven hesitated for a long time before mustering the courage to say: “About this matter, what do you, you...”

Li Qiye exasperatedly sighed at this entrapment set up by Immortal Emperor Mu Tian.

“If that Mu Tian brat was still here, I would beat him to death!” Li Qiye said: “I was the one who taught him about tricking people, yet he actually used it against me!”

“That, that is our forefather's business, it has nothing to do with us juniors...” Forheaven quickly denied their involvement. He didn't want to suffer the wrath of the Emperor.

Chapter 940: Su Zhen

Li Qiye sat there in silence. Although he didn't say anything about marrying this Empress, this hole that Immortal Emperor Mu Tian had intentionally dug for him came to the same end.

“Emperor, so, what do you think about this matter? What do you want to do?” Forheaven courageously asked despite his nervousness.

Li Qiye looked at the sect master and said: “My words are worth a thousand gold. If I have agreed, then so be it! I will marry her!”

Forheaven couldn't help but let out a long sigh of relief after hearing this. He wiped away the cold sweat dripping down his forehead. If the Emperor didn't agree, then there was nothing that they could do since no one knew what exactly had happened back then.

Moreover, they were merely disciples, unqualified to demand or force the Emperor to do something.

“However, the position of Heavenly Empress does not belong to her.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “If she is willing, I can give her the position of a concubine.”

“...” The sect master didn't know what to do. This wasn't something that he could take command of, so he didn't know what to say in this situation.

“I accept!” During Forheaven’s moment of loss, a sweet and clear voice came about as someone walked inside.

Forheaven was scared out of his mind after seeing this intruder and quickly stopped her: “Su Zhen, you, you shouldn’t have come in here!”

The intruder spoke: “Sect Master, this is the biggest event in my life, I have the right to know.” Just her pleasant voice alone was an indescribable pleasure. It was enough to make others think that she was a beauty. The clearness in her soft voice was very relaxing.

“Let her in.” Li Qiye told the sect master who was stopping the girl: “That’s right, this is an important event in her life, she has the right to take charge of it.”

Forheaven had to let the girl inside. He felt a flinch in his stomach because he was afraid the Emperor would become angry after seeing her face.

The girl walked to the front of Li Qiye and looked straight at him. She was very bold and lacked hesitation despite knowing his identity.

Li Qiye observed the girl before him. She wore a completely white outfit with a jade hanging on her waist. It was a very simple style, yet it gave her a noble air since she was the one wearing it.

One could still see her perfect curves beneath the loose silk dress. It could not hide her supple body. She was thin and tall with long brows and straight shoulders. It could be said that one would be hardpressed to point out a flaw in this girl's figure.

From just her figure, it was more than apparent that this was a supreme beauty.

The only thing that remained a mystery was her facial features. She had a silk veil, revealing only her bright and watery eyes!

“Heavenguard disciple, Su Zhen greets the Emperor.” She bowed before him with her pleasing voice that would make minds of others drift.

Li Qiye slowly spoke: “Take off your veil so that I can see.”

Forheaven's heart was hanging on a thread after hearing Li Qiye's words. He almost said something, but he bit his tongue.

Su Zhen obeyed and slowly took off her veil before looking straight at Li Qiye.

Anyone would think that she was a great beauty after hearing her voice and seeing her figure. However, after seeing her face, they would gasp or even involuntarily scream out in fear.

Her face was disproportionate to her figure. The proportions of her facial features were perfect. However, there were many

strange, runic lines growing on her face. They resembled wrinkles, but they weren't actually wrinkles. It was as if she had suffered the most terrifying curse in this world.

It was frankly hideous and caused people to shiver without being cold. No one would want to take a second glance at Su Zhen's face.

Forheaven couldn't bear to look either. He was not afraid of looking at her face, it was just that he didn't want to see her being hurt.

He gently sighed as he knew that this day would come. It was a bit too unreasonable to make the Emperor marry a disciple from their sect. No one would want to marry someone like Su Zhen, let alone the supreme Emperor.

She calmly spoke: "If Emperor does not want to marry Su Zhen, then I won't blame you. I was fated to be the Empress from birth. I was born to be yours and I shall die as yours!" Su Zhen was not self-conscious at all after revealing her face.

"Emperor, she is not to be blamed. She was born with that face." Forheaven quickly spoke: "The runes on her face are permanent. We can't remove them, we..."

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve to interrupt Forheaven. He stared seriously at the runic lines on her face before speaking: "What type of person have I not seen after so many eras? For me, beauty of the flesh is meaningless — unable to reach the apex. Being pretty or not is not important to me."

“Emperor is saying...” Forheaven couldn’t help but become happy after hearing this.

Li Qiye gazed at Su Zhen and slowly announced: “My promise can be carried out at any time. If I promised Mu Tian, then I shall do it! If you are willing, then I can marry you, but the position of my wife is not for you! This is not because of your looks. I’m afraid no one in this world can be my wife. I can give you two options: one, be my concubine, two, be my confidant. You already know a lot about me, so you are qualified to stay by my side!”

“I agree!” Su Zhen didn’t need to think at all: “No matter what they may be, I am ready to follow your orders!”

“Very good.” Li Qiye nodded and signaled to her: “Come here, let me see your face.”

She stepped forward without any embarrassment or unnaturalness; she was still as calm as before.

They were only inches apart. Li Qiye gently caressed her face and felt her smooth skin. He kept on touching it for a while.

Su Zhen comfortably stood there without saying anything. She had an indescribable serenity and grace ingrained in her.

Forheaven stood there with bated breath. He didn’t dare to comment either.

“Impossible.” After feeling her face many times, Li Qiye was startled. He spoke: “This is impossible, you have the bloodline of Qi Zhen’s direct branch!”

“Emperor actually noticed it too.” Forheaven added with surprise: “You are right, she is our progenitor’s descendant.”

“No.” Li Qiye waved his hand dismissively: “I know full well whether or not Qi Zhen has descendants. If Qi Zhen did, then this bloodline would have been passed down from long ago.”

“What did Mu Tian do back then?!” Li Qiye thought of another possibility and asked while glaring at Forheaven.

“I, I, really don’t know about this matter.” Forheaven explained: “Forefather Mu Tian didn’t tell his juniors about the details. Even my master doesn’t have a clear understanding.”

“I only heard that Su Zhen’s branch appeared in Heavenguard after Forefather Mu Tian’s generation. He was the one who specified that this branch were the descendants of the progenitor. However, a bloodline like Su Zhen’s only appeared in this generation, and she is the only one.” Forheaven told Li Qiye everything that he knew.

Li Qiye contemplated for a moment after hearing this. If this was indeed Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen’s bloodline, then there was another possibility!

Li Qiye looked back at Su Zhen and slowly spoke: “To be precise, you have the bloodline of Qi Zhen, but you are not Qi Zhen’s descendant.”

With that, he stared at the runic lines on her face and continued: “No matter how you think of your face, there’s no need to feel inferior. It should be said that you should be proud instead, this is an honor! It is extremely rare for something like this to happen to your branch! This is a very valuable sign within your bloodline.”

“What are we? Are we still human?” Su Zhen couldn’t help but ask.

In fact, Forheaven curiously stared at Li Qiye as well. Although everyone knew that Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen was their progenitor, the emperor had always been a mystery. No one knew the emperor’s background or even their gender.

In fact, it had been said that Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen was the emperor who stayed in this world the shortest. Rumor has it that after becoming emperor, Qi Zhen disappeared right away.

No one knew the specific details of this, not even the Worldguard True God.

“Well, you don’t need to know for now.” Li Qiye shook his head: “If you keep working hard, I will tell you the secret one day.”

Su Zhen couldn't help but ask: "What is the criteria for this eventual 'one day'?"

"The day when you reach atavism." Li Qiye gently touched her face again and said: "Remember, this is not a burden or a reason for low self-esteem. These lines are not ugly, you have yet to know the reason for its existence. The secrets inside are beyond your imagination."

Chapter 941: Su Zhen's Background

Su Zhen looked back at Li Qiye and asked: "What will count as atavism?"

Li Qiye stared back at her while still stroking her dao lines. These dense dao lines made him think about many things. Certain past events buried in his mind resurfaced.

Li Qiye withdrew his hand and told her: "What do you know about your background and ancestors?"

"What is my clan then?" She responded with a question.

He looked at her bright eyes and noticed the trace of doubt within. It seemed like she herself didn't know about a few matters.

Li Qiye looked at Forheaven instead. Forheaven only nervously rubbed his palms together and coughed: "This disciple doesn't know about this matter either. Although Su Zhen's branch has been thriving from one generation to the next, we don't know their exact origin. Only Forefather Mu Tian would know this, but the writings he left behind did not touch on this subject."

"Does Emperor think I am Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen's descendant?" Su Zhen asked Li Qiye. It seemed that she wanted to know the answer as well.

Li Qiye pondered for a moment before slightly nodding his head

in response: “Generally speaking, you are indeed Qi Zhen’s descendant since Qi Zhen’s bloodline flows through your veins. In fact, your blood right now is already very pure and is even catching up to Qi Zhen’s. Because of this, you have signs of atavism.”

Su Zhen quietly nodded her head. Not to mention her, even her branch’s old ancestors didn’t know the origin of their own bloodline. Only Immortal Emperor Mu Tian knew the true story! At this moment, their Emperor also confirmed their bloodline!

Of course, even as descendants of Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen, they knew very little about the emperor due to the emperor’s always-mysterious nature. The traces left behind by the emperor in this world were not many. The only thing people knew was that the emperor had created the Heavenguard Sect. However, some even said that this might not be the case. In short, the real stories of the emperor were up for debate. Because the emperor quickly disappeared after winning the throne, very few were able to see the emperor’s invincible style.

“Although you are showing signs of atavism, it won’t be an easy matter.” Li Qiye told Su Zhen.

“What must I do to truly reach atavism? Please guide me, Emperor.” Su Zhen asked for guidance.

Li Qiye gently sighed. Both Qi Zhen and himself had thought about this situation back then. He looked at Forheaven: “If I remember correctly, there is a steel box inside the Highfloor Treasury, go take a look and see if it is still there.”

Forheaven quickly answered while slightly surprised: “Please wait, Emperor. I will go search right away.” He went on his way immediately afterward.

After he left, Li Qiye told Su Zhen: “Keep working hard. When the time is right, I will take you back.”

“Take me back?” Su Zhen became curious and asked: “Back to where? Our land of origin?”

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “You don’t need to know for now. Just wait until that day.”

Su Zhen stopped inquiring after hearing this. She looked at Li Qiye for a bit before wondering: “Will Emperor stay at Heavenguard?”

“No, I will leave after grabbing a certain item.” Li Qiye shook his head. He didn’t want to disturb the serenity of the sect.

“How about I serve by your side?” Su Zhen boldly requested with sincerity.

“No.” Li Qiye refused her request.

Su Zhen remained expressionless and asked: “Is it because I am ugly? Will staying by your side be a detriment to your prestige?”

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh. He shook his head in response: "If you know that I am the Emperor, then you should know some of my legends. One's beauty is merely external and doesn't amount to anything. I have seen both pretty and ugly women alike; beauty does not matter to me."

Su Zhen gently said: "Since Emperor is taking me in as a concubine, I should be staying by your side to fulfill my duties."

Li Qiye nodded: "I know, but for now, you being by my side is not as important as your cultivation."

"Emperor dislikes my shallow cultivation..." Su Zhen softly sighed.

Li Qiye smiled and said: "Nobody is weak in Heavenguard. Your current cultivation can allow you to look down on any genius among the younger generation. However, my requirements are far more than that, understand? You are Qi Zhen's descendant, so I hope that you won't shame your ancestor in the future."

"I will definitely live up to your expectations." Su Zhen took a deep breath and nodded wholeheartedly.

After a while, Forheaven finally returned while holding a steel box. He excitedly spoke: "I did not disgrace your holy order, Emperor. The steel box is still here." He respectfully offered the steel box to Li Qiye.

Li Qiye took it and gently rubbed it. A clicking sound came about, followed by the box opening. Li Qiye took out a veil as thin as a cicada's wing and placed it on Su Zhen's face. It was just like the one hiding her face. However, when it made contact, it slowly melted and merged with her face.

Afterward, her face became blurry and her features grew barely discernible. Even heavenly gazes couldn't see through it, resulting in a very bizarre scene.

Li Qiye nodded after seeing her ethereal face and said: "This is all I can do, the rest is up to you."

Su Zhen also felt something extraordinary, as if something was waking up within her blood, giving her endless strength. She was jubilated and quickly bowed towards Li Qiye.

He gave the box back to Forheaven and said: "It is time for you to take me to that item."

Forheaven prostrated on the ground in response: "Emperor's words are wasted. How could this disciple dare to stop you from taking the item? I will bring you there right away."

In fact, even if Li Qiye didn't follow the ancestral teachings left behind by Immortal Emperor Mu Tian, Forheaven wouldn't dare to stop him from taking the item.

“Rise, devoted one. I do not blame you.” Li Qiye gently waved his hand.

Forheaven quickly led Li Qiye to take that legendary treasure.

Meanwhile, Ye Chuyun was waiting outside of Heavenguard for Li Qiye. There were no visible signs after such a long time, so she became quite worried.

Everyone knew that Heavenguard was one of the most powerful lineages in the contemporary times. It was ancient and mysterious, so no one in this world would dare to come bluster at their door.

She thought about Li Qiye’s arrogant nature that was bound to cause trouble anywhere and became uneasy. She was afraid that his aggressive style would result in a conflict with Heavenguard. She kept on waiting with her heart hanging on a thread and only wished to see Li Qiye walking out from the entrance.

Eventually, he finally appeared in her sight. He took his time and was completely unscathed, so she finally sighed with relief.

Next, she was startled because there was someone accompanying him, the renowned Sect Master Forheaven.

Keep in mind that he was not just famous, he was an infamous monster that threatened the entire Mortal Emperor World! However, he was walking behind Li Qiye with reverence. She realized that she couldn’t see through Li Qiye, that she didn’t know

anything about him at all.

At the entrance, Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve and told Forheaven: “Return, there’s no need to see me off.”

The ancestors wanted to see him off as well, but Li Qiye refused since he didn’t want to make a big scene.

Forheaven opened his mouth, wishing to say something. However, he didn’t want to be seen as too talkative and held it in.

Li Qiye looked at him and sighed: “I know that the entire Heavenguard is full of devotion. Very well, I will call for you when I need the sect in the future.”

“We will rush into the fire with Emperor’s order!” Forheaven excitedly prostrated on the ground.

Li Qiye gently sighed. He didn’t wish to bring Heavenguard to war again. This was not his purpose.

Li Qiye eventually said: “Go back for now.” Forheaven bowed one more time and went back inside.

Li Qiye left with Ye Chuyun. Along the way, the questions she had only continued to increase. Heavenguard’s attitude towards Li Qiye was truly unfathomable. This made her very curious, but she was not in a position to ask.

Chapter 942: Meeting An Old Friend

Li Qiye noticed that Ye Chuyun's curiosity was beyond containment. He smiled and said: "Chuyun, you can say what's on your mind, there's no need to hold it in."

"Brother Li is a disciple from the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect." She stated.

This was something everyone knew and also the thing that puzzled her the most. She curiously continued: "Brother Li, I really didn't try to peek into your past, but I heard that you didn't grow up in that sect and instead joined it later on."

"This is not a secret. Anyone who wants to know my background would know this. Yes, I was lucky and joined the sect to become its disciple." Li Qiye nodded.

This made her even more curious and inquisitive: "Why did Brother Li pick the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect? In my opinion, you are a brilliant talent with exceptional abilities. There is nothing that you can't do and nothing you don't know."

"And?" Li Qiye chuckled after hearing this.

"In my shallow view, if I were you, if it was between the Cleansing Incense Ancient Sect and Heavenguard... I am only a human so I would pick Heavenguard." She revealed what was on her mind.

She had a certain perception of him at this moment. Since he could make Forheaven act so respectfully, it wouldn't have been difficult for him to join Heavenguard in the past.

Even a fool could make the easy choice between Cleansing Incense and Heavenguard. Although Cleansing Incense was once an imperial lineage, it had fallen to a third-rate sect, if it could even be considered that. Meanwhile, Heavenguard had three emperors and loomed over the world. Such a choice was very simple. Anyone would close their eyes and pick Heavenguard.

Li Qiye looked at Ye Chuyun and smiled: "Chuyun, backgrounds don't matter to me. It doesn't matter if it's Heavenguard or the most humble and lowly of backgrounds, I can still head for the apex and cause myriad worlds to lose their lights as I reign supreme!"

With that, Li Qiye stared towards the far horizon with a serious expression: "I picked Cleansing Incense because of a very simple reason — we are connected by fate."

Ye Chuyun turned silent. She couldn't help but wryly smile afterward. Perhaps, only Li Qiye could utter such words with confidence!

"Come, we'll head for the Holy City." Li Qiye looked at the stunned girl and spoke with a smile.

She calmed down and quickly chased after Li Qiye. The two of

them left Heavenguard.

Because Li Qiye was not in a rush to reach the Holy City, he took his time enjoying the beautiful sceneries while setting their boat eastbound through the streams.

The Southern Barren Earth was a wondrous land. Despite its name, rivers extending to all directions could be found everywhere. In this region, one could reach any location by water.

Li Qiye continued to enjoy the beautiful scenes while growing sentimental at a few locations due to recalling people of the past...

Along the way, Ye Chuyun did a good job taking care of him as if she was a maid. Today, she was the ruler of a country, a genius Virtuous Paragon. However, she didn't act prideful or dignified before Li Qiye.

Li Qiye liked her as well. While watching her row the boat, he asked with a smile: "Chuyun, if you are willing, I can take you in."

Ye Chuyun revealed a gentle smile upon hearing this and answered: "I appreciate your adoration."

"Nevermind, I suppose you and I are not meant to be." Li Qiye understood her implication and didn't force the issue.

Ye Chuyun gently shook her head and explained: "Brother Li misunderstood my intention. I really do appreciate your sentiment

— these words come from my heart.” With that, she stared at him and gently sighed: “Your talents are peerless and I trust that one day, myriad worlds will tremble because of you. I am weak and won’t amount to much by staying at your side. You already have great people like Shuangyan and Baojiao, so me staying by your side is akin to embroidering flowers already on fine silk.”

“My presence is not necessary.” She continued on: “So it is better to stay at my school and be friends with you. In the future, I will be content if you come visit me whenever you are at the Barren Earth.”

Having said that, she sighed again with an inexplicable melancholic expression. She understood that she was giving up many things with this choice. However, she stood by it.

“Everyone has their own wishes. I will not force the issue.” Li Qiye nodded: “It is also my honor to have known you.”

Ye Chuyun smiled warmly. She was the snow melting in spring and quietly soothed the heart.

As they traveled on their boat, there was a lot of fun along the way. This particular day, the tiny waves swayed the tiny ship. Li Qiye was seated at the bow to savor the view. Meanwhile, Ye Chuyun sat to the side and controlled the fire nearby to brew him tea.

No matter the high winds or strong tides, the two of them sat on the boat as if they were within their own comfy room.

Suddenly, Li Qiye's eyes narrowed before speaking: "Since you are already here, show yourself!"

"Brother Li is unbeatable, please excuse Suyao." A very pleasant voice that could cause the souls of others to flutter rang out. This voice was like a fine wine; people would become lost within the taste.

A woman drifted onto the small boat. The sun and moon became listless and the flowers lost their colors upon her arrival. She was as transcendent as an immortal and would cause people to wonder if she was a fairy lost in the mortal world.

However, despite her supreme style, Li Qiye only glanced at her once without caring too much.

She landed on the boat and slightly bowed towards Ye Chuyun: "Miss Ye, please excuse my sudden visit."

Ye Chuyun looked at the woman ahead who was capable of inciting inferiority in all other girls in this world and responded: "You are too polite, Goddess Mei. Welcome to our humble vessel."

The newcomer was world-renowned. It was the enchanting Mei Suyao who was called Goddess Mei by others — the goddess in many young men's minds!

Ye Chuyun invited her down as the host and seated her opposite

to Li Qiye.

Her glistening eyes were like flowing water, causing the world to calm. The winds stopped and the tides receded. It was as if she had a peerless charm that was harmonious with the rhythm of the world.

This scene meant that Mei Suyao was already powerful to a fearful level. Although she was not showing her aura, the ones who were more discerning would be shocked from seeing this!

“Brother Li, I was out of line earlier, please forgive me.” Mei Suyao was a goddess. Her words could immediately win people over: “I was not trying to gauge you and am only here to avoid chaos.”

Li Qiye was indifferent to Mei Suyao. He had met all kinds of supreme women, so she couldn’t charm him. He looked her up and down as if he was enjoying each of her curves.

Such an action could be said to be extremely rude and frivolously perverted. Any outsider would yell at Li Qiye.

However, Mei Suyao did not become angry. She calmly met his gaze and let him enjoy looking at her in such a meticulous manner.

Keep in mind that Mei Suyao was very famous right now. Her cultivation had reached an unfathomable level. Her beauty was kingdom-toppling; countless young geniuses were in love with her

in the Mortal Emperor World.

They would treat her with utmost respect and wouldn't act in such a callous manner.

"It has been a while and you have become much more beautiful. Even I have to like you." Li Qiye judged her and gently nodded.

No matter how calm she was, her face contained a faint hint of red upon hearing these words, but it quickly passed away.

"Don't get me wrong, I am not praising your beauty." Li Qiye stared at her and smiled: "It looks like you are no longer running around as a saintess. Good, this is an improvement."

She was indeed different from before. Back then, no matter where she went, there would be countless visions accompanying her steps. However, there was nothing this time, as if she has returned to the origin.

"Thank you for your kind words." Mei Suyao bowed with her soft figure and spoke: "It is all thanks to you that I have reached this level. Your words woke me up from my dream, and I have greatly benefited from them."

"Enlightenment is good so that you won't put the Alaya Fragrance Dao to waste." Li Qiye nodded and leisurely accepted her gesture.

With that, he stared at her and asked: “You didn’t run all around the world for no reason, right? Why are you here at the Barren Earth?”

In the Mortal Emperor World, Mei Suyao’s status was extremely noble. No one would dare to question her in such a rude manner!

Chapter 943: Captivating Goddess

She maintained her unrivaled charm in the face of the boorish question: “Why do you think I came with a purpose?”

Her words contained an unspeakable charm and elegance. They were beyond the boundaries of the mundane world. Each of her tempting words and actions could make others lose their minds.

Li Qiye coldly glared at her: “Girl, don’t try that trick in front of me. Your style is indeed captivatingly beautiful, but don’t play with fire. If you keep on tempting me, I will strip you clean!”

Ye Chuyun couldn’t help but wryly smile at such offensive words. No one had ever said something like this to Mei Suyao besides Li Qiye.

Mei Suyao blushed and felt a bit helpless in her mind in addition to a strange sense of defeat. Even though she was not the flirtatious type, she still had complete confidence in her charm. In her opinion, not many would be able to escape her temptation.

However, Li Qiye didn’t seem to care at all. In his eyes, she was no different from other women. She didn’t know whether to feel angry or sad because of this.

In the end, she only softly sighed. Even her sigh was moving enough to win many sympathizers.

Li Qiye did not budge. He nonchalantly looked at her and asked again: “Girl, why are you here?”

“This matter is supposed to be confidential, but Brother Li is not a stranger so it is okay to tell you.” Although she lost her cool a bit earlier, she quickly regained her flawless style.

Li Qiye smiled and leisurely said: “Should I feel honored that you are treating me as one of your own? Or, in other words, should I take you in as my bed warmer? What do you think?”

Mei Suyao smiled wryly while saying in her soft voice: “Brother Li, can you spare me?” She let go of her posturing and said: “I was rash last time and offended you. If you are still mad at me, then go ahead, I will accept the punishment.”

At this time, she was relaxed and had a delicate attitude. Any man would feel pity after seeing her. When a supreme beauty like her said the words “I will accept the punishment”, it would be too much for any man to bear. They would immediately be conquered by her!

“Incredible.” Li Qiye had to praise after seeing her moment of weakness: “Girl, you may not be as talented as Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui, but you have an exquisite style. I’m afraid even the empress was not a match for you when she was young.”

Mei Suyao stood up and bowed after hearing his praise: “Your praise gives me great happiness. It is more than enough for me to hear you compare me to the Matriarch.”

“Okay, girl. Your means are indeed brilliant. Out of consideration for your sensibility this time, I won’t make things difficult for you.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve.

She sat down again and regained her transcendent nature that would be loved by anyone.

“I won’t hide it from you, I came to the southern region this time for the Buddhist Funeral Plateau.” Mei Suyao purposely showed a weak side of her: “According to the speculation of my sect’s elders, someone might ascend this time.”

“Ascend?” Ye Chuyun was startled and asked: “Ascend like in the legends?”

Mei Suyao slightly nodded: “Yes, and this time, it might not be just one person. There might be a second and even a third.”

The surprised Ye Chuyun asked: “Isn’t the legendary ascension even more difficult than becoming Immortal Emperor?” She had heard of ascension before, but she didn’t think she would be able to see it in this generation.

“Not necessarily.” Mei Suyao explained: “Ascension is a secret that belongs to the plateau. For some people, ascension is easy and hard at the same time. It depends.”

No one understood more about ascension than Li Qiye. He was

not too interested in this and was more drawn in by other matters at the plateau. He glanced over at Mei Suyao then asked: “Girl, go ahead and let the rest out. Would ascension alone garner so much of your attention? You have obtained a legacy so ascension shouldn’t be of interest to you.”

“Brother Li’s eyes are as bright as divine torches, nothing can elude your sight.” Mei Suyao charmingly spoke: “The ascension this time might have something to do with my Eternal River School. I came hoping to obtain [elucidation](#). It will be very beneficial.”

Elucidation is true understanding or enlightenment in this case. Enlightenment is used too much so I’m going with elucidation. Verity was the other choice.

“Eternal River School...” Li Qiye narrowed his eyes and contemplated for a second. For the past millions of years, who from the school went to the plateau, and who among them could ascend?

“So to say, the old geezers from your school know who is about to ascend?” Li Qiye revealed a faint smile.

Mei Suyao shook her head: “Truth be told, I don’t know either. Brother Li should know that once someone enters the plateau, it is the same as abandoning all else. Although many seniors of our school have entered the plateau in the past millions of years, we have never received any news of them.”

“I believe the elder’s words on ascension are just wild

speculation. They are not certain either.” Mei Suyao spoke seriously: “Because the matter this time is of grave importance, I have to personally come to take a look.”

“Ascension...” Li Qiye only smiled. In his eyes, the elucidation left behind by ascension was not much either.

Mei Suyao noticed his expression and asked: “You aren’t interested?”

Li Qiye casually replied: “Ascension is no big deal. I don’t need something like elucidation or else I wouldn’t be waiting till now to try for it.”

Mei Suyao softly asked: “You don’t want to take a look at the Nalanda Temple?” When she spoke in this gentle manner, everyone would feel their whole body melting. Even a cold glacier or a heart of steel would soften.

Li Qiye smirked. Even though it might be a prohibitive task to others, entering the temple was not difficult to him. He looked back at Mei Suyao and asked: “Girl, you should be saying that you want to climb to the temple.”

Mei Suyao was not embarrassed at all after being found out. She freely said: “Yes, I do want to reach the Nalanda Temple!” She met his gaze and said: “I had this idea after coming across you today by accident. We can work together to climb to the temple.”

“Work together?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “Girl, you look down me, Li Qiye, too much. If I wanted to reach the temple, I wouldn’t need to work with anyone. As long as I am willing, it doesn’t matter if the temple was as deep as an ocean, I could still come and go freely!”

Anyone else would think that Li Qiye was blustering and didn’t know any better. The Nalanda Temple was a place that Godkings wouldn’t tread. Even an Immortal Emperor had to be careful, let alone a mere junior!

Mei Suyao took a deep breath and smiled while glancing at Li Qiye. Her smile was more charming than blooming flowers, putting them all to shame.

Her current expression could drive people crazy; she softly spoke while exuding her charm: “How about I shamelessly go with you to the Nalanda Temple?”

It wasn’t easy for her who was always noble and unreachable to make such a comment. In fact, she had the power to reach Nalanda as well. However, she chose Li Qiye due to her strong confidence in him!

“Go with you? Girl, I know you can reach there by yourself. What is in it for me if I take you with me?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh after hearing this suggestion.

Mei Suyao smiled like a flower ready to bloom. Her words were full of temptation: “If you are willing, I will lend you a helping

hand. The same goes for my Eternal River School!”

Her words had a hidden connotation since she spoke on the behalf of the entire school. Anyone’s heart would beat faster after gaining the support of the river school, a mighty existence with three emperors. Its support was the same as adding wings to a tiger, especially for the younger generation. It would open up a path of unlimited potential!

Chapter 944: Spank Your Sweet Buttocks

“Girl, I am not interested in your river school’s support.” Li Qiye only chuckled at this enticing offer: “Of course, I can think about you following me into Nalanda.”

He paused to look at her before continuing: “Naturally, my willingness to take you is not because I like you or because of how beautiful you are. It is simply out of consideration for your Matriarch, Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui, got it?”

“I truly appreciate your help..” Mei Suyao quickly stood up to thank him regardless of whether he would say yes or not.

“Go. To tell the truth, I’ve grown a bit bored.” Li Qiye looked at her with one eye and gently waved his sleeve.

Ye Chuyun was surprised to hear this. Mei Suyao’s beauty was renowned across the world. Countless people in the younger generation, including supreme geniuses, would be willing to stay with her. It could even be said to be a dream of many. But now, Li Qiye was the complete opposite; he was tired of Mei Suyao. It was simply unbelievable for a beauty like her to be treated in this manner.

Mei Suyao didn’t seem to mind. She still bowed elegantly and smiled: “Just let me know if you ever need me, I won’t say no.” The soft words from the supreme beauty of this generation were completely irresistible to anyone.

Li Qiye looked at her then gestured for her to come over with his fingers: “Girl, come here.”

“Brother Li has some advice?” Mei Suyao came closer and tilted her head. She was truly too beautiful. Each of her actions and gestures would cause one’s soul to sway.

When she tilted her head closer, she was within his reach. Her exposed bare neck accentuated her black hair that fluttered in the breeze, carrying an elegant fragrance that made the heart beat faster.

Such a scene couldn’t be described with words. It was a perfect picture. Even Ye Chuyun marveled while watching on the side. She was really too beautiful.

Ye Chuyun was also known as a great beauty. However, there was quite a sizable gap between her and Mei Suyao. No matter how pretty she might be, she paled before Mei Suyao.

In the blink of an eye, Mei Suyao fell into Li Qiye’s chest.

“Pop! Pa! Pa!” Li Qiye’s hand slapped her round and sweet buttocks like a storm.

She screamed like a cat that had had its tail stepped on and immediately jumped up. Her usual supreme grace was nowhere to be found, only fear and anger were left amidst the confusion.

“What are you doing...” She cried out after jumping up. Regardless of the circumstance or the peril, she could always stay calm with a matchless attitude, but not this time.

This was her first time being treated as frivolously as this. No, it was the second time. The first time was by Li Qiye as well!

Contrary to her shocked demeanor, Li Qiye was still acting leisurely as he looked at her and said: “Girl, I’ll show you the right path. If you want to seduce me, there’s no need to act in such an amorous manner. Just obediently listen to me and I’ll consider taking you in. As for this type of cautious, deliberate scheming, it is time to stop!”

“There’s no need to try to break my dao heart.” Li Qiye chuckled: “I am not a goal you can overcome, you don’t have the ability to steal my heart. Just think it through and be obedient, then I can consider taking you in. After all, we had a physical connection before, so I don’t want someone else to take a beautiful woman like you! However, if you have other plans, then get away from me or else I won’t show mercy in plucking a flower!”

“You...” Mei Suyao was ashamed and extremely embarrassed. It could be said that this was the first time she had been so mistreated.

Ye Chuyun was also shocked to hear about the physical connection between the two. Those words would make the imagination of others run wild.

“I am someone who is not overly cruel to women.” Li Qiye dismissively said: “On the contrary, I have always been willing to favor women. However, this is under the condition that they do not scheme before me.”

Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed: “If, say, you want some benefits from me or if you want to influence my actions, this isn’t difficult. You just need to do one thing, and that is to listen to me! I will bring you unimaginable benefits! However, if you want to use the honey trap or schemes to manipulate me, girl, you are still too young. You aren’t qualified and you also don’t have the power to do so...

“... Be good and listen. I won’t care for other matters. I will be considerate of Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui and grant great benefits to both you and the river school!”

His eyes turned cold at this point: “However, if you or the river school have any ideas or plans, then watch it or else I’ll take a trip to the school! It won’t be so easy to get me to leave at that point!”

Li Qiye was straightforward enough in his warning towards Mei Suyao.

Mei Suyao and Ye Chuyun by the side both turned silent. Ye Chuyun found that she wouldn’t know what to do in this difficult situation either.

For others, Mei Suyao was a high above existence akin to a goddess. No one would dare to disrespect her, but Li Qiye didn’t care for any of this and did as he pleased.

“I was wrong.” Mei Suyao bowed and said: “If Brother Li wants to scold me, then do it. I am willing to accept your punishment!”

This time, she was full of sincerity without the same provocative chord from earlier. Nevertheless, she was still as beautiful as ever. It was natural to her very being.

“Forget it.” Li Qiye looked at her and recalled a few people. He said: “Go. In the future, be direct with me. Don’t play around with these tricks.”

Mei Suyao sighed in disappointment. She bowed one more time and gave him one last glance before leaving. She drifted into the sky and disappeared in the horizon in just a second.

“Brother Li, Goddess Mei likes you.” Ye Chuyun, who had been silent the whole time, commented.

Li Qiye only smiled and shook his head: “Whether she likes me or not doesn’t matter. There are many who like me and many who hate me. Beauties who like me or even those who I like will be destroyed if they foolishly scheme before me!”

Ye Chuyun sighed softly as well. This was a matter between Li Qiye and Mei Suyao, it was not her place to comment on it.

However, she was very curious. In fact, anyone who knew that these two had a physical connection before wouldn’t be able to

contain their curiosity about what had actually transpired.

“If someone is ascending in the plateau, do you want to go and see?” Ye Chuyun changed the subject.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Chuyun, the ascension isn’t important to me, but if you want elucidation from the process, I can take you there and grab a piece for you.”

Ye Chuyun quietly replied: “I don’t dare to ask for the elucidation, just let it be up to fate.”

Li Qiye gently nodded as well. If ascension was going to happen again at the plateau, then it would definitely cause a great storm this time as well.

After Mei Suyao left, the two continued forward on their boat. They met many people in the last two days; most were young prodigies of the cultivation world.

They came very quickly with different styles and uniforms. Some of them wore crowns while riding their chariots in the sky while others stood on their flying swords to cross the horizon. A few of them even came with great fanfare from their entourage...

“I heard Goddess Mei appeared at the Holy City, we have to go take a look!” These people were in a rush because of Mei Suyao. All were her admirers.

Mei Suyao's southward trip was very low-key this time, but she was simply too famous and was regarded as the number one beauty. Even if she tried to keep a low profile, others would notice her.

Thus, these young prodigies all scrambled in her direction just to catch a glimpse of her face. In the Mortal Emperor World, many youths that were enchanted by her would risk it all just to do so.

"Goddess Mei's charm is boundless." Ye Chuyun commented with feelings after seeing these prodigies give chase.

Li Qiye chuckled in response: "The Eternal River School has always produced charming beauties. Their Matriarch, Immortal Emperor Xiu Shui, was a supreme woman. This is part of the school's strength."

Ye Chuyun agreed. She had heard legends about the emperor who swayed all existences in the nine worlds.

The two of them traveled in their usual manner on their boat and finally reached the Holy City. They reached the shore and walked the rest of the distance.

Chapter 945: Holy City

The first thing people saw while looking towards the direction of the Holy City was not the establishments themselves, but a huge mountain range. The city was erected right next to this mountain range.

The city was quite large, but it was like a small boulder compared to this mountain range, like a little boat in the middle of a vast ocean.

People called this place the Hidden-dragon Mountains. It spanned for millions of miles like a dragon lying on top of the endless Barren Earth.

The Holy City was tastefully simple and architecturally unadorned. It seemed to have experienced the weathering of countless years but still stood strong.

There was a saying in the Mortal Emperor World — Descent in the East, Holy in the South. This was referring to Descent City in the Eastern Hundred Cities and Holy City in the Barren Earth.

Rumor has it that the Holy City used to be called [Heavenwatch](#) City, but later on, cultivators never dared to act wildly in this city, so it became a land of peace. Eventually, people came to call it the Holy City instead.

Similar motif to Heavenguard, but a different word.

On top of its simplistic style, an endless auspicious air permeated the space above the city all the way into the firmament. A violet aura sometimes condensed in the sky. Needless to say, there were gigantic trees in the area, painting a verdant picture. Waterfalls fell from the sky alongside the palaces and floating peaks above...

Outsiders had never heard of any unbeatable sect or imperial lineage in the Holy City. Only some clans were mentioned at best. However, they would be sorely mistaken if they looked down on the Holy City for this reason! The Holy City was the gathering spot of the human race and was considered to be on the same level as the Eastern Descent City; these were the two biggest enclaves of the human race in the Mortal Emperor World.

Here existed the bases of the most ancient clans while sects and lineages were not as imminent. For example, one could only hear about a few clans such as the Cao Clan. However, those who understood the city knew that these quiet clans had existed for countless years. They were even older than some imperial lineages.

According to the tales, for many generations now, quite a few Immortal Emperors had visited the Holy City. Moreover, they never showed off their auras here and only came like ordinary people.

Even Immortal Emperors didn't want to disturb the peace of this place. After arriving, they would come to look at the old remnants of the wise sages.

Because of this legend, the Holy City had always been tranquil. Even those who had feuds would not fight inside the city. They

would go outside to settle the score instead.

While standing before the gates of the Holy City, one would see another rolling mountain range in front of them. It was extremely majestic and magnificent, rendering the spectators breathless by weighing down on their hearts. This spectacular mountain range was a beloved topic of the inhabitants of this world — the Godwar Mountains; it is said that a battle between deities had taken place here!

Li Qiye softly sighed while looking at the distant Holy City. He turned around and saw the Godwar Mountains behind him and his mind became even heavier.

After the final battle that year, rivers of blood ran rampant and mountains made of corpses occupied this land. Eventually, a new dawn was ushered into the nine worlds, signaling the end of the Ancient Ming Era.

Back then, after looking at the generals and wise sages who survived to walk out from the ruins, he asked with a heavy heart: “Where shall you all go from here?”

After a long silence, some generals wanted to continue following him while others wanted to return home at last. A portion of the army said: “We are willing to guard this land to protect the last light of dawn for the Mortal Emperor World!”

Since then, a battalion of this army stayed behind in this land and started their own families. They built a gigantic citadel and

gave it the name, Heavenwatch! It wasn't until much later that it became known as the Holy City.

This was not a pleasant feeling for Li Qiye as he stared at the Godwar Mountains. The most gifted and brilliant geniuses along with many invincible wise sages followed him to battle back in that era.

However, a countless number of them died here. It didn't matter if one was a blessed son or daughter of the heavens or a wise sage, if one fell in battle, another would take their place. Because of them opening the path with their blood and lives, the army was able to stop one wave of attack after another from the Ancient Ming's forces!

That war was too tragic. Their enemies were not only Godkings but even Immortal Emperors! In the end, they were victorious and even Immortal Emperors were defeated. The new golden era began for the nine worlds!

“Brother Li, are we entering the city?” Ye Chuyun gently asked after seeing Li Qiye's dazed state.

Li Qiye's mind eventually returned. He looked at Ye Chuyun before shaking his head: “You go in first, I want to go to someplace for a bit. I'll meet up with you later.”

“Okay, I have to meet a senior anyway.” Ye Chuyun was very sensible with her answer: “Just let me know when you are free.”

Li Qiye slightly nodded. Ye Chuyun didn't say anything else and bade farewell before entering the city with haste.

Li Qiye sighed and determined his next destination, then he headed towards a certain peak.

There were many hills between the Holy City and the Godwar Mountains. In fact, the path to enter the city required crossing these hills.

Many people lived on these numerous and spiritual hills. They built their own little towns. Both cultivators and mortals entering or leaving the Holy City could rest at these places.

Apricot Peak was among these hills. This pretty peak was of average size and already had a master. There was an old expansive courtyard. The word "Xu" was inscribed on a tablet by the entrance.

Meanwhile, at the bottom of the peak was another old building. It was a winehouse that also had a plaque with the word "Xu" in front of the door, swaying with the breeze.

Apricot Peak's Xu was a small clan. However, this winehouse that was so humble in size seemed to be timeless.

Both mortals and cultivators coming by this place would stop for a drink at the winehouse for a bit. Every once in awhile, someone would ask the old shopkeeper: "Were any of your ancestors

cultivators?”

It was not strange to ask this question because at the Holy City and even the thousands of miles surrounding it, many mortals' ancestors used to be cultivators.

The old shopkeeper only smiled and never answered this type of question.

One could smell the strong fragrance of liquor the moment they entered Apricot Peak. This was the same for Li Qiye. Smelling this familiar fragrance made many emotions emerge in his mind. He didn't know what to say at this moment.

“Xu Clan's aged wine, such a memorable and nostalgic smell.” Li Qiye murmured.

The Xu's winehouse had been here for a long time. By the time the youths nearby began to be aware of their surroundings, the winehouse had already been around. After so many years, it continued to prosper for generation after generation.

There weren't that many customers when Li Qiye stepped inside. Outside of several mortals drinking away, there were only one or two cultivators resting.

The shopkeeper immediately greeted him. Li Qiye went to the second floor and sat down by a window.

Li Qiye was somewhat absent-minded while looking at Apricot Peak outside. The shopkeeper asked him: “Sir, what would you like?”

Li Qiye calmed down and looked at the old shopkeeper and his familiar face before sighing. A descendant of the Xu Clan... He ordered: “Get me a bottle of wine and some snacks.”

The shopkeeper confirmed what Li Qiye wanted and was about to leave, but Li Qiye called him back and spoke with a soft voice: “Is your Xu Clan still doing well? How are the children?”

The old shopkeeper turned around and didn’t find this question strange. He said with a smile: “Sir, thanks to everyone’s blessings, my Xu Clan has been running this restaurant for a very long time now. Although we don’t have that many children, they are full of filial piety.”

“That’s good, that’s good.” Li Qiye nodded gently.

Li Qiye sighed once more while watching the old shopkeeper leave. Xu Clan... In that distant era, it was such a powerful and prosperous clan.

It was mighty to a fearful level. Even Godkings from the Ancient Ming Clan wouldn’t dare to provoke it.

When he decided to attack the Ancient Ming, he had tried to lobby many people. The Xu Clan’s ancestor was the first to answer

his call. Moreover, the whole clan and its disciples joined in this drawn-out war!

At the moment of final victory, the Xu Clan only had the ancestor and their youngest daughter left. Li Qiye always became dejected when he recalled the little girl.

She was a very lively girl with exceedingly high talents. After the war, she became withdrawn and quiet, like a completely different person! She had lost too much during that cold war and couldn't bear the shock.

Later on, he came to see the girl several times and saw how a lively girl became a silent shadow. The wounds of war wouldn't heal, causing his heart to feel uncomfortable every time they met!

Chapter 946: Half-Moon Princess

After the end of the Godwar, the Dark Crow asked the Xu Ancestor about his future path. The ancestor looked at his little girl ravaged by war and absently sighed: “I only want to be a mortal. The Xu Clan is done for, but I still want to continue its bloodline. I hope that our descendants will be mortals who can finally enjoy peace. That is all I ask for.”

Later on, Li Qiye found this Apricot Peak and let them settle down here. The Xu Clan from then on no longer embarked on the path of cultivation. They lived ordinary mortal lives from one generation to the next.

Li Qiye began to think by the window. There were times when mortals envied cultivators who were able to fly without limits. Meanwhile, war-ravaged cultivators sometimes envied the peaceful lives of mortals.

A while later, the shopkeeper brought out some aged wine along with some snacks. Li Qiye stopped gazing out the window and poured himself a cup.

However, at this second, his attention shifted to someone else. In a corner of the second floor was an old man slightly quivering. He appeared to be very anxious, wanting nothing more than to burrow underground.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile upon seeing this old man. He was all too familiar with the fella.

He wore a gray robe with a very wacky paper hat. It was covered in a layer of grease and dust. Who knew how long he had worn this hat for? He seemed to be a harmless old man with nothing special about him.

However, Li Qiye remembered him and knew his background as well. Back in the Ancient Street, this old man had shown up before and Li Qiye even opened a stone chest for him.

The meeting was different this time. The old man was very cautious of Li Qiye and didn't dare to stare at him. He had the urge to run, but he didn't dare to act recklessly when Li Qiye's eyes were on him.

Li Qiye chuckled and dismissively said: "It seems like you have a good nose."

The old man had a helpless expression and was frozen on the spot; he didn't know what to do. Remember that he was someone who could easily give away a Virtuous Paragon True Treasure. It was easy to imagine his might.

But now, this old man understood something very clearly. No matter how powerful he was, he was naught but an ant before Li Qiye, unworthy of being mentioned! Despite his power, his awareness of the great secret left him helpless.

While this old man was at an impasse, gentle steps came from downstairs. Shortly after, a fair lady came to the second floor.

The whole floor turned bright upon her arrival as if she was a jewel. She carried the aura of water while wearing a moon-colored dress. There was a little crescent moon on her forehead. It didn't diminish her beauty and instead made her even more dazzling.

“Half-moon Princess!” The two cultivators who were resting on the first floor were shocked and left right away in fear.

The Half-moon Princess was an illustrious existence in the Barren Earth, a great genius. Her eyes swept through the second floor and noticed Li Qiye. She then sat down in front of him without any hesitation.

The old man heaved a sigh of relief after seeing this. The embarrassing situation was finally alleviated by the princess' arrival.

“Please excuse this little one, Sir. Do take your time.” The old man bowed and quickly left the second floor.

After sitting down, the princess spoke: “You must be Li Qiye.”

Li Qiye smiled in response: “I'm under the impression that I am the only one who can be called Li Qiye.”

“Hmph, cease your glib tongue.” The princess coldly spoke: “I'm asking you, are you that Li Qiye who is going around together with Ye Chuyun?!”

Li Qiye glanced at her and answered: “According to your description, I am indeed that Li Qiye.”

“Very good, then I have found the right person.” The princess slightly nodded while posturing without being too aggressive. It seemed that she was prideful by nature and considered herself superior to others.

Li Qiye only smiled and ignored her. He poured himself another cup and continued drinking. This hot wine tasted like nectar, prompting Li Qiye to smack his lips approvingly.

After so many years, the Xu Clan’s aged wine still had the same memorable taste. Back then, the Xu Ancestor was not only an invincible existence but also a fine winemaker.

Li Qiye ate the different snacks and continued to act indifferent to the Half-moon Princess sitting in front of him.

The princess’ expression turned cold at this show of disdain. She snorted unhappily but still managed to hold back her displeasure.

She stared at him and slowly spoke: “I heard that you and Ye Chuyun are a couple...”

Li Qiye raised his brows and said: “There’s no need to walk in circles, just fart it out. I am in a good mood right now and do not wish to be disturbed.”

“You!” The princess’ expression quickly shifted as she glared at him. In her eyes, Li Qiye was only an unknown junior. She didn’t know why Ye Chuyun would think highly of this nobody. Moreover, he even belonged to the ugly type — just a commoner!

“Li Qiye, do you know who I am?” She asked drily.

He kept on munching the snacks and took his time sipping the wine. He didn’t bother looking at her while answering: “I don’t have to look to know who you are. I can easily smell the foul stench belonging to your Blood-devil Race.”

“Ignorant fool!” The princess was angered by this response and shouted: “Li Qiye, you speak such insulting words, are you tired of living?!”

Li Qiye brushed her off and waved his sleeve to say: “Okay, stop blabbering. If you have something to say, then say it or get the hell out of my sight.”

The princess was shaking with rage. She was a princess of the Blood-devil Race and praised as one of the five saints in the Barren Earth. But now, a nobody like this acting so contemptuously made her almost grit her teeth to dust. If it wasn’t for her wanting to keep Li Qiye alive, she would have ended him already.

She remembered her business and took a deep breath before coldly staring at him: “Li, marry Ye Chuyun and I will give you some nice benefits!”

This offer made Li Qiye, who was enjoying his wine, stop for a bit. He slowly placed his cup on the table and finally looked at the princess while smiling: “A bit interesting.”

“Will you do it or not?” The princess glared at him.

Li Qiye met her glare and smiled: “Why do you think Miss Ye will marry me?”

She scowled in response before taking another good look at him. The truth was that she didn't see anything special about him at all. Ye Chuyun being a couple with such a man was simply the result of her being blind.

“A woman in love is simply indecipherable. Use this chance right now while you two are madly in love to propose and win her hand in marriage. If you marry Ye Chuyun, then you will be a carp jumping over the dragon gate. You will be the son-in-law of the Pure Lotus School, then you can call for winds and rain as you please.” The princess smiled.

She was a beautiful girl, so her smile resembled the blossoming of many flowers.

Li Qiye played with his cup and leisurely smiled: “Hearing you has made my heart thump. So, what's in it for you if I marry Miss Ye?”

The princess snorted in response: “No need to ask! If you marry Ye Chuyun, I will grant you one treasure and a bottle of pills. Think about it, why would you not partake in this endeavor? It’s simply killing two birds with one stone.”

“I got it.” Li Qiye looked at her and smiled: “The man you like must like Miss Ye instead, so you want nothing more than for her to marry me so that the other man will give up, then you would have a chance to jump in, right?”

“Such a big mouth!” The princess shouted with a changed expression.

Li Qiye glared at her and said: “Keep in mind that it is you asking me, not the other way around!”

“You!” The princess wasn’t happy at this moment. However, she still took a deep breath and looked Li Qiye in the eye: “Do you want to marry her or not?!”

“It’s none of your business.” Li Qiye shook his head.

The princess was still quite angry, but she endured it: “Li Qiye, this is a godsend for you. If you marry Ye Chuyun, I will even give you a nice bride token. With that, you will be worthy of Ye Chuyun. Just marry her and you will be able to enjoy the rest of your life.”

“Alright, I understand your intentions now.” Li Qiye smiled:

“However, my business needs no meddling from outsiders. Please go back.”

The princess' expression turned cold. Someone with a status as prestigious as hers coming to discuss this with Li Qiye was already a humble gesture, yet Li Qiye dared to not give her any face!

The princess drily said: “Li Qiye, I am showing you respect by presenting these conditions directly. Otherwise, you wouldn't be sitting here right now.”

Chapter 947: Arcane Guru

Li Qiye's eyes narrowed after hearing the princess' threat. He smiled in response: "Oh? Playing nice didn't work so it's time for force?"

The princess coldly responded: "If you already know the Blood-devil Tribe, then you should know how powerful we are, especially my Half-moon branch!"

The Blood-devil Tribe was one of the strongest branches of the Blood Race. Its influence was great in the Barren Earth. It had thirty-five lineages and fourteen countries. Moreover, it had produced three Immortal Emperors!

The Half-moon Blood Tribe was one of the thirty-five lineages. They had a decent grasp in the southern region as well.

"So what?" Li Qiye wasn't interested and didn't bother to glance back at her.

The princess retorted: "If I wanted to make things difficult for you, there wouldn't be a need for me to personally do so. With just a single word, there would be no peace for you in the Barren Earth — a fate worse than death!"

"Okay, I got your message and heard your nonsense." Li Qiye drank his wine and lazily spoke: ", Now scram before I have the urge to kill."

“You!” The princess immediately stood up with a murderous glint in her eyes. However, Li Qiye still didn’t bother looking at her.

He continued to slowly savor his wine as if the princess didn’t exist in his eyes.

In the end, the princess didn’t make a move. She took another deep breath and stated: “You better think it over then find me once you change your mind. If you want to marry Ye Chuyun, my Half-moon Blood Tribe can help you.” With that, she turned around and quickly disappeared.

Li Qiye only smiled after seeing her leave and murmured: “Not too foolish after all.” He continued to drink and snack afterward.

A while later when the bottle was half empty, Li Qiye slowly spoke: “Okay, you can come up now. Stop hiding down there.”

With thumping steps, someone came up. It was the mysterious old man wearing the paper hat from earlier. He didn’t leave and instead continued to stay downstairs since he didn’t dare to linger without Li Qiye’s permission.

He stood before Li Qiye with a very nervous expression. He didn’t know where to position his hands. The old fella was very powerful. Back in his era, his stomp could cause the clouds and winds to disperse, but now, he was very docile before Li Qiye.

Li Qiye stared at him and spoke: “I must say, you really are courageous, following in my footsteps everywhere and even digging up quite a few of my items.”

“My Lord, this lowly one only picked up the leftovers you left behind, please do not be angry.” The old man quickly prostrated.

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve in response: “Okay, stand up. If I really wanted to punish you, I wouldn’t have spared a little mouse like you back at the All Heaven Grotto, I would have killed you back in the Ancient Sky Street.”

“Thank you for showing mercy, My Lord.” The old man bowed again: “This old one committed the offense of being unable to recognize My Lord back in the Ancient Street, please punish me.”

“Can’t fault the unaware.” Li Qiye said: “However, you are quite capable, to be able to uncover my identity in such a short amount of time.”

The mysterious old man coughed and quickly said: “This lowly one has admired My Lord since childhood, especially when you spared me back at the All Heaven Grotto; your benevolence is unforgettable. I was still skeptical after the Ancient Street, so I tried to go back to find more information. I was thinking that this was the case, but I didn’t dare to offend My Lord and verify my findings.”

“Okay, I don’t blame you. It was a type of fate for you to be able

to slip into my All Heaven Grotto.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve: “Your continual search for my tales did not go unnoticed. It would have been simple for me to destroy you.”

The old man became a bit embarrassed as he smiled wryly: “My Lord is unbeatable across the eons, this lowly one only wanted to look for your old relics, that’s all. Back then, My Lord and the Black Dragon King loomed over the nine heavens while I could only gaze from afar.”

“Since you know who I am, you should know of my taboo creed.” Li Qiye leisurely drank his wine.

The old man quickly replied: “This lowly one understands. I will definitely not tell a third soul about My Lord’s matters. I can swear with my true fate!”

The old man’s words were not just for show. He actually swore with his true fate.

Li Qiye patted the table, allowing him to sit down. The old man sat down immediately after. Li Qiye looked at him and spoke: “If my memory serves me right, you were called the Arcane Young Emperor back then...”

The mysterious old man coughed in response: “My Lord, I was young and foolish back then. Because I came from a place called the Arcane Mountains, I took the title Arcane Young Emperor. During my youth, I tried to compete for the Immortal Emperor’s throne against Gu Zun, but after realizing that Immortal Emperor

Yin Tian was the person chosen by you, I knew better than to compete against My Lord and changed my name to Arcane [Guru](#).”

Raw translation is Heavenly Mysterious Old Man. Old Man here is a common daoist title, but it sounds funky as Old Man. Elder is taken, Sage is taken, and Guru seems to be an okay option here.

Immortal Emperor Yin Tian was the emperor before Immortal Emperor Ta Kong. He came from the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain!

“Gu Zun? Eligible to become emperor?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “He should be thanking the heaven and earth that I didn’t imprison him in the Blue Abyss, let alone try to obtain the Heaven’s Will!”

Arcane Guru laughed dryly. Although he knew a thing or two about this feud, he didn’t dare to comment on it since it was also one of the taboo subjects surrounding the Dark Crow!

“It seems that you have been running to many places in these last few years. Are you trying to excavate every location that I have been to?” Li Qiye asked.

The guru nervously touched his clothing and answered: “Ah, this lowly one does not intend on challenging My Lord’s prestige. I just have a bad habit and couldn’t help but follow in your footsteps.”

It turned out that Arcane Guru was a demonic mouse. Before he truly became strong, he was lucky enough to run into Li Qiye’s All Heaven Grotto and was captured by the Dark Crow.

That event frightened him completely. However, Li Qiye didn't kill him back then and only threw him out.

Later on, the guru grew extremely interested in the mythical Dark Crow and tried to find all the remnants left behind by him. This greatly benefited the guru since he was able to find items thrown away by Li Qiye.

This only further fueled his desire for the search. Any legends relating to the Dark Crow were quickly verified by him.

“So, is that why you are here?” Li Qiye looked at the guru.

The guru's expression quickly changed as he responded: “My Lord, this lowly one has no malicious intentions. I only came here by following a clue and have no desire to hurt anyone in this place. I can swear with my true fate!”

He was still afraid that Li Qiye might have misunderstood and continued on: “My Lord, although I have been following your footsteps, I never dared to break anything relating to you or the descendants of your followers. My Lord left behind many items; if they had an owner, I wouldn't dare to touch them...”

Li Qiye gazed at him for a while before nodding his head approvingly: “Very good, you know where I draw my bottom line.”

The guru heaved a sigh of relief after hearing this and had to

wipe the cold sweat off his forehead. Even though he was very powerful with the title of Young Emperor during his youth, he knew full well that this was an existence who could kill even Immortal Emperors. A guy like him was nothing in comparison.

“It seems like your tracking ability is not bad since you were able to chase me all the way to the Xu Clan.” Li Qiye looked at him: “How did you come to this result?”

“My Lord, this lowly one found some clues in the Hidden-dragon Mountains. I’ve read through many ancient books and know a little about the Xu Clan’s past, so I immediately came here to see.” The guru answered.

“Brilliant, to be able to find some clues from the Hidden-dragon Mountains.” Li Qiye continued: “What did you find?” Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed after asking.

The guru’s heart jolted. He immediately stood up and bowed again: “My Lord, I never had any ideas or thoughts about touching the Xu Clan. If you don’t believe me, I am willing to let you search through my sea of memories!”

The sea of memories was a cultivator’s biggest secret. Anyone would prefer losing their life over letting someone else see the depths of their mind.

However, Arcane Guru was willing. His achievements today were due to Li Qiye since he obtained many things by tracing Li Qiye’s footsteps, including merit laws, treasures, and his knowledge...

In a certain sense, he was given everything by Li Qiye!

Li Qiye gently nodded: “Very well, it is good that you understand. If you came here following my footsteps, you should be aware of the Holy City’s significance as well as the Xu Clan’s past! For anyone who touches the Xu Clan, I will exterminate their nine clans or even ten clans!”

“This little one understands.” Arcane Guru solemnly replied. He knew that these were not empty words! As long as Li Qiye was willing, exterminating the nine clans of someone only required a single command!

Li Qiye gently tapped on the table and spoke: “Okay, sit back down. You must have found something in the mountains to be able to trace me to this place.”

Chapter 948: Crimson Night Duke

After the old man took a seat, he continued: “Tell me, what did you find?”

The guru rubbed his palms nervously and smiled: “I chased after this clue for a very long time and finally, at the mountains, I was able to find something that My Lord left behind back then.”

Li Qiye looked at him with one eye: “If it was only a clue, then it shouldn’t be enough for you to trace it back to this place. You must have found something, I’m listening.”

The guru quickly fixed his attitude. He understood that there was no point in hiding anything before Li Qiye. Nothing in this world could elude his gaze. It was a pair of eyes that shone like eternal flames, illuminating the eons.

He took a deep breath and answered: “My Lord, others would find this ridiculous, but I’m sure My Lord knows the reason. I heard the beating of a fetus back in the mountains. If I wasn’t in full search mode, I wouldn’t have been able to hear it!”

“A natal beat?” Li Qiye’s eyes became serious after hearing this.

The Hidden-dragon Mountains hid a great secret. In the past, the [Dark](#) Dragon Dynasty established a supreme foundation in this location. There was a good reason for it — this secret was worth salivating over.

Dark here is Ming. It is an Ancient Ming Dynasty. Long Ming or Dark Dragon is an emperor as well.

Looking at Li Qiye's expression was enough to let the Guru immediately understand that Li Qiye already knew this secret. It was just like the old stories, nothing in this world was unknown to Li Qiye. He quickly spoke: "I found it very strange the first time I heard this beat as well. Later on, I checked many ancient records about your tales..."

"... Eventually, I came across one writing that related to this legend. I suddenly had a bold speculation that this was something My Lord left behind. After more research and guesses, I eventually traced the clue to this location." The guru told Li Qiye everything he knew.

"A natal beat..." Li Qiye murmured to himself and looked out the window.

While Li Qiye was silent, loud noises came from below. A young man adorned in a fancy robe came to the second floor. His entrance illuminated the entire room.

He had a powerful aura with the style of a noble. His blood energy was rich like a surging river. It was easy to see that he had a noble and powerful bloodline.

There were more than ten followers immediately behind him. All of them wore the same uniform and had extraordinary presences, showing that they came from a great lineage.

The young man immediately walked towards Li Qiye and sat down in front of him. Although he showed no signs of contempt, a hint of arrogance was in the air.

“I am the Crimson Night Duke from the Crimson Night Kingdom.” He introduced himself slowly.

Anyone else would palpitate after hearing this. Crimson Night was a famous lineage in the Barren Earth with two emperors. Meanwhile, this duke was the ruler of a whole region. His backing was quite prominent, allowing him to be considered highborn.

“And?” Li Qiye reacted nonchalantly to this introduction.

The duke glared at Li Qiye and lowered his tone: “I want to know what the Half-moon Princess came to you for! Tell me everything without leaving out a single detail!”

Li Qiye couldn't help but laugh: “I got it, so you like that lady. Moreover, it is beyond your control now.”

The duke's handsome face sank after hearing this. He quickly threatened Li Qiye: “No nonsense or I'll slap your mouth!”

Li Qiye was still unperturbed: “Really? What if I don't tell you? Plus, why should I tell you?”

The duke placed a pearl on the table and spoke: “This is our specialty, a Crimsonheart Pearl. It is able to eliminate contaminations. Tell me your conversation with the princess and this shall be yours.”

Li Qiye glanced at the pearl and only smiled without revealing his attitude.

The duke continued to glare at him: “It must have something to do with that guy!” After this speculation, he only became more restless: “Quickly tell me.”

He lost his patience after thinking about the princess’ feelings for that man from the Pureblood School. He immediately stood up and shouted: “Brat, tell me now!”

Li Qiye raised his brows and lazily replied: “I have zero interest in your romance. Before you disturb my mood, return from whence you came.”

“Brat, that isn’t up to you to decide!” The duke drily said: “If you don’t speak, I will drag you back with me!”

“Your Highness, let me capture him and I’ll make him spit out everything!” A follower behind the duke quickly tried to earn this merit.

Li Qiye didn’t bat an eye and leisurely spoke: “Scram.”

With that, not only his followers, but even the duke was astounded. He was the duke of Crimson Night, a supreme character, yet this nobody brat dared to shame him like this.

“Little animal, I’ll let you taste a fate worse than death!” The duke’s expression turned fierce. He reached out for Li Qiye with his hand.

“If My Lord tells you to scram, then scram!” Li Qiye didn’t need to do anything as the duke’s hand approached. Arcane Guru, sitting at the side, swept past with his sleeve.

“Pop!” Before the duke and his followers knew what was going on, they were swept flying by the guru’s sleeve and disappeared in the horizon. Who knew where they were sent off to.

Compared to the guru, the duke was not worth mentioning — simply an insect.

Li Qiye acted as if nothing had happened and continued to drink. The guru didn’t dare to say anything and sat back down to the side.

After a while, Li Qiye looked up and put his cup down: “If I remember correctly, you excavated my little golden coffin!”

“About that...” The guru became very nervous. He smiled awkwardly while his hands fidgeted uneasily: “My Lord, you gave this thing to the Gongsun Clan a long time ago, but the Gongsun Clan was destroyed later on...”

“... This lowly one waited for a very long time in those ruins. Eventually, I didn’t see My Lord’s return, so I assumed that you had forsaken this item and immediately brought it out into the sunlight again.”

This issue left him in a tough spot. In fact, he had obtained many things during his pursuit of Li Qiye. Nevertheless, the most precious item was the little golden coffin.

He quickly spoke: “If My Lord wants it back, this lowly one will return it right away.”

Li Qiye lazily responded: “Fine, if I need it, I will take it back. Since you worked hard to get it, you can keep on using it for now.”

“Thank you, My Lord.” The Guru didn’t dare to be disrespectful and immediately prostrated.

Li Qiye nodded gently while the guru remained on the ground without getting up. Li Qiye put down his cup and looked at him: “You have something else to say?”

The kneeling guru quickly responded: “Ever since this lowly one met My Lord back then in the All Heaven Grotto, I longed for the day that I could be like the wise sages under your banner. Today, I was finally able to see My Lord, leaving me with great jubilation. I am willing to serve you, My Lord.”

Li Qiye stared at him and slowly answered: “When necessary, I will naturally call for you. I am staying at the Holy City for now, so you may work for me.”

“Thank you, My Lord!” The guru bowed his head. For millions of years now, countless invincible wise sages worked for Li Qiye and swept through the world under him. Now, he finally got this chance as well.

“Rise.” Li Qiye waved his sleeve: “Let this be the end of that lead, do not bother the Xu Clan. It greatly contributed to the nine worlds and the human race. I trust that I don’t need to say more.”

“This lowly one understands!” The guru said: “If the need arises in the future, I am willing to protect the Xu Clan in your stead.”

“Good, so it is decided for now. Let us go.” Li Qiye ended the conversation.

The guru bowed once more and left. He disappeared into the horizon in just the blink of an eye.

Li Qiye continued to drink while looking at the green hills outside the window. He immersed himself in the long silence.

Each person he remembered grew older with the years and slowly drifted away like the wind. No one was truly immortal!

Chapter 949: Dracotree

After a while, Li Qiye stopped his reminiscence and called for the shopkeeper. He paid for the drinks then told him: “Shopkeeper, I want to stay at your Xu Residence for a few days.”

The shopkeeper smiled and shook his head: “Sir, I’m afraid you misunderstood. Our Xu Clan only has a winehouse here, we don’t have an inn. Our Xu Residence is only for family, it’s not to entertain guests.”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “I know, but I want to stay at your Xu’s Dracohouse. You should know about it.”

The shopkeeper was startled after hearing this. He calmed down and shook his head again: “Sir, I’m afraid you had too much to drink. I don’t know anything about a Dracohouse in our Xu Residence.”

Li Qiye smiled: “Shopkeeper, I am not an outsider. Bring me the whistle hidden in the Dracohouse. Your Xu Clan has an ancestral teaching, you should remember it.”

After hearing this, the shopkeeper no longer acted distant. He slightly bowed and said: “Sir, please wait.” With that, he quickly left.

He put the closing sign on for the winehouse before leaving in a hurry.

Li Qiye only sat there and quietly waited. After a long time, the shopkeeper finally returned. He looked at Li Qiye then formally took out an old box from his pocket.

Afterward, he took out a whistle that was inside the box. This whistle seemed very ordinary, almost like a child's toy. He handed the whistle over to Li Qiye with both hands.

Li Qiye looked at this familiar whistle and rubbed it playfully before speaking to the shopkeeper in a friendly tone: "Do you know the effect of this whistle?"

The shopkeeper did not answer. Li Qiye smiled and continued: "I know what you are thinking, you are afraid that I am a fake. There are two uses for this whistle. Its first use is that if your Xu Clan is ever in trouble, your descendants are able to blow a distress call. This sound will be heard by many lineages across the Mortal Emperor World. The other is for identification. Only the person mentioned in your ancestral teachings is able to blow it."

"Am I right?" Li Qiye glanced at the silent shopkeeper.

The shopkeeper remained tight-lipped and only stared at Li Qiye. His attitude was very clear.

Li Qiye chuckled and placed the whistle on his lips. He blew the whistle with a rhythm unknown to others.

“Screehh...” With a cry, a crow flew out.

It emitted a terrifying aura capable of bearing the burden of time and the weight of the world. Myriad laws prostrated before it...

It quickly disappeared after flying out from the whistle. This was only an illusion created by the whistle, something that could only be done by Li Qiye!

After seeing the phantom crow, the shopkeeper finally confirmed his identity. He bowed and said: “So it is you. The ancestral teachings state that only you are able to stay at the Dracohouse.”

As a mortal, the shopkeeper naturally didn’t know Li Qiye’s identity. He didn’t know the significance behind the Dark Crow either. However, the ancestral teachings of their clan stated that the person capable of creating the illusion would be able to stay.

Li Qiye gently nodded. The shopkeeper quickly said: “Please come to the Dracohouse, I will lead the way.”

Li Qiye followed the shopkeeper up Apricot Peak to the Xu Residence. This was a simple building. Even a God-Monarch wouldn’t see what was so special about it.

This building was not only created by the Xu Ancestor, Li Qiye also worked hard constructing it for the clan. No one could enter this building without the permission of the family, no matter who they might be.

In the event of a great crisis, this building was able to teleport to an unknown location. Moreover, the Xu Clan could also ask the Holy City or even Li Qiye himself for help!

It covered a lot of ground, but no one lived here. The shopkeeper told Li Qiye: “All the young ones are staying at the Holy City. It’s only because I’m too old to leave that my oldest son was willing to come back to open the winehouse.”

“It has been so many years yet you Xu still won’t close that winehouse.” Li Qiye said with a smile.

The shopkeeper replied: “It is our symbol, passed on for generations. As long as the winehouse is there, it means that our Xu Clan is still being succeeded.”

Li Qiye only chuckled. This was an internal affair of the clan. He was not in a position to comment.

Eventually, the shopkeeper brought him to an arch entrance inside the building. It was closed with a heavy wooden door.

“Sir, this is the Dracohouse.” The shopkeeper told Li Qiye.

Li Qiye lamented in his mind while looking at the locked arched door ahead. After so many years, there was not the least bit of change.

Although the entrance ahead was only made out of wood, no one would be able to enter without the key no matter how powerful they may be.

The shopkeeper took out a bronze key then inserted it into the door. With a loud clicking sound, the two sides of the door slowly opened.

A rich life energy came rushing out the moment the door to the Dracohouse was opened. It permeated into the body, giving a pleasant feeling as if all the pores in the body were being relaxed.

This so-called Dracohouse was only a small courtyard with a single room. There was nothing else here. Wait, to be exact, there was an old tree planted in the yard as well.

This old tree did not look very exceptional at first, but despite being only three feet tall, it gave the feeling that it was shouldering the sky. It had been growing for who knows how many years. Its dried bark resembled scales while its old roots were as tough as steel.

It seemed that even if the sky was about to collapse, the tree would be able to lift it up.

Li Qiye circled around it and eventually, his eyes fell onto the few leaves. His expression turned serious.

“It is missing a Dracofruit.” Li Qiye said while looking at the tree.

“Dracofruit...” The shopkeeper looked at the tree as well: “Sir, where are these fruits? Sorry, my old eyes do not see well anymore.”

He pointed it out for the shopkeeper. The shopkeeper finally saw a Dracofruit. There was indeed a fruit among the sparse leaves. It was the size of a thumb and seemed to have matured, yet it did not fall down. It was indeed hard to see without careful observation.

“There are two of them?” The shopkeeper asked. He had never noticed these fruits growing on the tree before.

“There were two before, did someone pluck one?” Li Qiye asked.

In fact, he didn’t really mind at all. He just found it strange since the descendants of the Xu Clan were all mortals. They wouldn’t be able to pick the fruit.

“Hmm, I really did not pay attention to this.” The shopkeeper shook his head: “I didn’t know that these fruits were there before, so I don’t know if someone had taken one.”

Li Qiye looked at the fruit and casually asked: “Have any outsiders been in here? I’m talking about cultivators.”

The shopkeeper pondered for a moment before denying: “That can’t be true. Sir, the ancestral teachings say to not mingle with cultivators. Moreover, only our children are allowed inside this

place.”

The shopkeeper thought about it a bit more and added: “If we are talking about cultivators, then the only one that has come here should be the Ancestral Aunt. This was written down in our family records. The Ancestral Aunt stayed here for a period of time. Normally, we wouldn’t stay in this place since we aren’t used to the rich air. I think only our Ancestral Aunt was here before.”

“Is your Ancestral Aunt still alive?” Li Qiye had to ask.

The Ancestral Aunt mentioned by the shopkeeper was the youngest daughter of the Xu Ancestor; a happy little girl forever scarred by the vicious war.

Nevertheless, she was once very powerful. After the war’s end, her cultivation was right behind the Xu Ancestor’s.

“Hmm, I don’t really know. There are no records in our clan about her.” The shopkeeper shook his head.

Li Qiye said: “Go do your thing. I will stay here for a couple of days. If you need anything, you can come find me whenever.”

The shopkeeper agreed before leaving.

After he left, Li Qiye stood before the ageless tree and quietly contemplated. After a long time, he grimaced and murmured: “Hidden-dragon Mountains... The Ancient Ming tried their best

back then and still couldn't obtain the item inside. The Dark Dragon Dynasty was even built here to rule this land. That item is indeed greatly coveted."

The Hidden-dragon Mountains were considered very dangerous by others, but keep in mind that even the Ancient Ming of the past wanted the item inside.

A great secret was buried here at the Hidden-dragon Mountains and Godwar Mountains.

In the past, the Godwar Mountains held a different name as the ancestral ground of the Dark Dragon Dynasty. They tried to unearth the secret but were destroyed before accomplishing this task.

Chapter 950: Watering The Dracotree

This land indeed had too many secrets. Otherwise, the Ancient Ming wouldn't have noticed this place and the Dark Dragon Dynasty wouldn't have established their ancestral ground here.

After crushing the Dark Dragon Dynasty and the Ancient Ming, the Dark Crow had scanned this area before. However, the time was not ripe for some things within.

Li Qiye glanced at the inconspicuous Dracofruit while rubbing his chin: "Why did the little girl pluck a fruit? She was buried for countless years, so why come out all of a sudden? Is there a change at the Hidden-dragon Mountains?"

Ultimately, he decided: "Regardless, it is time to pluck one."

Li Qiye stayed behind at this place and began to absorb the moonlight that he then used to water the fruit so that it would ripen and fall.

In the evening, if anyone could see the Dracohouse, they would be shocked by this amazing scene. The moonlight from above was being dragged down as if all the brilliance of the moon in this world was being sucked into this location.

Li Qiye had a gourd for this task. The moonlight gathered in the gourd and turned into a brilliant silver liquid.

He poured the moonlight one drop at a time on the Dracofruit. However, his actions were not just a simple watering. The dripping required precision and the timing was in tune with the worldly rhythm!

An immense boom could be heard each time a drop of moonlight dripped onto the fruit. These tiny drops each seemed to be like a great god slamming down on the earth.

They would permeate through the runes on the fruit's skin and into its body. Each time the fruit absorbed a drop of moonlight, one could hear a beating sound just like the thumping of a powerful heart. It was as if there was a heart that had stopped beating in this area, and it was being revived from absorbing the moonlight. It would beat once after absorbing a drop of moonlight.

Of course, the Dracohouse was sealed off. Even a bigger commotion would go unnoticed by outsiders. Only Li Qiye could hear this sound.

He narrowed his eyes and murmured: "So this is the case, no wonder why the old man said that there was a natal beat back in the Hidden-dragon Mountains. Is it finally here after millions of years?"

After confirming that Arcane Guru's report was correct, Li Qiye continued to water the fruit and waited for it to ripen.

While he was staying at the Xu Residence, the Holy City grew very lively. Many youths gathered there.

In the beginning, these prodigies came to see Mei Suyao's supreme features. Even the more famous geniuses came running, such as the five saints. However, she didn't stay at the Holy City for long. No one knew when she left or what her destination was.

The city should have calmed down after her departure. However, Ye Chuyun arrived next and it caused quite a stir as well! In terms of fame, Ye Chuyun was not as great as Mei Suyao. However, she was very illustrious in the Barren Earth and could be considered a goddess of the younger generation.

The first youth to reach Virtuous Paragon in the southern region — this alone was enough to make her renowned. Moreover, despite not being at Mei Suyao's level, she was also very pretty. She had many young admirers as well.

She came to visit a senior in a lineage that had great ties with the Pure Lotus School. She rarely met guests, but this didn't stop the young cultivators from being especially welcoming towards her. All of these admirers wanted to see her.

In just a short period of time, the Holy City was bustling with excitement. Even three of the One Emperor, Five Saints came.

This was a phrase in the southern Barren Earth. To be more exact, "five saints" was the title given to them by the Blood Race.

They included the young geniuses from their respective races: the Crimson Night Kingdom's Chi Zixian, the Grand Palm Ancient

Court's Bai Jian, the Half-moon Blood Tribe's Half-moon Princess, the Pureblood School's Chi Tianyu, and the Blood-devil Tribe's Skybearing Duke.

In this land, the Blood Race was unified due to the presence of the Blood Primal Ground. Because of this, when the list of young geniuses was being determined, it only included Blood geniuses while omitting the other races.

These five saints debuted much later than Ye Chuyun and were half a generation behind her. The only genius among this group that was in the same generation as Ye Chuyun was the one emperor.

Lin Tiandi! This was a name full of charisma and power! He was ranked much higher than the five saints!

When Bai Jian, the Half-moon Princess, and Chi Tianyu entered the city, they caused quite a storm! More gossip rampaged across the city.

For example, Chi Tianyu's efforts at courting Ye Chuyun was a hot topic across the teahouses in the city. This was something everyone knew about. The Pureblood School wanted to have marital ties to the Pure Lotus School, but Ye Chuyun — as the current master — had always refused their offers.

Nevertheless, Chi Tianyu never gave up. As long as there was a chance, he would give Ye Chuyun all of his attention; he visited the Pure Lotus School annually just to see her.

“Chi Tianyu, one of the five saints, is trying to see Schoolmaster Ye every day.” Both young and old loved to discuss these matters in the restaurants.

“To be honest, Chi Tianyu is one of the five saints and our Blood Race is a great tribe. He actually makes a good pair with Schoolmaster Ye.” A youth from the Blood Race backed Chi Tianyu up.

“Hmph, Schoolmaster Ye is not just an ordinary Virtuous Paragon.” A young human was not convinced. In the southern Barren Earth, Ye Chuyun was even referred to as the pride of the human race, the goddess in so many young human males’ hearts!

Because of this, these human males all came to see her and considered Chi Tianyu to be their rival. Of course, many of them were not as exceptional as him.

“While it is true that Schoolmaster Ye is an exceptional Virtuous Paragon, who in this region among the human’s younger generation is more suitable for her than Chi Tianyu? If our Chi Tianyu is not worthy, then the experts from your human race are even less worthy.” A young Blood immediately retorted.

Naturally, the human youth did not give up. He sneered in response: “You think the five saints from the Blood Race are so great? There is still the emperor. Lin Tiandi is a genius of our human race.”

“Oh, really? Who says that Lin Tiandi is a human? Did he admit to it himself? Hmph, he has never said that he was a human, maybe he is one of our Blood Race’s members.” The young Blood snorted.

“Between men and women, strength isn’t necessarily the only factor to determine suitability.” Another person strongly pointed out: “Chi Tianyu is indeed praiseworthy, but our Schoolmaster Ye does not like him. Have you all not heard about it yet? Recently, our schoolmaster has already found someone. She is always together with someone named Li Qiye, so your Blood Race better stop thinking about marrying our goddess. She will only marry our own people...”

The human race was still very powerful in the Barren Earth, especially in a reclusive land like the Holy City. It was quite influential. Moreover, there was the existence of Heavenguard.

Nevertheless, the Blood Race was a force to be reckoned with as well. Although there was no war between the Blood and the humans, minor conflicts had been ongoing. Both races looked down on the other. Cursing at each other upon meeting was a common occurrence.

“Li Qiye? Who the hell is he? I’ve never heard of him.” The young Blood spoke contemptuously: “Does being together mean that she is married to him? Maybe he is only a servant or her errand boy.”

“Yes, that’s right. I heard that this Li Qiye is only a little disciple from the Pure Lotus School acting as Schoolmaster Ye’s servant.”

Another Blood youth made up this story.

In a short while, Li Qiye being Ye Chuyun's servant was spread to many people.

In fact, it was understandable for the Barren Earth to not know about Li Qiye. Back when Li Qiye was renowned in the Grand Middle Territory and Eastern Hundred Cities, he was still not as famous as Lin Tiandi.

Later on, Lin Tiandi's prestige soared even higher. Even when Li Qiye's name came to the southern region, he was still overshadowed by Lin Tiandi.

Moreover, Li Qiye had disappeared for a very long time. Even cultivators in the other two domains nearly forgot his name, let alone people from this region.

Chapter 951: Jadebee

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Powerful heart beats resounded in the Dracohouse. They were coming from the Dracofruit...

After days of Li Qiye watering the fruit, it finally began to mature.

It hung on the tree like a healthy, beating heart. Those ignorant would actually think that it was a heart.

“Boom!” Eventually, a thunderous beat resounded. Those with a weak constitution would be stunned from the shock.

“It’s time!” Li Qiye happily took out a plate after hearing this beat.

“Pop!” The Dracofruit finally fell down from the tree and landed on Li Qiye’s special plate. He satisfyingly nodded and murmured: “All of those preparations in the past were for this one day.”

With that, his gaze turned towards the distant Hidden-dragon Mountains that stretched across the land and murmured: “Perhaps it is time for me to reap my harvest.”

He put away the fruit and said goodbye to the shopkeeper. The shopkeeper actually accompanied him all the way to the base of the mountain. Li Qiye said: “Farewells are inevitable. Go back, you don’t have to see me off anymore. In the future, I will return to see

the Xu Clan. I'll make sure that your clan will continue to strive into the future."

"Take care, Sir." The old shopkeeper finally waved goodbye to Li Qiye. He didn't turn around until Li Qiye disappeared completely.

Li Qiye left Apricot Peak but didn't go to the Holy City or the Godwar Mountains. He slowly strolled through these mountain ranges one step at a time. Each step carried a different memory.

Who knew that back then on this land, a great confrontation took place here. The ultimate force of all the races in the nine worlds against the most powerful legion of the Ancient Ming Race! The Ancient Ming's side even had Immortal Emperor Long Ming!

The two armies had a standoff in this place, causing the worlds to tremble and the heaven and earth to lose their light! It ultimately ended with a horrifying battle. One ancient battlefield after another was dragged into this place and sealed this entire land!

This battle was beyond imagination. In the end, only mountains of corpses were left. One inch of land, one liter of blood — this phrase was not an exaggeration to describe that battle.

If the ancient battlefields were not dragged here with their supreme seals, the entire southern Barren Earth would have been rendered to dust!

Li Qiye felt quite uncomfortable as he slowly walked through

these mountains. Beneath this land were many corpses. The lush rivers and trees of today were nourished by blood.

On this land, his most trusted comrades fell along with his closest confidant. Those most loyal to him persevered to their very last breath...

Too many had fallen in this place. Too many things were taken from him — friendship, loyalty, and...

“Buzz—” A bee suddenly flew in front of him before disappearing into the valley ahead.

“A Jadebee?” Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed at this sighting. It wasn’t too different from an ordinary bee. The biggest distinction was that its stomach had a little green jade.

Ordinary cultivators wouldn’t notice it. Even if they saw the difference, they might not recognize its origin.

But Li Qiye was different. His knowledge allowed him to understand what these bees were used for right away. He immediately headed for the place the bee disappeared to. He flew through several hills and the buzzing of the bees became noisier. There were many Jadebees flying around in this hilly region. Some had just returned from plucking flowers while others were going out for more...

The increase in number confirmed Li Qiye’s speculation. He

found that these bees were flying to the same location.

“So it’s like this. Very few know about this method.” Li Qiye saw through the clues and became curious. He continued to follow the bees.

Eventually, he followed these bees into a remote valley. A flowery fragrance rushed into his nose; there was nothing but flowers in this location.

Jadebees were dancing around and busily collected pollen from the flowers. One could see trunks containing beehives everywhere.

Li Qiye stood in the valley and slowly scanned the area. Eventually, he saw someone. Amidst the flowers was a busy woman. She was dressed plainly just like a village girl. She tied her hair with a wooden pin in the middle. She wore no makeup or any other adornments.

Despite her plain style, it was still difficult to hide her beauty. Beneath the ordinary clothing was an eye-catching and temptatious figure.

She had an indescribable aura around her as if she was a refreshing, limpid spring. From her slightly pouting lips, one could see that she could be stubborn and determined as if nothing could deter her pace.

She had a serious expression while dealing with the weeds among

the flowers and didn't spot Li Qiye's arrival.

He continued to stand near the flowers to quietly gaze at her every action. It seemed that in his eyes, everything she did was quite beautiful.

After a while, she finally stood up and saw Li Qiye with her clear eyes. She only paused for a bit before crouching down again to continue her task.

Li Qiye smiled and leisurely said: "It's a nice idea, beekeeping to take their honey. Not too many people know this particular technique."

The crouching woman froze for a second after hearing this. She stood up to look at him again. There was a cold glint in her pretty eyes that disappeared in a split second.

"You shouldn't stare at me like that." Li Qiye smiled: "I bear no ill-will, or else you wouldn't be standing there right now."

She responded: "Who are you? Who sent you here?" Her questions were also crisp with a particular rhythm.

"Li Qiye." Li Qiye stated his name in a friendly manner. The woman tilted her head and pondered for a bit. She had never heard of this name before. Nevertheless, she continued to glare at him.

Without a doubt, she was very cautious of him.

“I’m a bit curious. In the Crimson Night Kingdom or even the entire Barren Earth, the Sunset Glow Scripture is everywhere. Maybe even every single Crimson Night’s citizen has one.” Li Qiye smiled: “But fewer than few people know how to keep these bees for their honey. Perhaps even for many millions of years, no one has done this! Where did you learn this from?”

The woman was startled after hearing his claim. She took one step backward and gathered the energy in her body as if she was ready to erupt at this very moment.

“There’s no need to be hostile. If I wanted to hurt you, I could take you down in one second. Not to mention that there is still a gap until you reach paragon, but even if you were one, I could still deal with you easily, trust me.” Li Qiye chuckled.

The woman remained hostile towards Li Qiye, but he didn’t seem to mind. He continued on: “You did a good job cultivating the Sunset Glow Scripture. Your dao foundation is truly pure! But your offensive skills are quite mediocre. If my guess is correct, you rarely train in offense! You are strong, but in my eyes, your destructive ability is not worth mentioning, understand?”

The woman eventually put away her antagonism. Her aura calmed down and became spiritual like before. After looking at him for a while, she finally revealed her name: “Si Yuanyuan.”

Li Qiye began again: “Despite the scripture’s pervasive nature, no one has truly cultivated it in earnest before, especially in the

Crimson Night Kingdom!”

Si Yuanyuan didn’t respond to his claim. Li Qiye continued: “Since the ancient ages, only Immortal Emperor Chi Ye cultivated this scripture to grand completion. However, I heard that even the emperor did not use this beekeeping method to collect the glow.”

She looked at him and drily said: “So what?”

This prompted him to smile: “I’m just curious, that’s all. I see several different merit laws on you. Moreover, they are only from the Crimson Night Kingdom. What’s even more interesting is that they are elementary laws from the country’s imperial family.”

Chapter 952: Si Yuanyuan

Li Qiye continued on while looking at her: “To be able to cultivate the scripture to this level... it seems like geniuses are nothing compared to you. However, why is it that a disciple who can reach this level only has the beginner level merit laws of the Crimson Night’s imperial family? This is quite interesting.”

“There are many interesting things in this world, it’s nothing to make a fuss about.” Si Yuanyuan answered.

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It wouldn’t be surprising if you were a vagrant cultivator as it’s a different story for someone who can cultivate the elementary merit laws of the imperial family. Unless all of them are blind, those old monsters should have been able to see your talents.”

He looked at her and smiled: “Let me take a guess...”

“No need to guess, the world is full of unknowns.” Si Yuanyuan was still calm and seemed to be a bit bored.

Li Qiye continued on: “Not necessarily. With me, everything can change in the future. Miss Si, if I am not mistaken, you come from a side branch of the Crimson Night, a very distant branch in fact. You weren’t exposed to very many merit laws, so your choices were limited. However, you have a persistent dao heart. Ever since you obtained the Sunset Glow Scripture, the purest primordial law from your Blood Race, you began to defeat all the young talents in your country!”

Si Yuanyuan wanted to interject, but she chose to stay quiet instead.

Li Qiye went on: “A genius like you is worth grooming in any sect! However, you still didn’t gain any support. Thus, there was only one possibility. Your presence had an impact on the future successor of the country. Although you belong to a side branch, you have the bloodline of the imperial family flowing through you. Your ancestor must be someone from the imperial family, and they even carry the bloodline of Immortal Emperor Chi Ye!”

“These are only your speculations.” Si Yuanyuan had to comment. However, judging from her expression, he was right.

“A person like you is a genius for the country. Alas, this is not a good thing for the young members of the imperial family due to the inevitable competition in each generation! A person like you did not gain support from any side.” Li Qiye paused for a bit here: “However, the country was unwilling to give up such a genius. Thus, they summoned you to the imperial family and let you cultivate the elementary laws, calling it a trial! Of course, the reality was that they were purposely suppressing you, unwilling to allow you to train in the core techniques, not even the emperor laws.”

“Your speculation might not be right.” She slowly commented.

“Really?” Li Qiye continued on: “I don’t think so. Any knowledgeable ancestor would understand that your future was

very promising if you cultivated emperor laws. In such a scenario, you would be able to compete with the other dukes for the position of successor!”

He leisurely smiled and went on: “If I am not mistaken, the imperial family’s first branch right now is Chi. They even support their claim by saying they have the bloodline of the primal ground! If, one day, the throne belongs to someone with the last name Si... naturally the group of the ancestors behind everything wouldn’t want such a thing.”

Si Yuanyuan was very quiet at this time because Li Qiye was completely correct. She really did come from a side branch with the direct bloodline from Immortal Emperor Chi Ye. Although her cultivation was solid and powerful at this moment, there were many people in the imperial family who didn’t want her to reach a level capable of competing for the throne!

“For ages now, the reason for many sects’ demise — outside of powerful enemies — is because of internal power struggles!” Li Qiye softly sighed: “How many people would have the great temperament to willingly hand over their power to others? Those who would cede their power to someone more capable for the sake of their nation’s development are all incredible sages.”

At this point, Si Yuanyuan stared at Li Qiye with caution and fear in her eyes. It was too terrifying that he could see through everything about her from just a casual glance. Anyone would shiver at such a thought.

“I have no malicious intent towards you, there’s no need to be so

wary of me.” Li Qiye was aware of her attitude. He smiled and said: “On the contrary, I am interested in you.”

“In what sense?” She still stared at him with prudence. Of course, Li Qiye’s expression showed that he was not just teasing her.

“Come with me.” Li Qiye chuckled then made a proposition: “You are wasting your youth by staying at Crimson Night. You are better off following me. I can give you things that they can’t! A few of them do not want you to vie for the royal throne. Plus, you are not happy with the status quo, you’re unwilling to be at their mercy, to be suppressed at their whim.”

“I am a disciple of Crimson Night. Willing or not, I will not leave it and definitely will not oppose it. I am its child and I shall die as its child!” She answered with a very calm tone.

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “If you were willing, then you wouldn’t have left the country to raise bees in this place.” Li Qiye stopped for a moment: “Plus, I am neither telling you to leave Crimson Night nor to oppose it. You should know that you are walking down the path of stagnation! It is an affront to your potential! You need to break through and find a great teacher!”

Si Yuanyuan’s eyes turned serious as she pondered for a moment. Li Qiye was absolutely correct. She didn’t hate Crimson Night, but she also felt indignant. This was not due to hatred but rather her future aspirations. She didn’t want to stop here. Her goal on the path of cultivation should be much further, just like the wise sages or the ancestors standing at the apex.

Si Yuanyuan calmly spoke: “Why do you want me?” She was not a competitive person, but she was not weak either. There was stubbornness inside her gentle nature.

“This is a bad habit of mine. I really appreciate talents, especially people with a strong dao heart.” Li Qiye smiled: “In terms of talents, you are not supreme. However, you are quite determined. This allowed you to truly understand the mysteries and profundities of the Sunset Glow Scripture — this is much easier said than done!”

“I will not work for an outsider.” Despite the gentle tone, she was very firm on this.

Li Qiye patiently smiled: “Miss, if I truly wanted you to work for me, then the choice wouldn’t be up to you. In fact, I have no intention of doing so. I’m not looking down on you, but if I am inviting generals, you are definitely not a good candidate...”

“... Your dao foundation is very pure and you have great potential. Alas, you are not someone who understands how to attack nor do you have the foresight necessary to strategizing! You are only fit to be a pure expert, a true cultivator.”

Li Qiye took his time explaining, but Si Yuanyuan slowly shook her head: “I appreciate your kind thoughts, but I don’t plan to follow you.”

“Don’t refuse so fast, wait until you see my gift before saying no.”

Li Qiye smiled and opened his mind.

“Clank!” A series of dao runes flew towards Si Yuanyuan.

“Don’t refuse them, let this be my greeting gift to you.” Li Qiye spoke.

Si Yuanyuan wanted to dodge, but these dao runes quickly disappeared inside her forehead. They entered her sea of memories and began to change. She immediately turned aghast after seeing this!

“This is...” She was quite frightened and took several thumping steps back. This was a big shock to her.

“This, this is impossible!” She took a deep breath and stared at Li Qiye in disbelief.

“Since you have cultivated the Sunset Glow Scripture to this level, you should know a few things as well.” Li Qiye said: “The scripture is the original book of your Blood Clan. In fact, it can also be considered to be your clan’s primordial merit law. Unfortunately, a regrettably few number of people were able to cultivate its real essence. Immortal Emperor Chi Ye is one of them.”

He looked straight at her: “What I just taught you is the primordial dao law of your race. I believe I don’t need to say more about its benefits.”

“On top of the Sunset Glow Scripture, if you could also cultivate the primordial dao law of your race, must I speak more about your future potential on the path towards the grand dao?” Li Qiye smiled.

Si Yuanyuan contemplated quietly once more. For her, this primordial dao was more precious than emperor laws or even Heaven’s Will Secret Laws! It was completely suitable for her dao foundation! This would allow her to return to the source, a type of atavism!

She solemnly asked: “Who are you?” She definitely didn’t think that he was a nobody at this point.

“Who I am is not important. I just want to say that I can give you a future and earn your trust. One day, you will understand that letting this opportunity go would be the biggest mistake of your life!” Li Qiye claimed.

Chapter 953: Si Yuanyuan's Decision

Si Yuanyuan stared at Li Qiye for a long time before asking: “What do you want me to do?”

No one believed that a free lunch existed in this world.

“What do you think I can get from you? Your beauty? Talent? Strength?” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “While it is true that you have a lot of potential, you aren't the most exceptional in my eyes. You don't need to do anything for me. In a way, I can't give you anything either, outside of introducing you to the primordial law of your Blood Race. What's next is up to you.”

“I don't understand.” Si Yuanyuan shook her head and grimaced. She couldn't be blamed. Anyone else would be quite cautious at this development.

The two of them didn't know each other, this was their first meeting. Nevertheless, Li Qiye was still willing to teach her the Blood Race's primordial law as well as take her under his wing. How could there be such a good opportunity with no cost?

Si Yuanyuan's brows furrowed in contemplation. After a bit, she asked: “We don't know each other and this is our first meeting, why do you want to pass this merit law down to me?”

Li Qiye smiled and said: “If you must think that I have an ulterior motive, then you can think about it this way: this is for the Blood Race, for the human race, and especially for the nine worlds.

Perhaps the day will come when the fallen beneath the abyss will rise again, when your Blood Race becomes engulfed in darkness. I believe that they will need a great person to lead them.”

“What is this ‘fallen beneath the abyss’?” Si Yuanyuan didn’t understand his answer.

“This topic involves too many things, even the origin of your Blood Race.” Li Qiye explained: “You don’t need to know for now. If such a day comes, I believe you will come to understand...” But before he finished his explanation, Li Qiye disappeared in the blink of an eye.

Near the entrance by a bush of flowers, a head was popping in and out to catch glimpses of the entire valley. This was the Crimson Night Duke who was blown away by Arcane Guru’s sleeve.

He was bedridden for a long time after the attack and was truly resentful about the whole matter. He couldn’t provoke an existence like Arcane Guru, so he placed all of his hatred onto Li Qiye instead.

Recently, he tried to find Li Qiye’s whereabouts. At the same time, Li Qiye took his time strolling through this area and didn’t try to hide his position, so the duke came running.

“What are you looking for? Me?” As he was still peeking his head out to take a look, a leisurely voice suddenly came from behind him.

The voice startled him. He immediately turned around and saw Li Qiye, prompting him to yell: “It’s you!”

Li Qiye looked at the duke: “So? Following me all this way, are you tired of living?”

Meeting one’s enemy again was definitely an emotional matter. The duke’s eyes turned fierce as he coldly spoke: “Tired of living? It’s you who is ignoring the accepting heavens and barging into the unwelcoming hell!”

During his period of tracking, he became certain that Li Qiye was an ordinary person. Without the presence of an expert like Arcane Guru, the duke became bolder. The hatred in his heart wouldn’t go away until he killed this nobody.

“This sentence seems to apply more to you.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Good, good, such a big tone. A feeble ant dares to bluster in front of me... If I don’t kill you today, I wouldn’t be the Crimson Night Duke!”

He believed that without the guru present, no one would know if he killed Li Qiye in this desolate place.

“Duke, don’t. You really aren’t his match.” As the duke became more audacious, a calm voice resounded. Si Yuanyuan made her appearance.

“Senior Sister Si...” The bold duke took an alarmed step backward at the sight of her.

He calmed down and looked at Li Qiye then glanced over at Si Yuanyuan. He sneered and spoke words with a thinly veiled meaning: “Sister Si, the ancestors have been searching for you for a long time now. I was also ordered to come here to look for you. If something happens to me, the ancestors will know that I’ve been to this place.”

The duke’s words were too obvious. He was implying that if Si Yuanyuan wanted to kill him, the ancestors would find out right away.

Si Yuanyuan was not angry after hearing him. She slightly frowned and spoke: “Duke, you are too paranoid. It is not too late to leave right now.”

The duke looked at the two again with uncertainty. He wanted to kill Li Qiye, but he was also very afraid of Si Yuanyuan.

Although he came from the imperial family and Si Yuanyuan came from a side branch, she was very powerful. Otherwise, the main descendant of the imperial family, Chi Zixian, wouldn’t be so wary of her.

Li Qiye glanced at the hesitating duke and spoke: “I’m in a good mood right now, and since Miss Si has pleaded for you, scram.”

The duke snorted in response. He told Si Yuanyuan before leaving: “Sister Si, don’t forget to return to the kingdom. The ancestors miss you.” He turned around and left after that. He was worried that she might change her mind.

After he disappeared outside of the valley entrance, Li Qiye looked at Si Yuanyuan: “You shouldn’t have let him go. Now you won’t be able to hide in this place anymore.”

Si Yuanyuan paused for a moment before answering: “We disciples of Crimson Night are taught not to kill each other. I have the responsibility to protect him.”

“Unfortunately, he does not share the same sentiment.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “It isn’t too late for you to follow me right now.”

Si Yuanyuan mused it over. She turned around to look at the flower valley behind her and felt a bit sad. She understood that after the duke left, the ancestors were certain to come to this place. However, she didn’t want to go back to Crimson Night right now!

“Where are we going?” Eventually, she made her decision and took the next step.

Li Qiye looked at the horizon and slowly said: “The Holy City.”

“The Holy City!” Si Yuanyuan’s expression quickly shifted: “Our

kingdom's largest external division is located right in the Holy City. Going there is the same as jumping into a net!"

"You just need to follow me. Crimson Night can't do anything to me." Li Qiye nonchalantly claimed.

Such a nonchalant sentence was full of overbearing confidence. Even Si Yuanyuan, who only came to know him recently, felt a sense of safety at hearing this.

"I'm actually more afraid that your kingdom won't come to bother me at the Holy City this time around." With that, he looked at her for a bit before continuing: "If you want, I can give you the Thunder Tower!"

Her expression sank after hearing this. She gently shook her head to refuse: "I don't want to harm any disciples of the kingdom. I agreed to follow you, not to oppose Crimson Night!"

"Very well." He replied: "Then let us hope that your kingdom's disciples have eyes like yours."

She gently sighed and curiously asked: "You have a feud with the Crimson Night Duke?"

"Feud? He isn't qualified for that." Li Qiye gently shook his head: "But if he wants to die, I can help him."

"The duke is part of the imperial family, a distant relative of Chi

Zixian.” She warned: “If you kill the duke, I’m afraid that not only Chi Zixian, but the entire family will not let it go.”

“So what?” Li Qiye answered dismissively as if he didn’t care about such a thing.

She continued: “The backing behind Chi Zixian is no joke. The ancestor behind them is the Storm God. In our kingdom or maybe even in the entire Barren Earth, no one dares to provoke Ancestor Storm.”

“Storm God, right?” Li Qiye calmly said: “I know who she is. She’s the daughter of Immortal Emperor [Chen Xue](#) — a vixen, that’s all.”

Chen Xue = Blood of the Earth. Earth here could also be referring to the mundane/secular/mortal world. It is a very humble title compared to Jiao Heng or Hong Tian.

Si Yuanyuan was speechless. The Storm God didn’t only have a high position in their kingdom, she was a very influential character across the southern region. Her stomp could cause the entire Barren Earth to tremble.

She was Immortal Emperor Chen Xue’s second daughter. No one in this entire region would dare to offend her.

Because Chi Zixian had such a backing, Si Yuanyuan couldn’t obtain the grooming of the imperial family. In fact, some ancestors wanted to train her, but Si Yuanyuan was too big of a threat to Chi Zixian. At this moment, she was already a strong rival even before

training in any emperor laws. Once she did, she would be much more powerful and control of the kingdom would fall into her grasp!

Because of this, the ancestors from Chi Zixian's branch vetoed her entrance to the imperial family. This left the other ancestors who wanted to train her helpless since they couldn't oppose the pressure coming from the other branch.

“Come, it's time to go.” Li Qiye told Si Yuanyuan: “As long as I'm here, the heaven and earth shall be vast and myriad dao shall be smooth. This Storm God or whatever, she's not worthy to be in my sight.” With that, he walked outside the valley.

Si Yuanyuan gently sighed. She had to keep up with him. She didn't know whether following Li Qiye was the right choice or not, but she didn't have many options right now and wasting more time was not something she wished to do!

Chapter 954: Entering Holy City

The old Holy City resided next to the Hidden-dragon Mountains. Before this gigantic mountain range, even the huge city appeared to be tiny.

One could feel its prosperity after entering. It was full of people and tall pavilions. Its vibrance would make people forget the way home.

The city could be said to be the largest citadel in the Barren Earth. This place was filled with both mortals and cultivators! Moreover, the mortals here were used to the flying cultivators. Even if a cultivator rode a serpent through this place, the mortals here wouldn't be surprised at all.

Although the Barren Earth was not the origin land of the human race, records state that it was one of the cities with the highest population of humans, and while the Holy City was not humanity's first establishment it was one of its most ancient enclaves.

There were too many hidden clans in this land to count. Generation after generation, the city continued to produce countless big characters. There were even many Immortal Emperors that were related to the city in one way or another.

At the beginning of the Emperors Era, the city was mainly occupied by humans. As time passed, other races like the Blood Race and Demon Race started to slowly gather at the Holy City as well.

Li Qiye and Si Yuanyuan walked inside the city. The prosperity of this place gave people different feelings. Looking at the streets full of pedestrians was exciting. The temptations of the stimulating mundane world permeated the area.

Li Qiye would become a bit emotional each time he came here. He murmured: “This is a city full of life. It makes people feel younger every time.”

This was also not Si Yuanyuan’s first time here, but alas, each visit left people in awe of this city’s charm and vitality. There were also too many secrets for people to figure out!

This city didn’t only have buildings and pavilions for mortals to dwell in, there were many old courtyards for the ancient clans. Some of these clans were as old as the city itself. These courtyards and mansions had existed since the city’s establishment.

There were even floating mountains and magical temples in the city. A city like this was definitely established on a treasure ground.

Because of its magical properties, many lineages wanted to occupy the Holy City. However, very few sects and imperial lineages were able to establish themselves in the city, even after millions of years. It was even more difficult for non-human sects to build a stronghold in this place.

Experience showed that to a large extent, the Holy City was

presided over by its ancient and reclusive clans. Other lineages found it very difficult to enter.

“We’ll go to Tiger Hill.” Li Qiye told Si Yuanyuan.

She was a bit surprised and asked: “Tiger Hill? Does Young Noble want to test your luck?”

Li Qiye was very mysterious in her eyes; it seemed that there was nothing he couldn’t do.

“No, just seeing a friend there.” Li Qiye smiled: “Of course, there is no harm in testing our luck there while we’re at it.”

She stopped asking questions and only quietly followed right behind him. A bit later, Li Qiye turned back to ask: “Have you been to the Thunder Tower before?”

“Just once.” Si Yuanyuan nodded: “I went with an ancestor, but I didn’t climb to the top of the tower.”

Li Qiye smiled: “The Thunder Tower is truly a good location. I must say, Immortal Emperor Chi Ye was quite smart back then. His descendant, Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, also inherited his ancestor’s good qualities. He spent countless efforts so that your Crimson Night Kingdom could have a foothold in the form of the Thunder Tower in the Holy City.”

He paused for a bit at this point before continuing: “If you want

to take a look at the top of the tower, I can take you there to show you the ancient magicalness of the heaven and earth.”

She hesitated from speaking her mind. After a while, she finally answered: “I don’t want to climb to the top. Just entering is more than enough for me.”

Li Qiye smiled in response: “I understand what you are thinking. You simply do not want me to fight Crimson Night, or rather, you don’t want its disciples to die at my hands.”

She looked at Li Qiye and spoke with some reservation: “My Crimson Night is a dual emperor lineage renowned in the Barren Earth.”

Li Qiye shook his head gently: “I know that you think I am just boasting, but dual emperor sects are nothing. I have destroyed many sects like that, too many to count, in fact.”

In her view, his attitude held no semblance to that of a braggart. This made her quite confused. How was it that someone who could speak about destroying dual emperor lineages was so unknown?

The two headed for Tiger Hill. There were many people heading there, including groups of cultivators and even mortals.

The Dragon Platform on top of Tiger Hill was a popular landscape in the Holy City. It could even be considered a sacred ground that many cultivators wanted to visit.

There was a particular belief passed down in the city — the two best treasure grounds in this place were the Dragon Platform and the Thunder Tower.

The Dragon Platform had no owner at this moment. It belonged to the Holy City, so anyone could climb it. On the other hand, the Thunder Tower belonged to the Crimson Night Kingdom! Moreover, not just any disciple could enter.

In the past, the tower used to belong to an old clan in the city. Later on, when Immortal Emperor Chi Ye was still in this world, he paid a sky-high price for the tower. Later on, after many generations of business and effort, the kingdom was finally able to use the tower to expand its foothold in the city.

There were many legends about the Dragon Platform at Tiger Hill. One stated that the end of the dragon vein from the Hidden-dragon Mountains was at this platform. Another one stated that during an ancient era, a Golden Dragon fought against an Immortal Tiger in this place. In the end, the tiger bit the dragon's neck while the dragon coiled around the tiger.

Ultimately, both creatures died and their bodies turned into the two places eventually known to future descendants as Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform.

None of these legends could be verified. Nevertheless, many people believed the legend of the two mythical beasts because the geographical shapes of this location were too fitting for the story.

Tiger Hill was a mountain inside the Holy City. From the base to the peak, it truly resembled the image of a dragon fighting a tiger, ending in their deaths.

Stone stairways reached all the way to the top. They circled around the peak, making the mountain look even more like a dragon coiling itself around a tiger. As for the peak, it looked like a dragon's head. It had its mouth open and was screaming from being bit in the neck by the tiger.

As a result, this location was divided into two parts. Everything below the summit was considered Tiger Hill while the very top was called the Dragon Platform.

Li Qiye took Si Yuanyuan to the mountain, but they were stopped at the base. Only certain cultivators were allowed to climb.

It was not just Li Qiye's duo that was stopped. Many cultivators weren't happy, but after seeing the clothing of those cultivators, they didn't dare to voice their dissatisfaction. This was because all those cultivators guarding the mountain base belonged to the great sects of the Blood-devil Tribe, such as the Half-moon Blood Tribe, the Grand Palm Ancient Court, the Pureblood School...

The cultivators who were stopped, unhappy as they may be, didn't want to offend the Blood-devil Tribe. In the southern Barren Earth, Blood-devil was the strongest tribe among the Blood Race. Outside of the human race, no other tribes were stronger than them. They were also very united; offending this tribe was the

same as offending the thirty-five great lineages behind them. This even included some imperial lineages!

“Today, we have booked the place. Our sect masters are debating the dao on the Dragon Platform. Please return.” A disciple immediately stopped Li Qiye and Si Yuanyuan.

Li Qiye glanced at the disciples here and asked: “Since when did Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform become the Blood-devil Tribe’s property?”

“This dao discussion taking place at the Dragon Platform was agreed to by the Bai Clan from the Holy City.” The disciple coldly leered at Li Qiye and uttered: “Even if this place is not our property, if we Blood-devils want to use this place for one day, who would dare to show dissent?!”

This declaration greatly annoyed the cultivators who wanted to climb to the Dragon Platform. However, they didn’t say anything. In the end, the tribe had the power to be this arrogant.

Li Qiye didn’t bat an eye at this threat. He declared: “There is no place that I can’t go. A good dog does not block the way, scram for me!”

“Ignorant fool! Who do you think you are?! You dare to bluster in front of our Blood-devil Tribe?!” The disciples guarding the path were enraged. The rest of them were about to surround him for a beating!

Li Qiye acted as if it was no big deal to face off against the aggressive crowd forming around him. He smiled and asked Si Yuanyuan sarcastically: “Yuanyuan, how do you think I feel about the Blood-devil Tribe?”

Chapter 955: Tiger Hill

Li Qiye's words attracted the attention of many bystanders. The cultivators who were annoyed at the Blood-devil Tribe for stopping them but didn't dare to do anything were secretly cheering Li Qiye on. They felt that his retort was way too cool and they secretly gave him a thumbs up.

Some also stared at him in astonishment. This ordinary-looking junior had such a big tone! To dare to provoke the Blood-devils like this... They wondered whether he was a hidden master or just didn't know the immensity of the heaven and earth.

Si Yuanyuan, on the other hand, smiled wryly. She hadn't known Li Qiye for too long, but it seemed that he wasn't afraid of offending people. He didn't put anyone in his eyes, so now he provoked the Blood-devils right away.

The guarding disciples were enraged. In their eyes, this public audacity from a junior was shaming their tribe. They must teach this brat a lesson to protect the prestige of their tribe!

"So presumptuous!" A cold laughter sounded right after. A young man came forward while shouldering a sword that had a soaring sharp aura!

He glared at Li Qiye and uttered: "This marquis also wants to see who you are, daring to humiliate our Blood-devil Tribe like this! Junior, reveal your name! I will not kill a nobody!"

“Marquis...” The disciples guarding the entrance immediately bowed respectfully to the newcomer.

“Pureblood School’s Swiftsword Marquis!” A cultivator at the base quivered after seeing the young man.

Another murmured: “If the Swiftsword Marquis is here, then Chi Tianyu is most likely at the platform right now.”

This young man was called the Swiftsword Marquis. He came from the Pureblood School and was Chi Tianyu’s junior brother. People say that his quick draw was extremely fast. The moment his sword left its scabbard, would be the same moment someone’s head would fly.

“Li Qiye.” Li Qiye slowly uttered his name.

The Swiftsword Marquis wondered for a moment before sneering: “I thought it would be someone cool, but it is just Schoolmaster Ye’s errand boy! No wonder your tone is so haughty!”

“Errand boy?” Li Qiye couldn’t help but chuckle after hearing this. It was indeed refreshing.

“So it’s that Li Qiye! I heard he has been following Schoolmaster Ye all the time. No wonder why he is so arrogant, he has the schoolmaster as his backing.” The cultivators here pointed at him and commented.

However, Li Qiye was completely indifferent to the whispers. He leisurely stood there and didn't bother dispelling the misunderstanding of him being an errand boy.

The Swiftsword Marquis coldly spoke: "Schoolmaster Ye is worthy of admiration, but this isn't a place where an errand boy like you can come and run wild!"

"I'll run wild wherever I feel like." Li Qiye lazily told the marquis: "Come if you aren't convinced."

With that, he didn't bother taking another glimpse at the marquis. He turned and headed for the hill.

The guarding disciples immediately blocked his path while the marquis' eyes flashed with a murderous glint!

"Schoolmaster Ye is an invited honored guest. If Young Noble Li is together with Schoolmaster Ye, he can also come to the Dragon Platform." A pleasant voice appeared at this time.

A sweet fragrance traveled with the wind. A woman appeared and the disciples from the Blood-devil Tribe, including the marquis, all bowed to greet her.

"Half-moon Princess!" A spectator shuddered. Another murmured: "If the princess is here as well, then it seems like all the geniuses of the Blood-devil Tribe have gathered here today."

Since the princess spoke on Li Qiye's behalf, even the marquis didn't dare to say anything. In terms of status and position, the princess was on the same level as his senior brother, Chi Tianyu!

However, she didn't help Li Qiye because she was a nice person or wanted to befriend him. It was because of Ye Chuyun!

In her view, the enemy of an enemy is a friend. For this dao discussion taking place on the Dragon Platform, both Chi Tianyu and Ye Chuyun were invited. Naturally, the princess didn't want Chi Tianyu and Ye Chuyun to have a chance of being together.

If a rival like Li Qiye was stuck between these two, then Chi Tianyu wouldn't have an opportunity to get closer to Ye Chuyun.

Li Qiye naturally knew what the princess was thinking. He didn't even bother saying thanks and climbed the stairs with Si Yuanyuan.

"Your Highness, this uncouth ignorant brat should be taught a lesson." The Swiftsword Marquis was indignant for the princess since Li Qiye didn't show any gratitude.

The princess only smiled and asked: "Is Dao Brother Chi here as well?"

"Princess, Senior Brother is already at the platform. He is the host this time and is waiting for everyone else to arrive." The

marquis quickly answered: “Please go ahead, Princess. I will be here to wait for Brother Bai Jian’s group.”

“Sounds good, I will go speak with Dao Brother Chi.” The princess was visibly happy hearing that Chi Tianyu was already there. She quickly flew to the top of the platform.

Li Qiye didn’t fly to the top like the princess. He walked slowly on the stairway while gently touching the wall along the steps.

These steps went on and on as if a dragon was coiling around this mountain. Moreover, they were not man-made but were formed through a natural process.

While touching the wall, he climbed the steps one by one in a very slow manner. It was as if he was trying to fuse with the beat of this world. However, no one could see what was so special about this manner of travel. It seemed that it was just another fella climbing the flight of stairs.

“Young Noble is trying to comprehend the dao of Tiger Hill?” Si Yuanyuan curiously asked while walking right behind him.

Enlightenment at Tiger Hill, treasures on the Dragon Platform — this was a saying that had been passed down for a very long time. For millions of years now, many had come to this location in search for the dao and fortunes.

However, very few were able to obtain anything of value. In later

ages, a regrettably few number of people were truly enlightened here. Thus, this saying became more of a folktale, nothing more.

Li Qiye gently shook his head while continuing his business: “It is not so easy to be enlightened at Tiger Hill. One can’t comprehend the grand dao here in just one or two days.”

“Young Noble is aware of something here?” Even though Li Qiye denied desiring the grand dao, a smart girl like Si Yuanyuan was still able to see some clues.

“Well, perhaps, just a little bit.” Li Qiye smiled and continued forward: “However, the grand dao here isn’t something that I want. It is not important to me.”

“However, rumor has it that Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng comprehended the dao in this place. Furthermore, they even say that his supreme dao came from here.” Si Yuanyuan couldn’t help but speak after hearing Li Qiye’s refusal.

Who was Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng? He was someone who was undefeated throughout his entire life. Some even called him the greatest emperor across all the eons. Even if this claim was not true, he was the only person among the emperors that was undefeated!

Due to the legend that his invincible supreme dao came from this place, Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform became all the rage for many generations. During the Desolate Era and even the Desolate Expansion Era, many cultivators came running here to learn the

dao.

However, very few yielded any notable harvest. This caused fewer and fewer people to come here since it was a fruitless endeavor.

“That’s just a baseless assertion. Who is Jiao Heng? He was invincible for a lifetime. Do you think he came here and sat down then immediately found the unbeatable grand dao? This is just a path already trod by the ancient people. To be as untouchable as Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng requires endless torturous training, not something you can comprehend right away...”

Li Qiye leaned on the wall and shook his head: “However, it is true that Immortal Emperor Jiao Heng did come here and obtained some benefits. There are items beyond your imagination here, but the time is not yet ripe!”

He continued forward while feeling the pulse of this place. In the beginning, Si Yuanyuan suspected that Li Qiye was searching for a dao. However, as she maintained the same pace as he did right behind him, she came to find that dao searching was not his intention. He was knocking as if wanting to wake something up.

There was a kind of rhythm, a pulse with his steps, but she couldn’t pinpoint any further details. Nevertheless, she had an indescribable feeling that she was hearing a heartbeat along with his pace.

It seemed as if a heart existed in this location. With each knock,

this stopped heart suddenly jumped again!

She was not completely certain of this and even felt that it was only an illusion.

After a long time, she finally asked with some doubts: “This, is this a type of pulse?”

“Not bad.” Li Qiye smiled and nodded: “No wonder you could cultivate the Sunset Glow Scripture to such a level. Just your awareness alone is beyond the reach of many geniuses. Only someone with a pure dao heart like you would be able to sense this pulse.”

“This has nothing to do with the level of cultivation or concentration.” Li Qiye slowly preached: “Many people are charmed by the supreme grand dao or emperor laws, so they are no longer able to use their mind to purely listen to the origin of the grand dao. This in turn makes them miss out on many things.”

Chapter 956: Dragon Platform

Li Qiye was trying to steer Si Yuanyuan on the right path. Of course, she couldn't feel the true pulse here because this was a secret relating to the hill, the Hidden-dragon Mountains, and even the Holy City!

She curiously asked again: "If Young Noble's knocking isn't for enlightenment, then what is it for?"

Li Qiye smiled: "Enlightenment at Tiger Hill, treasures on the Dragon Platform — these are indeed not just empty words. To be precise, they are not two separate events. Without climbing Tiger Hill, how could one reach the Dragon Platform?!"

"Young Noble is saying that in order to obtain the treasures, one must climb Tiger Hill? That it is impossible to obtain the treasures by forcefully climbing up to the Dragon Platform?" She quickly replied.

"That's one way to put it. Of course, climbing Tiger Hill does not guarantee treasures at the end." Li Qiye shook his head: "The items here cannot be obtained overnight through comprehension."

"So is it true that people have obtained treasures on the platform?" Si Yuanyuan inquired again with great interest. Everyone knew about the popular phrase, but no one knew whether someone had actually obtained treasure or not.

"Treasures. The Dragon Platform doesn't only have one or two

treasures; some of them are quite unfathomable. In fact, a small yet exceptional group was able to obtain a few treasures.” He stood to the side and elaborated: “Among them, the most incredible treasure was won by Immortal Emperor [Xue Xi](#)! Because he obtained the treasure from this place, he was able to escape from several mortal dangers along his arduous path!”

I think everyone knows Xue Xi = Blood Seal by now. However, I forgot to add that “seal” here is an imperial seal used by emperors to endorse edicts. Thus, this name is even grander than previously.

Immortal Emperor Xue Xi was one of the two emperors that were not an Ancient Ming during the Ancient Ming Era. Back then, this entire land was in the Ancient Ming’s grasp. Li Qiye tried very hard to bring the emperor to this place. They mixed in with the Ancient Ming and searched for enlightenment. Ultimately, they obtained quite an extraordinary item!

Of course, he didn’t come here for the treasures on the platform. He was walking these stairs in order to feel the land. Outsiders did not know, but Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform had a lot to do with the Hidden-dragon Mountains. With the Dracofruit on him, he was able to confirm a few conjectures!

Si Yuanyuan stopped her questioning and continued to follow him quietly.

They walked one slow step at a time. During their trip, many people flew to the top of the Dragon Platform. They consisted of young experts invited by the Blood-devil Tribe, many of whom were geniuses.

Among these newcomers, Bai Jian — as one of the five saints — was just as famous as the Half-moon Princess. He only needed one step to climb the hill as ancient symbols floated around him. He seemed to have come from an archaic world while accompanied by a timeworn aura. A sword still sheathed; once released, it would be able to slash the sun and moon.

Both Bai Jian and the Half-moon Princess were part of the five saints. However, his background was even more frightening than the princess'. He came from an imperial lineage, the Grand Palm Ancient Court, an existence that the Half-moon Tribe couldn't compare to.

“Will all five saints from the Blood Race be here this time?” After seeing Bai Jian, some cultivators down below wondered with a tinge of emotion.

“It is not only the older generation of the Blood Race that is full of solidarity, even the younger generation is united. If the five saints join together, geniuses from the other races in the southern region will not have an easy time.” A human cultivator lamented with a sigh.

In the Barren Earth, humans were definitely not weaker than the Blood Race and could even be considered stronger. Although the Blood Race had the Blood Primal Ground, the humans had an existence like Heavenguard as well as the Holy City!

However, over the years, Heavenguard had been indifferent to worldly matters and rarely interacted with others. The Holy City was even more distant and quiet. Because of this, humans lacked

the same cohesive force compared to the unified Blood Race. Its momentum became stronger than the human race's.

Si Yuanyuan saw Bai Jian flying up with his floating symbols and emotionally said: "The rune art from the Grand Palm Ancient Court is indeed worthy of its fame."

Li Qiye only smiled and commented: "No need to be envious of others. As long as you go down this road, you will surpass them and go much further. Perhaps the responsibility of ruling over the Blood Race will fall onto your shoulders in the future."

"I am only a little girl, how could I shoulder the Blood Race?" Si Yuanyuan gently shook her head. She was not looking down on herself but merely telling the truth. Not to mention lineages like the Crimson Night Kingdom and Blood-devil Tribe, just the Blood Primal Ground alone that had stood strong for ages made it unnecessary for her to do anything.

"Don't belittle yourself. As long as you can cultivate the law I gave you, it will be possible." Li Qiye smiled: "One day when the responsibility actually falls upon you, you will come to understand just how right I am. I didn't just pick a random person to give this primordial law to."

She sighed softly and didn't want to respond. She had chosen to follow him so she shall do so without regrets.

They continued forward with their climb. Keep in mind that this stairway had several thousand steps; climbing it all was not

something that could be accomplished in a short amount of time.

“Ay!” After reaching the halfway point, a sneer came out. The Swiftsword Marquis was floating in the air with many other young and famous experts from the Blood Race.

He coldly glanced at Li Qiye and mocked: “An errand boy wanting to be enlightened in Tiger Hill’s path! I’m afraid this is just an idiot’s dream.”

In his eyes, whether Li Qiye was Ye Chuyun’s errand boy or not didn’t matter. He just wanted to mock him because his senior brother, Chi Tianyu, liked Ye Chuyun while Li Qiye and her were always together. This was something his brother was very bitter about.

“Brother Swiftsword, he is only a mortal. Even if he lives till one hundred, he still wouldn’t be able to learn anything from Tiger Hill’s path.” A Blood expert next to the marquis burst into laughter.

However, Li Qiye was too lazy to even glance at these insects. He continued forward and simply ignored them. Si Yuanyuan behind him didn’t reply either. She was very obedient at this moment. If he didn’t speak, she wouldn’t take charge either.

“Haha, a lowly mortal trying to understand Tiger Hill, he doesn’t know his own limits. I suppose an ignorant fool can’t be scared of anything.” The marquis guffawed as well before bringing the group to the top.

As Li Qiye continued his ascent, the sensation that only he could feel became stronger. He couldn't help but stare at the Hidden-dragon Mountains in the distance. Its dragon-like contours gave an indescribable and suppressive feeling, as if it was a sleeping dragon.

“Just like I thought. What is causing this?” He murmured with his gaze still on the mountains. He understood why the guru talked about the natal beat in that place. The truth was that it was not a real heartbeat, but the guru didn't know about this particular secret.

As the Dark Crow, Li Qiye had studied the mountains before. However, this change exceeded his calculations; it was happening much sooner than he had estimated.

This puzzled him. What brought about this particular change?

Eventually, they finally made it past all the stone steps and reached the Dragon Platform!

The platform was at the summit of the hill. From a quick glance, it resembled a dragon head roaring at the sky. Another section paved with stone appeared to be very flat as if it was a training field.

There was a big cave along this flat peak with many sharp stone pillars jutting out from within. Looking downward at it, it seemed to be bottomless, reaching all the way down to the deepest depths

of the earth. This was the part that resembled a dragon's mouth.

It had a great origin story. Legend states that there was an incredible treasure trove down there, but only the fated ones were able to obtain them. No one dared to go straight down despite the rumors. This was out of fear due to past examples. Many had gone down before, including Godkings. However, no one made it out alive.

No one knew why, but in short, those who fell down wouldn't be able to come back out. They would disappear completely, as if they had vanished into thin air. Later on, only the well-known phrase about the treasures here was left. People seldom heard about those in generations long passed who actually obtained something from this place.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile after stepping onto the platform since he had mastered the beat of this area. It was just like back then when he brought Immortal Emperor Xue Xi to this place. He could definitely take another treasure, but as for which one... that was up to fate.

Si Yuanyuan glanced around and saw many people gathering on the platform. All of them were young experts of the southern regions, many of whom were considered geniuses. The Blood-devil Tribe was the leader here.

There were also experts from the demon and human races. However, they were scarce in number.

Chapter 957: The Provocative Crowd

“Oh, our little errand boy finally crawled up.” A derisive comment came out the moment Li Qiye set foot on the platform. The Swiftsword Marquis sneered sarcastically: “I wonder if our little boy gained any magical arts from his struggle to climb up?”

He was full of malice with his deliberate attempts to mock Li Qiye. He wanted Li Qiye to become angry so that he would have an excuse to teach Li Qiye a lesson. Daring to steal his senior brother's woman? There would be no good end for Li Qiye.

Li Qiye paid him no mind. His eyes fell on the huge cave that resembled a ferocious dragon's mouth. For millions of years after being battered by rain and wind, it remained the same.

The Swiftsword Marquis continued: “Yo, this little errand boy doesn't have any skill, but his self-restraint is definitely first rate. Definitely a good characteristic for a turtle.”

At this time, many people glanced over at Li Qiye. The majority of the young experts here were from the Blood Race. From the marquis' taunting, they more or less knew about the matter between Li Qiye and Ye Chuyun. Of course, not everyone believed that Li Qiye was her errand boy.

They could easily see that the marquis was purposely ridiculing him in order to force a fight. With that, the marquis could destroy his brother's rival in love.

Li Qiye ignored him and continued to stare at the giant cave. He walked towards it step by step with a strange peculiarity. Each step had an indescribable rhythm. Others didn't pay any attention to his steps; Si Yuanyuan was the only one who was completely focused on him walking since she could sense the fluctuations. She tried to realize the meaning behind his actions.

As Li Qiye was fast approaching the seating area of their gathering, a young man stood up and coldly uttered: "This is the place where I discuss the dao with the other capable people. Not any random dog or cat can come here."

His long hair was fluttering with the wind to accentuate his slender and tall figure. Although he was not the muscular type, his physical seemed to be full of power and radiated a solar aura. He was the Pureblood School's descendant, Chi Tianyu. He inherited the purest bloodline of the school, so his body had a faint violet aura.

As the host, he had invited many youths to the Dragon Platform. Outside of the discussions, they wanted to build friendships and talk about the treasures in this place. His ambition was quite great since he aimed to use the group to comprehend Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform to earn an achievement no less than those before him.

The group was standing around the cave while Li Qiye walked straight towards him. Chi Tianyu was naturally not happy with this new intruder. Moreover, Li Qiye was his rival in love!

After hearing Chi Tianyu, the Swiftsword Marquis immediately

knew what to do. He was just waiting for his senior brother's order before cutting Li Qiye down. He blocked Li Qiye's path and coldly said: "An errand boy should know where he stands. This is the place of masters, scram to the side and serve. If you overstep your boundaries, I will break your dog legs!"

Li Qiye's eyes narrowed after he felt the pulse of this location. A murderous glint bloomed instantly. At this moment, the Swiftsword Marquis was no different from a dead man in his eyes.

Prior to this, he simply didn't care for the marquis' taunts. Who would actually care about an insect parading before them? But this time, the marquis was interfering with his business. No matter who they might be, those who block his path shall be killed without mercy!

"Swiftsword Marquis, who are you referring to?" At this time, a pleasant yet commanding voice appeared. A woman arrived from the sky like a lotus blossoming in a river. She was both charming and elegant.

"Schoolmaster Ye is here..." Someone uttered in surprise. Everyone quickly stood up to come and greet her. Even the marquis was startled and went through the formalities as well.

Ye Chuyun drifted through the sky with grace beyond words, as pretty as always.

Despite her young age, her status was half a generation higher than the people here since she made her debut earlier than Chi

Tianyu and Bai Jian. Among the five saints of the Blood Race, only the Skybearing Duke was from the same generation as her.

She was the first among the younger generation to become a Virtuous Paragon. Thus, she had a pivotal position among her peers and even the rest of the Barren Earth.

Those who came forward to greet her were mostly her suitors and admirers. This was especially true for Chi Tianyu. He became very spirited after seeing her. He straightened his back and confidently showed off his most charming side.

“It is an honor to have Schoolmaster Ye personally come to our little get-together. Tianyu has many questions on the road of cultivation, I hope that Schoolmaster Ye will be able to give me some pointers.” Chi Tianyu smiled and greeted Ye Chuyun.

Even Bai Jian, who hailed from an imperial lineage, didn’t dare to show any slight. He personally came forward with a friendly smile: “If even Brother Tianyu has to ask you for help, then the rest of us will have to listen to the side as your students. In this place, Schoolmaster Ye is indeed the best in terms of cultivation. Please sit in the master seat.”

The other young geniuses quickly came to say their part along with many praises. For some of them, meeting her once was already a blessing. Those who adored her were truly excited and even intoxicated.

She stepped onto the Dragon Platform and gently nodded her

head: “Everyone is too kind.” Having said that, she didn’t stop at all and instantly went next to Li Qiye with a smooth shift.

“I had too many things to deal with beforehand so this little sister arrived late, please excuse me, Brother Li.” Ye Chuyun spoke softly while standing next to Li Qiye. She spoke with the manner not of an extraordinary paragon or an untouchable schoolmaster, but a gentle and virtuous woman.

“Good to see you here.” Li Qiye gently nodded and continued to walk towards the hole in the ground while feeling the fluctuations of the platform. Ye Chuyun, on the other hand, followed right behind him.

This prompted many geniuses to glance at each other. Chi Tianyu’s smile was frozen stiff at the moment, so the atmosphere became quite strange.

The Swiftsword Marquis who wanted to act in his brother’s stead earlier didn’t dare to act presumptuously. He was only a junior before Ye Chuyun.

Bai Jian only smiled and shook his head. It was hard to diffuse this situation, so everyone felt a bit embarrassed and awkward.

Among the crowd, only the Half-moon Princess was secretly glad. This was what she wanted to see the most. If Li Qiye and Ye Chuyun were really going to be a pair, then Chi Tianyu would have to give up sooner or later. This meant that there was a chance for her to get together with him.

In her opinion, no one else was a better match for Chi Tianyu than her. They both came from the Blood-devil Tribe and their two great sects were equals! Moreover, the seniors in their sects also wanted the two of them to become dao companions.

Puzzled glances were shot across the crowd. Those who admired Ye Chuyun were at a bigger loss. They and even Chi Tianyu thought that she was here to participate in their get-together, they didn't expect Li Qiye to be her reason for coming. This made them quite uncomfortable and caused them to view Li Qiye as their enemy in love.

Li Qiye had taken several laps around the hole at this time with a particular rhythm. Meanwhile, both Ye Chuyun and Si Yuanyuan followed right after him. The difference between the two was that Ye Chuyun seemed to be much more caring and considerate towards him.

This scene left Chi Tianyu very upset as a storm of jealousy erupted in his heart. This only grew stronger after seeing Ye Chuyun's gentle eyes glossing over Li Qiye's back. Jealousy was gnawing his heart to pieces.

"Haha, do you actually think you can obtain some treasures?" He coldly snorted in order to put down Li Qiye.

Li Qiye stopped and glanced at him before smiling and responded dismissively: "So what? Enlightenment from Tiger Hill and treasures from the Dragon Platform! This is an ordinary matter."

“Hahahaha...” Chi Tianyu couldn’t help but laugh: “Enlightenment from Tiger Hill and treasures from the Dragon Platform! That depends on the person. It is only a fool’s dream unless they are as brilliant as an Immortal Emperor.”

“Haha, brother, a fool does not know that he is dreaming. He actually thinks that he is brilliant enough to be the future Immortal Emperor.” The Swiftsword Marquis naturally came to his brother’s aid and spoke sarcastically: “But he doesn’t know that his actions only make him a laughingstock to the world. Just a clown, that’s all.”

The other young geniuses stood there watching. They didn’t know or recognize Li Qiye. Those who liked Ye Chuyun were also very happy to see Chi Tianyu teach Li Qiye a lesson.

Ye Chuyun looked at them and slightly grimaced. A few people were suicidal; nothing could stop these types of people from rushing to their deaths.

Li Qiye raised his brows and coldly said: “Watch your mouth or you won’t even know the reason for your death!”

“Is that so?” Chi Tianyu answered before the marquis: “I also want to see who dares to threaten my Pureblood School at the Barren Earth. Who is courageous enough to antagonize my school?! Only death awaits those who dare to do so. Be smart and return from whence you came!”

Chapter 958: Obtaining Dragon Platform's Treasure

[Father and son for war](#); trusted brothers to fight a tiger. Chi Tianyu was also supporting his junior brother at this point!

The first phrase is just awkward to translate into English. It is a phrase meaning that you should go into battle with those you trust. A commander is the father while his troops should be his children, whether it is metaphorical or literal. As for the latter half, fighting a tiger requires precision and trust, so it is best to do so with your brother who you know won't betray/abandon you.

“No, brother, our Pureblood School does not bully people, so we won't bully him either.” The Swiftsword Marquis smirked: “Brother, I was a bit hasty with my words. However, I just said it like it is in order to wake him from his daydream.”

The marquis then glanced at Li Qiye and laughed arrogantly: “You said enlightenment from Tiger Hill and treasures from the Dragon Platform; very well, if you can obtain a treasure here, then I will apologize to you. No, I am a much more sincere person. If you can obtain a treasure, then I'll commit suicide for not being able to recognize a master despite having eyes.”

“A master in your eyes must at least be of the Godking level.” A young expert laughed and said: “But as for others, can they really claim to be a master?”

Loud laughter ensued from the crowd. They were very pleased to see their love rival, Li Qiye, being attacked.

“Really now?” Li Qiye wasn’t angry at all. He smirked at the marquis and said: “So if I obtain a treasure, you will actually commit suicide?”

“Haha, are you dreaming?” Even Chi Tianyu burst out in laughter and looked at Li Qiye with contempt: “Do you really think you are an Immortal Emperor? The popular phrase isn’t for a mortal like you. According to the records, only a single Immortal Emperor obtained a treasure from here. Someone like you is not good enough!”

“Haha, Brother, just let him continue being an idiot. We want to see what kind of treasure he can get, right? Who knows, he might pick up a pebble and actually think that it is a treasure.” The marquis was the next to mock Li Qiye: “Go for it then, I’ve been waiting to commit suicide for so long now.”

Li Qiye leisurely answered: “What else can I say if you wish to die so soon?”

Many saw his confidence, but they didn’t believe it either. One sneered: “Who does he think he is? Heh, if he can get a treasure from the platform, then I would be able to lay claim to every single item in the trove.”

“Brother Shan, don’t you know? Some people think that there is nothing they can’t do after obtaining some favor. The truth is that they are nothing more than clowns.” Another young expert snorted. He was particularly jealous of Li Qiye winning Ye

Chuyun's favor!

"Hold on!" Chi Tianyu called out right when Li Qiye was about to take action.

"What, got a problem?" Li Qiye glanced at him and smiled.

Chi Tianyu coldly responded: "My brother is a straightforward person. If you obtain a treasure, then he will commit suicide, but what if you don't? What are you going to do? Hmph, my brother's life can't be as valuable as your words."

"So you are saying that you have something in mind." Li Qiye grinned.

As the saying goes, brothers are of the same mind. The marquis naturally knew what his brother wanted to do. He sneered: "My life is one hundred times more precious than yours. However, I will not take back what I have said. Nevertheless, if you can't get a treasure, then you will have to end yourself! If I have to do it for you, the outcome will be much worse!"

The marquis believed that this was a rare opportunity to deal with Li Qiye, to rid his brother of a rival. Moreover, this would be carried out in a justified manner. Even if Ye Chuyun was to protect him, his image in her heart would drop several levels due to his incompetence.

Li Qiye glanced at the two brothers and slowly uttered: "Why

not? Since you two want my life, I'll bet on it then."

Even the two of them didn't believe that Li Qiye would accept it so readily. The rest of the crowd glanced at each other as well. This brat was way too confident, nearly to the level of ignorance.

A Blood-devil expert coldly laughed and cruelly said: "Haha, just wait for him to end himself then."

"Countless geniuses have never obtained anything, let alone a mortal like him." Even those who had no ill will against Li Qiye couldn't help but shake their heads after seeing his confidence.

For so many years now, brilliant geniuses and Godkings had tried to obtain something, but they all went home empty-handed. Enlightenment from Tiger Hill and treasures from the Dragon Platform — this was only a legend after all.

Li Qiye ignored them and continued to go around the giant hole. However, he reversed his direction this time. His pace became quicker and quicker, causing his heartbeat to increase as well. His pulse and the rhythm of this location began to synchronize.

At first, Ye Chuyun didn't realize anything. However, after one complete circle, she furrowed her brows and felt that something was amiss. Alas, no matter how hard she looked, she was unable to see through the profundities in his steps.

In fact, Si Yuanyuan had been watching for a very long time now.

She, as a genius who excelled in self-study, also failed to figure it out. Ye Chuyun had only just arrived, so she naturally couldn't see through the esoteric events either.

Li Qiye's pace became quicker and quicker. The rhythm became more and more abstruse. Now, his heartbeat was no longer synchronizing with the area, it was actually leading the area's pulse.

He was the only one who knew the mysteries of Tiger Hill, the Dragon Platform, and even the Hidden-dragon Mountains. In order to open this mysterious treasure trove, one must be able to control the pulse of this area!

“Obtaining the treasures at the Dragon Platform relies on fate. Even if you walk around ten thousand times, it is still useless.” Chi Tianyu laughed and mocked him.

The marquis added: “Brother, the guy is only stalling for time. Heh, it's fine, just let him walk ten thousand laps around the hole. In short, no matter how many laps he makes, it won't change the dire situation he is in. Wait until he is tired, then we'll take his life...”

“Open!” But before the marquis could finish his sentence, a shout came from Li Qiye. No one could clearly see what happened as the entire hill and platform began to shake as if there was an earthquake.

“Boom!” In the blink of an eye, a golden light surged out from the

cavern like a geyser or an unstoppable volcanic eruption.

Such a sudden change left everyone on the platform terrified. Many people in the Holy City were alarmed as well and looked towards the direction of the platform.

“Did someone obtain a treasure at the Dragon Platform?” Someone from the previous generation was startled and murmured after seeing this.

Once the golden light disappeared, a treasure could be found in Li Qiye’s hand. He grabbed the item flying out from inside the light with incredible speed.

This treasure resembled a little Golden Dragon. It emitted golden rays that resembled willow branches that were seemingly filled with life.

Before everyone could see what it was, Li Qiye took out a box and carefully stored the treasure inside.

He smirked after doing so. Beneath this earth were too many good items. In the past, the Ancient Ming failed to drain this land dry. Even the absolutely stunning Immortal Emperor Tian Tu couldn’t do so after personally coming here, let alone other people.

The only thing that made him sad was that only one treasure would escape each time the trove was opened; it was impossible to take more than one item at a time.

In just a brief moment, the platform turned extremely quiet. Many people had their mouths wide open and couldn't close them right away. They were all astounded by this event.

After what seemed like an eternity, someone suddenly woke up from their daze and took a deep breath. Even at this moment, they couldn't believe their own eyes. This was simply too astonishing!

A young expert murmured: "This, this can't be real." Even though they had witnessed it themselves, they still found it unbelievable. Countless brilliant geniuses and God-Monarchs had tried to obtain something, but all of them failed to receive anything of value.

The popular phrase became part of the legends for the future generations, but today, it actually happened. The legend played out before them in such a stunning manner.

Bai Jian composed himself and muttered: "The legend is true, Immortal Emperor Xue Xi obtained an incredible item from this place!"

As for the Swiftsword Marquis and Chi Tianyu, their expressions kept on changing colors from white to red. Earlier, they wanted to take Li Qiye's life, but now, they were violently slapped in the face.

"I recall that someone wanted to hand over his dog life." After putting away his box, Li Qiye lazily glanced over at the marquis.

The marquis stood still. At this moment, he was riding a tiger and had to follow through in this difficult and embarrassing situation. He couldn't commit suicide. Who didn't value their own life?

But now, if he went back on his word, he would lose all of his reputation and wouldn't be able to show his face in the Barren Earth any longer.

Chapter 959: Swiftsword Marquis' Quick Draw

The marquis' expression suddenly turned ugly. He stood there not knowing what to do while the crowd was staring at him.

Although Chi Tianyu really wanted to help his junior brother, he couldn't come up with any plan at this moment either.

The marquis couldn't go back on his word in public like this or else he would lose all credit and be cast aside in the future. He gnashed his teeth and made his decision before slowly walking towards Li Qiye while coldly uttering: "My life is right here, take it if you can!"

"Ah, backing out now? Too reluctant to commit suicide." Li Qiye glanced at him and smiled.

The Swiftsword Marquis drily said: "The strong should die in a suitable manner. Suicide is an affront to the soul of our Blood-devil tribe! Come kill me if you can. As long as you can take it, my life is yours!" The marquis was not willing to commit suicide, so he came up with this plan to let Li Qiye come and kill him.

Ye Chuyun coldly glared at him and spoke: "Shameless."

The marquis' expression kept on changing colors. However, he pretended not to hear her, for his life was too precious to him.

“Schoolmaster Ye, according to our Pureblood School’s teachings, suicide is wasting one’s life. Even after entering hell, the offender would be spit on by the souls of our ancestors. We only have people who die in battle, not cowards.” Chi Tianyu quickly backed his brother up.

Ye Chuyun only glanced at him without replying.

“Come, I won’t attack; you can do as you please. As long as you have the ability, go ahead and take my life!” The marquis shouted at Li Qiye.

Such words were not well-received by the crowd. Although they might seem heroic, anyone could see through them. This Li Qiye was not much different than a mortal. Even if he was a cultivator, his cultivation wouldn’t be strong at all.

On the other hand, the marquis was a famous young expert in this southern region with peerless speed. Even if he didn’t attack and let Li Qiye do as he pleased, Li Qiye still wouldn’t be able to take his life.

Since it was impossible for Li Qiye to do so, his words were only heroic and straightforward on the surface. He had already calculated this much.

Li Qiye looked at him and smirked: “So after all that, it is just that you don’t want to die. Very well, I am someone who likes to break other people’s fantasies and crush their hope. If you don’t want to die, I’ll make you die in agonizing despair!”

“Since your title is Swiftsword, this means that your swordplay is very fast. Very well.” Li Qiye smiled: “I’ll stand in front of you and you can make the first move. If your sword is faster than me, you win. Not only will you be able to save your life, you will also be able to take mine.”

At this point, Li Qiye’s smile widened like a rippling wave. It turned into a free yet gentle laughter.

Others didn’t understand this smile, but Ye Chuyun did. When Li Qiye smiled like this, it meant death. It was a reaper’s smile. No matter who they might be, they would surely die no matter how many rescuers came running to their aid!

Many people on the platform stared at him in disbelief. This might have been the most insane thing they had ever heard, so absurd that they were doubting their own ears.

Everyone knew that although the marquis’ cultivation was not as strong as Chi Tianyu’s, even his senior brother was not necessarily faster than him in terms of speed.

But now, Li Qiye wanted to compete in speed with the marquis — this was simply crazy. They stared at Li Qiye and thought that he was either a madman or someone hiding his ability.

However, they were very skeptical because no matter how they looked at him, he just seemed like an ordinary mortal!

“Hahaha...” The Swiftsword Marquis laughed wildly with the same gaze as everyone else, thinking that Li Qiye was insane: “Good, good. Even a junior like you is looking down on me. Very well, if you are so confident, then what else can I say? Deference is no substitute for obedience!”

With that, his eyes lit up while gazing at Li Qiye: “If my sword isn’t as fast as you, then there’s no need for you to do anything, I will jump down into the cave!”

Even Chi Tianyu revealed a cold grin at this moment. The situation had reversed. Li Qiye was foolish to the point where he would help the marquis recover from his difficult situation by courting death.

Competing in speed with his junior brother? Chi Tianyu sneered at the sight of Li Qiye courting death. He couldn’t have wished for anything better.

The Half-moon Princess also stared at him in astonishment. She naturally didn’t want this crazy guy to die, but she was not in the position to say anything. Otherwise, Chi Tianyu would be unhappy with her.

Only Bai Jian quietly watched amidst the crowd, as if he wanted to catch the coming event in its entirety.

“I wonder if you will really jump down at that point.” Li Qiye smiled and inched closer towards the marquis: “Make your move. I

hope your sword is as fast as your title claims.”

The marquis’ expression turned ugly after being disdained like this.

“Clang!” He slowly unsheathed his sword. It chafed against the scabbard, creating a continuous sword hymn.

He coldly stared at Li Qiye and shouted: “Prepare yourself! Once I make my move, I’m afraid you won’t even know the reason for your death.”

“Is your sword as slow as your mouth?” Li Qiye lazily retorted without looking at the guy.

In a split second, the marquis’ eyes turned cold and focused on Li Qiye. At this particular junction, he was able to grasp every single change in Li Qiye.

Even though he didn’t put Li Qiye in his eyes, he still came from a great lineage. In battle, he would be very attentive of his enemy’s actions before delivering a fatal blow.

The rest of the crowd watched on with bated breaths. The marquis was quite famous for his fast sword techniques. Many people here had seen his swordplay themselves. The sword shall see blood. More often than not, it was a one hit kill as well.

A glint flashed. The marquis unleashed his sword. It was too

swift to visually discern and went straight for Li Qiye's throat in an instant!

Everyone's heart skipped a beat. If it was them in this situation, they wouldn't necessarily be able to dodge its speedy tip!

In the blink of an eye, time seemed to have stopped. Everything came to a halt like a picture. The rest of the crowd became wide-eyed and watched in disbelief.

Two fingers were gripping the sword. Naturally, it was Li Qiye's fingers that stopped the marquis' attack. Li Qiye seemed so relaxed, but the marquis couldn't pull back his sword; it was as if his sword was stuck between two mountains.

Everyone saw the marquis' attack, but no one saw Li Qiye's counter and how he managed to catch the blade.

Ye Chuyun only shook her head for this was within her expectations. Someone of the marquis' level was simply an ant in Li Qiye's eyes. Just think about that year back in the Heavenly Dao Academy, when his simple actions destroyed a group of ancestors! This marquis was nothing in comparison.

"Crack!" Before anyone could regain their wits, the sound of bones snapping ensued, followed by blood spurting everywhere.

"Ahh!" A shrill scream full of agony soared to the sky. The crowd finally saw that both the marquis' hands and legs were crushed by

Li Qiye. He quivered after falling to the ground in great torment.

Li Qiye stomped on the marquis and leisurely said: “Claiming to be Swiftsword at this level?”

Everyone felt suffocated after seeing this. Li Qiye was way too fast. No one could see how he crushed the limbs of the marquis at all.

Even though Li Qiye’s dao foundation was sealed, his four Immortal Physiques were still there. Was there anything faster than the Soaring Immortal Physique in this world?

“Halt your impudence!” Chi Tianyu was shocked and shouted after seeing the marquis being trampled on by Li Qiye.

“What are you planning to do?” Ye Chuyun’s eyes turned cold as she spoke gravely after seeing Chi Tianyu making a move.

With great anger, Chi Tianyu took a deep breath before looking at Li Qiye to make a deal: “If possible, my Pureblood School is willing to redeem my brother’s life. Just name the price.”

The two brothers were indeed very close. Chi Tianyu naturally didn’t want to see the marquis die miserably at Li Qiye’s hands.

“What does a small sect like the Pureblood School have to tempt me?” Li Qiye smiled and said: “I want his life, so his life I shall have!”

“Reconsider!” Chi Tianyu stressed: “If you spare my brother, you will be richly rewarded, but if you end him, you will become enemies with my Pureblood School and my Blood-devil Tribe!”

The majority would feel trepidation after hearing this. The school was a great sect in the southern region, and it was needless to say more about the Blood-devil Tribe as it was considered the biggest tribe in the area.

Chapter 960: Crimson Night Kingdom's Supreme Elder

Everyone was holding their breaths at this point. Chi Tianyu's declaration was not just an empty threat. They all knew full well that the Blood-devil Tribe had always been united with great solidarity...

“Are you threatening me?” Li Qiye smiled while pressing down harder on the marquis before leisurely answering: “Pureblood School? I don't care. Blood-devil Tribe? I also don't care. Should you provoke me, not to mention these two existences, even your entire Blood Race will live under the shadow of fear!”

The young generation here became dumbfounded after hearing this. Was this brat insane? Offending the Pureblood School was one thing, but now, his words had offended the entire Blood Race! There was nowhere else to go in the Barren Earth if one offended the Blood Race.

“Such bold words. Our Blood Race will live in fear? Do you think you are an Immortal Emperor?” A cold voice resounded with great immensity, causing others to become short of breath.

Two people stepped onto the Dragon Platform, one young and one old. The youth was the Crimson Night Duke while the other was an old man with gray hair. His blood energy was mist-like, as if his body itself was formed from it.

There were many visual phenomena of living beings behind him

as if they were worshipping and giving him their energy. This energy would allow him to destroy this world with a simple gesture.

Without a doubt, this old man was an Early Era Paragon, one with plentiful blood energy.

Si Yuanyuan, standing behind Li Qiye, was startled to see this old man and cried out: “Supreme Elder...!”

The youths here quickly went to greet this old man for he was the Supreme Elder of Crimson Night. He had always been presiding over the Thunder Tower and held great fame.

With a backing this time, the duke was quite confident. He arrogantly stared at Li Qiye and laughed: “Junior, the Barren Earth isn’t a place for you to do as you please. Quickly release Brother Swiftsword or your life will be forfeit!”

Chi Tianyu was glad to see the Supreme Elder arrive in person. Nothing could be better if he could drag the Crimson Night Kingdom into these muddled waters as well.

However, the duke’s words went in one ear and out the other. Li Qiye didn’t even bother looking at the Supreme Elder.

The duke felt humiliated and couldn’t hold back. He shouted: “Junior, are you listening?! Kneel and beg for forgiveness immediately!”

“Crack!” More bones were broken as a shrill scream could be heard. Before anyone could see anything, the duke’s legs were crushed by Li Qiye’s kick. He fell straight to the ground and rolled in pain before Li Qiye stepped on his body as well.

“Finally got back to the Holy City after some time. I was feeling peaceful, but alas, a few idiots just had to spoil my good mood.” With one foot on the duke and one foot on the marquis, Li Qiye slowly uttered: “It seems like if I don’t massacre a few tens of thousands, people will actually think I am a batch of dough that anyone can knead.”

“Junior, stop!” The Supreme Elder was alarmed by this sudden change. He thunderously shouted and caused the crowd to sway with distress.

“Oh? The old finally wants to protect these little kids?” Li Qiye glanced over at the elder. He was still nonchalant as if it was no big deal.

The elder took one step forward and his blood energy soared like a tidal wave, capable of engulfing the entire hill and platform. In the blink of an eye, a paragon’s aura surged forth with a star-plucking momentum.

The elder’s erupting aura caused everyone here to tremble. They had to take several steps backward.

Ye Chuyun grunted after seeing the aggressive gesture. She took

one step forward as well. A pure lotus flower floated to the sky and illuminated the nine continents. It easily stopped the elder's aura.

Even though the elder was an Early Era Paragon, his cultivation was not a match for Ye Chuyun's. Early Era Paragons were the weakest among even ordinary paragons.

Ye Chuyun was very powerful as the first paragon of the younger generation. The group of Chi Tianyu couldn't compare to her at all. She had the power to fight against paragons from the previous generation!

Her involvement caused the elder's expression to change. However, he wasn't afraid of her as he coldly spoke: "Schoolmaster Ye, I respect you as the leader of a school. However, this matter involves our entire Crimson Night! If you choose to protect this brute who hurt our disciples, then it is the same as becoming our enemy!"

Most people felt dread after hearing this. Many rulers and sect masters wouldn't want to antagonize the Crimson Night Kingdom.

It was very unwise to provoke a lineage with two emperors.

Ye Chuyun calmly stated: "My prestige is not for an elder like you to question!" Despite her gentle nature, each of her words was as heavy as the unshakable Mount Tai.

After all, she was an incredible Virtuous Paragon and the ruler of

a country. Her acting as a virtuous woman around Li Qiye didn't mean that she was weak! She simply maintained a low profile, but once she was ready to go, the royal aura of a ruler and might of a paragon would vividly manifest.

Not only was the crowd stunned, but even the elder was shocked after hearing this. This sentence carried quite a heavy punch!

The younger generation felt that she was even higher than they previously thought — worthy of admiration. Prior to this, due to her low-key nature, the young ones in the Barren Earth, especially those from big lineages like the Pureblood School, had forgotten about her status and cultivation. They felt that they were on the same level and in the same generation as her.

But now, her showing such contempt towards the Crimson Night Supreme Elder and displaying her might was a rude awakening for them. The fact was that she was far above them!

The elder became sullen all of a sudden. Ye Chuyun was indeed above him in terms of cultivation. Although their kingdom had two emperors, the Pure Lotus School also had emperor laws. In a direct confrontation, he was not her match without an imperial weapon.

The elder gravely said: "Schoolmaster Ye, I admit that you are indeed stronger than me. However, there are people who you will never be able to provoke! I can forgive that junior for harming my disciples. However, I am under the orders of Ancestor Storm God to bring our Crimson Night Kingdom's disciples back!"

With that, he became more resolute and aggressive: “Think again if you want to oppose my Crimson Night!”

“Storm God!” The younger generation all gasped after hearing this title.

Si Yuanyuan was aghast as well. If the Storm God ordered her to come back, then no one would be able to oppose her.

Everyone here was completely tongue-tied. Even Bai Jian’s group was full of apprehension. The Storm God was indeed a fearful title in the minds of the Barren Earth’s inhabitants.

She was an ancestor of Crimson Night and rumored to be extremely powerful. Even if she didn’t come into being, she was still a big threat to the region.

Her name was Feng Piaoluo, the second daughter of Immortal Emperor Chen Xue. She kept her mother’s maiden name and was a very overbearing person. Her words were laws at Crimson Night. Not many would dare to go against her.

While the title of Storm God was scaring everyone, Li Qiye smiled and told Ye Chuyun: “Chuyun, get back. You shouldn’t come out to defend me, lest people say that I am someone who can only hide behind women.”

She didn’t question his request and immediately went back to

quietly stand behind him.

Chu Tianyu's eyes turned red from jealousy after seeing Ye Chuyun being so obedient towards Li Qiye. His teeth were about to break from him gritting them so hard. He didn't understand what kind of charm Li Qiye had to make her obey him like this.

After Ye Chuyun retreated, the Supreme Elder stared at Li Qiye and raised his voice: "Junior, let go of my disciples and I will forgive your sin of ignorance!"

"So I should be thanking you then?" Li Qiye smiled while keeping his feet on top of the bodies.

At this time, the duke could no longer endure the pain and cried out: "Elder, save me..."

"Junior, let my disciples go and hand over Si Yuanyuan, then I'll pretend that nothing happened today!" The Supreme Elder's attitude softened at this point. Since Ye Chuyun was willing to back Li Qiye, he didn't want to go all out against her.

Li Qiye smiled and slowly asked: "And if I don't?"

The elder turned cold and revealed a murderous intent. He awe-inspiringly declared: "Junior, you don't know the immensity of the heaven and earth. No one dares to breach the Storm God's orders. The offenders? Kill without mercy! No one can protect you in the Barren Earth!"

Si Yuanyuan turned pale after hearing this. She came from the Crimson Night Kingdom and knew that the Storm God's authority was unchallengeable!

"I, I will go back with you, Elder, as long as you don't pursue Young Noble Li's mistake." Si Yuanyuan stepped out and lowered her head.

She didn't think that her issues would reach the Storm God. She also didn't want to see Li Qiye being chased by the Storm God because of her!

She understood that her return would most likely result in being placed under house arrest. However, she preferred this over Li Qiye dying for her sake.

Chapter 961: Death Without A Burial

The current assembly was startled at this moment. Even the group of the Half-moon Princess didn't expect that Si Yuanyuan was a disciple from Crimson Night since she had been quietly following Li Qiye the entire time. Her obedient demeanor made it so that no one paid any attention to her.

In fact, very few in the Barren Earth knew that the kingdom had an extraordinary disciple like her. Several ancestors didn't want her fame to spread far on the outside due to her great talents. If she were to gain a reputation, it would be detrimental to Chi Zixian's position. Thus, the ancestors chose to erase her presence so that no one would find out about a genius like her.

On the other hand, she didn't want to have a direct confrontation against the ancestors from the imperial family. Because of this, she wasn't known at all in this region.

"Little girl, you underestimate me too much." Li Qiye smiled and shook his head, then he made her go back behind him again: "The Storm God cannot frighten me. Stand behind me and watch. Since you have decided to follow me, no one in the nine worlds will dare to touch a hair on your head."

Si Yuanyuan hesitated for a moment after hearing this. She didn't know how strong Li Qiye was, but she knew full well just how terrifying the Storm God was.

"It's okay, just leave everything up to him." Ye Chuyun noticed

her hesitation and comforted her.

After hearing Ye Chuyun, Si Yuanyuan glanced at the Supreme Elder for a moment before quietly walking back behind Li Qiye. Given the choice, she naturally would not want to go back and be placed under house arrest.

The elder became extremely unhappy after seeing this. This was truly challenging their kingdom's prestige.

“This girl is now one of my people.” Li Qiye looked at the elder and lazily spoke: “Go back and tell that vixen Storm God that before me, she'd better tuck her tail and hide! Even if her father, Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, was still in this world, I still wouldn't put her in my eyes, let alone now. Otherwise, I'll crush her to death with my own hands!”

“Disobedient animal! You dare to shame my ancestor?! You deserve death!” The Supreme Elder was furious after hearing this. He roared like an enraged lion and flipped his hand over to unleash a murderous palm technique. It carried a destructive aura towards Li Qiye.

The attack of an Early Era Paragon carried a devastating momentum along with the power of many living beings, causing people to tremble. It was as if the entire world was in disarray and there was no place to hide.

Li Qiye didn't bat an eye against this attack. He casually reached out and formed the Dragon-subduing Palm. Such a leisurely

gesture was able to reverse the universe and displace the sky.

The oncoming palm was quickly pushed away by Li Qiye's Dragon-subduing Palm. Meanwhile, the elder's body left the ground as if he had lost control.

His center of gravity was completely in Li Qiye's grasp as he tumbled through the air.

"No—" This was an unwilling cry of disbelief and despair.

Initially, Li Qiye's casual swing didn't harm the elder at all. At best, it only made him stumble a bit. However, the huge cave was behind Li Qiye, so the elder fell down after his misstep.

Death was assured for anyone who fell into this cave on the Dragon Platform. It didn't matter if one could soar in the sky or traverse the earth. Once they fell inside, they could only watch themselves fall and disappear from this world!

"No!" The elder's echoes continued to rise from the cave. This fall marked his departure from this world!

Chi Tianyu's group couldn't help but take several steps back in unison. Even a Virtuous Paragon was helpless after falling in — this made their legs grow weak. They would also disappear after falling in.

"Why are there always some people who think that I am so easily

bullied?” Li Qiye smiled. “Pop!” He kicked the Crimson Night Duke into the cave as well.

“No...” The duke watched himself fall into the cave and screamed out in despair. However, it didn’t matter how loud he screamed or how much he struggled, his demise was inevitable.

Si Yuanyuan couldn’t react in time for it all happened too quickly. Even if she wanted to plead for the duke, it was already too late.

The marquis was scared out of his mind after seeing the two fall into the cave and screamed: “Brother, hurry and save me...”

“Pop!” However, before he could finish his sentence, Li Qiye kicked him into the cave as well.

“You!” Chi Tianyu was both frightened and furious after seeing this. He wanted to rush forward, but the Half-moon Princess stopped him.

Li Qiye lazily glanced over them once and declared: “In my eyes, all of you are mere insects. I didn’t want to start a massacre after coming back this time, but if you want to die, I don’t mind washing the Holy City with blood. It’s a shame, I do feel sorry for breaking the tranquility of this city!”

“Remember well, anyone who wants to provoke me best prepare a coffin beforehand!” With that, he turned around and left.

Si Yuanyuan quickly chased after him. Meanwhile, Ye Chuyun stared dismissively at the crowd before shaking her head and following after him as well.

“Li Qiye... it’s him.” Bai Jian suddenly remembered a certain someone after seeing Li Qiye’s overbearing arrogance, someone that had been long-forgotten.

“Is he really still alive?” He murmured to himself. He had never seen this person before, only heard of his tales. Several years ago, the legends about him arrived at the southern region from the Eastern Hundred Cities.

However, the world thought that he was dead so no one really paid attention to him.

Chi Tianyu’s eyes were completely red as he quivered with anger. He gritted his teeth and viciously said: “I swear to have vengeance even if it is the last thing I do! Li, I will crush you to pieces!”

His bone-deep hatred towards Li Qiye was not only because Li Qiye killed his junior brother, but moreso due to Ye Chuyun. He was stricken with jealousy to the point of losing his reason. In his vengeful mind right now, only one of them could continue to live in this world!

The rest of the group on the platform stared at each other without saying anything. Li Qiye’s first attack threw the Supreme Elder into the cave and gave them the feeling that he was

mysterious and unfathomable.

Nevertheless, they still didn't know whether Li Qiye was hiding his skills or the elder was merely uncareful and stumbled into the cave by himself.

“The treasure from the Dragon Platform... it must absolutely be something incredible.” After the group regained their wits, someone murmured with mouth-watering greed.

Alas, even if they coveted his treasure, no one would recklessly take action. In their opinion, even if Li Qiye was not powerful, who would dare to do anything with Ye Chuyun protecting him?

The Pure Lotus School had a property in the Holy City. This was an old mansion where Ye Chuyun was staying.

The group went to this mansion. Li Qiye immediately took out a box and handed it to Ye Chuyun: “Chuyun, staying with me for the last few days has been tough for you, so this treasure is yours.”

The treasure inside the box was the one from the Dragon Platform. Li Qiye didn't even bother researching it and directly gave it to Ye Chuyun without a care in the world.

“But...” Ye Chuyun was startled: “Brother Li, this is a Dragon Platform's treasure, it's not a trivial item at all.”

Countless people coveted the treasures from the platform, yet at this moment Li Qiye was casually handing it to her.

He smiled in response: “I didn’t come to the platform for the treasures anyway. It was only to confirm something. Grabbing the treasure was just a part of the process.”

“I have benefited a lot by staying at your side, especially from your guidance.” Ye Chuyun hesitated for a bit before answering: “I can’t accept something so precious.”

“Accept it.” Li Qiye flatly said: “I can’t take back what I have given away.”

Ye Chuyun slightly bowed towards him and quietly accepted the treasure box without saying anything else.

Next, Li Qiye told Si Yuanyuan who was standing to the side: “Before I leave, I will pass down more primordial laws to you. In the future, I will also give you one or two suitable treasures should the chance arise.”

“Thank you, Young Noble.” Si Yuanyuan responded instantly. She didn’t go with him for any treasures but rather the primordial laws. For someone who cultivated the Sunset Glow Scripture like her, nothing was more important than the primordial laws.

It was not surprising for Li Qiye to know the primordial laws of

the Blood Race. This was because he had obtained the heavenly dao and primordial chapter of the Blood Progenitor. The race's merit laws came from this heavenly chapter. It was just that prior to this, Li Qiye was too lazy to look into these primordial laws.

Si Yuanyuan was very special in his eyes. Her accomplishments with the Sunset Glow Scripture were without comparison. Li Qiye willingly taught her these primordial laws because he hoped to leave behind some insurance at the Barren Earth. Who knows if the Blood Race would change in the future?

As long as he left behind this preparation, even if there were changes to the race in the future, someone else would still be able to control the overarching situation.

Chapter 962: Chi Zixian

“Where do you want to go?” Ye Chuyun asked after hearing Li Qiye.

Li Qiye lifted his head and gazed at the majestic Hidden-dragon Mountains: “I want to go to the Hidden-dragon Mountains. It might take some time.”

“I’ll go with you.” Ye Chuyun replied with haste: “Maybe I will be able to assist you.”

“No.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “This trip is a personal matter. At the same time, I hope that you can stay behind since I have something else for you to do.”

She replied: “Just give the order.”

Li Qiye looked at Si Yuanyuan and said: “It seems like the Crimson Night Kingdom won’t give up. Before I return, you just need to protect Yuanyuan.”

“I’m afraid that will involve Sister Ye and the Pure Lotus School.” Si Yuanyuan felt apologetic in her mind. She was not only dragging Li Qiye down with her, but also Ye Chuyun.

Li Qiye shook his head: “Don’t worry about that. I am not someone who is afraid of trouble, and those who stand by my side should be the same. If the kingdom is smart, they will run away as

far as possible. Otherwise, if they anger me, I'll personally visit them!"

"Don't worry, little sister." Ye Chuyun consoled her as well: "With Brother Li as your protector, the kingdom won't be able to do anything to you."

Si Yuanyuan only gently sighed in the end and held her words. She didn't want the two to fight the kingdom, but there was a good chance of her being placed under house arrest if she were to return.

This was because it was nearly time for Chi Zixian to ascend to the royal throne. The elders of the imperial family naturally didn't want a competitor like her to appear at this crucial moment!

"If nothing unexpected happens, I'll come back soon. At most, it will only be ten days." Li Qiye stated.

Ye Chuyun nodded in response: "What about the Godwar Mountain?"

They initially came for the Godwar Mountain, but the trip had been delayed this whole time.

Li Qiye glanced at the horizon and said: "There's no rush, everything is within my grasp no matter what happens. After I'm done with the Hidden-dragon Mountains, we'll go to the Godwar Mountain."

In fact, Li Qiye's trip to the dragon mountains was only to confirm something, not for a treasure.

Over the next few days, Li Qiye taught the primordial laws to Si Yuanyuan. Although the laws were quite abstruse, Si Yuanyuan had a great foundation due to the Sunset Glow Scripture, so she learned very quickly. Moreover, she was able to understand the scripture to this extent without any guidance, and now she had Li Qiye to teach her. Thus, it was not difficult for her to learn the primordial laws.

After doing so, Li Qiye left the Holy City and entered the mountains alone.

Within this period of time, the news of the Crimson Night Kingdom's Supreme Elder's tragic death reached them. Chi Zixian heard it as well.

Her expression quickly shifted to a chilling glare! She was one of the Blood Race's five saints. She ranked higher than the Half-moon Princess and Chi Tianyu because she came from the Crimson Night Kingdom and was destined for greatness.

In terms of pure talent, she might be weaker than Bai Jian and the Skybearing Duke. However, she had an incomparable advantage in hailing from a sect with two emperors.

She was not born as the heir to the throne and had to defeat several competitors in the imperial family. Right now, the most

fortunate thing for her was that their kingdom hadn't produced a brilliant genius like Ye Tiandi. Otherwise, she wouldn't have been able to win this successor position despite her powerful backing.

However, there was still a great shadow looming in her mind — Si Yuanyuan!

Si Yuanyuan came from a side branch and had to teach herself, yet she was successful in the Sunset Glow Scripture. Her accomplishments had a big impact on Chi Zixian's current position.

More importantly, Si Yuanyuan's side branch had an ancestor who came from the imperial family, thus she had the direct bloodline of an Immortal Emperor!

However, the most shocking thing to Chi Zixian was that Si Yuanyuan's enlightenment of the Sunset Glow Scripture was peerless. This meant that Si Yuanyuan coming to rule the Crimson Night Kingdom was not out of the question.

The kingdom had a tradition of tracing back to the origin. Moreover, this tradition was started by their progenitor, Immortal Emperor Chi Ye.

At a young age, the emperor cultivated the Sunset Glow Scripture as his starting point. He entered the Blood Primal Ground for training as well. His status was recognized by the primal ground, and he even took the reins of the Blood Race in place of the Primal Ground!

Later on, the Crimson Night Kingdom went on a decline until Immortal Emperor Chen Xue's birth. He also returned to the primal ground at a young age to work on his grand dao and eventually won the throne to revitalize his kingdom! This allowed the kingdom to once again take charge of the Blood Race instead of the primal ground!

Because of its prestigious past, the kingdom had always wanted to return to the top of their race, to once more become their leader!

Even though the Storm God backing Chi Zixian was very influential, this didn't mean that all the ancestors in the kingdom supported her.

This was especially true after Si Yuanyuan's appearance. To a certain extent, it truly affected Chi Zixian's position. A few elders were able to see hope in Si Yuanyuan due to her mastery of the Sunset Glow Scripture. This meant that she had a great chance of returning to the primal ground to cultivate the legendary primordial laws just like Immortal Emperor Chi Ye back then! If she could achieve this, then it meant that the Crimson Night Kingdom could return to the top of the Blood Race and gain the ability to command the entire race across the nine worlds!

If this situation came true, then not only would Chi Zixian lose her royal throne, her branch would also lose control over the kingdom.

Thus, both she and her branch would never allow for this to

happen. The imperial family's ancestors of her branch decided to erase all signs of Si Yuanyuan's existence, so outsiders never found out that the kingdom still had such a brilliant disciple.

In fact, if certain powerful ancestors didn't allow it, Si Yuanyuan might have disappeared from this world already.

Chi Zixian coldly uttered with a twisted expression: "This slut dared to actually show her face again instead of hiding for the rest of her life!"

"Your Highness will be able to ascend to the throne soon, so her sudden appearance right now might be a reaction to that." An expert next to her speculated.

Chi Zixian coldly responded: "Someone from a side branch like her wants to compete for the royal seat against me? Just a fool's dream!"

Despite saying that, Chi Zixian knew full well that if Si Yuanyuan could return to the primal ground, she would actually have the chance to take control of the kingdom.

"Her appearance might not be an attack on Your Highness." Her strategist mused: "Your Highness' inauguration has already been decided. Even if Si Yuanyuan has the protection of the ancestors, she still won't be able to reverse the situation. Your Highness should just wait in peace before your ascension instead of being distracted by this matter."

“No!” Chi Zixian’s expression darkened: “This slut cannot be left alive. The longer she lives, the longer she will remain a threat! Even if I become ruler, she can still come back and take over the royal throne when she returns to the primal ground!”

“Your Highness, we shouldn’t do it!” The strategist was startled: “If Your Highness kills Si Yuanyuan, then it would break the pact. The ancestors will not be happy!”

The only reason Si Yuanyuan was still alive right now was because she had ancestors protecting her. However, because of the Storm God’s imperious authority, both sides made concessions. Si Yuanyuan couldn’t enter the imperial family to learn emperor laws while Chi Zixian’s side guaranteed not to harm her despite her being a thorn in Chi Zixian’s eyes.

“Really now?” Her eyes turned cold and her words were even colder: “It is different now. The slut seduced outsiders to murder the Supreme Elder. This is treason and must be punished with death! I, as the main descendant of Crimson Night, have both the responsibility and the authority to dispose the sect of traitors!”

Chi Zixian didn’t want Si Yuanyuan to live any longer since her existence would always be a threat to her! In Chi Zixian’s mind, Si Yuanyuan had to die!

“Hmm...” The strategist pondered: “It won’t be easy to answer those older forefathers once we kill Si Yuanyuan.”

“There is nothing to say.” Chi Zixian sneered: “Everyone has the

responsibility to deal with traitors! That slut conspired with outsiders to kill our Supreme Elder — this is a sin of renouncing her ancestors and sect! Even if the forefathers were to blame us, the ancestor can still handle it!”

The ancestor Chi Zixian referred to was the Storm God. As the daughter of Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, she had absolute authority in the kingdom!

Chi Zixian drily said: “Make the preparations, I will go to the Holy City tomorrow to personally deal with that traitorous slut!”

Her underlings acknowledged her command and went to carry it out.

She then looked outside with a chilling smile, ‘that slut is dead for sure this time!’ She would be able to sleep soundly after the slut was dead.

For her future goals, she wanted to use the Storm God for as long as possible while the ancestor was still alive to suppress the other ancestors. She must plan aggressive reforms so that the control over the kingdom would truly be in her branch’s hands!

Chapter 963: Hidden-Dragon Mountains

Li Qiye left the Holy City for the Hidden-dragon Mountains. He continued to travel through the mountain ridge while gauging the location the whole way.

This mountain range spanned across the land for millions of miles like a gigantic dragon in all of its grandeur. Many existences were born here. This was not only the paradise of the human race, but also home to many animals.

The average person might not be able to feel anything after entering the mountain. However, it was different for Li Qiye since he could sense the powerful quake underground, a supreme impact as if there was an endless source of life gushing out of the ground.

As he continued around the ridge, he finally made it to a ravine. While inside, he took a look around before whistling.

It was a piercingly harsh whistle. People would cover their ears after hearing this as they would feel that the sound would cause pain that felt like it was piercing their eardrums.

There was a strange and obscure characteristic of this whistle that allowed the sound to travel deep into the ground.

“Crashh!” A long time after his whistle, mud and soil flew everywhere as a creature crawled out of the ground.

This creature's entire body was as black as ink. The scales on its body seemed to be made out of black steel. It had a dragon's head with a single horn at the top while its body resembled a [Pixiu](#).

Pixiu (Chinese: 貔貅; pinyin: píxiū; Wade-Giles: P'i-hsiu) is a Chinese mythical hybrid creature commonly but incorrectly referred to in the West by the Greek word "chimera". It is considered to be a very powerful protector to practitioners of Feng Shui. It resembles a strong, winged lion.

It cautiously stared at Li Qiye after crawling out of the ground. It postured offensively, but at the same time, it was ready to burrow again at any moment.

"Earthdrake, quite a rare creature." Li Qiye chuckled after seeing the beast.

Li Qiye took out a handful of leaves hanging on a branch and dangled it in front of the drake before smiling: "Come, as long as you take me to that place, I'll let you eat your fill."

This branch was from the Dracotree. It was completely irresistible to the Earthdrake.

After noticing that Li Qiye was not hostile, the drake slowly came over from the mud. Nevertheless, it was still quite cautious. After a while, it bit the branch in his hand. With some rustling sounds, it quickly ate the entire branch and the leaves.

Li Qiye took out some more leaves. The drake leaned in for another bite, but Li Qiye was even faster and shifted away so that

the drake couldn't eat it.

“You should be very familiar with this smell.” He raised the leaves up in the air and stopped the drake from eating before smiling: “Take me to that place and then you can eat. If you agree, then nod your head.”

The drake looked at Li Qiye then back at the leaves up high. It was a bit hesitant, but ultimately, appetite triumphed over reason. It quickly nodded while staring at Li Qiye and then crouched down with its body.

Li Qiye chuckled in response: “That's more like it. Leaves from the Dracotree... even you might not have the chance to eat these more than a few times in your life.” Having said that, he mounted the drake.

“Boom!” The Earthdrake instantly burrowed into the ground, causing a series of rumbles. It crossed the earth at an unbelievable speed. Only a creature like this drake would be able to move so fast beneath this mountain range.

The mountain range was an extraordinary location. No matter how powerful one might be, the moment they penetrated this earth, they wouldn't be able to tell their location and the four directions.

The drake continued to carry him under ground for a very long time. He wasn't worried that it would go to the wrong place. If even the drake couldn't go to the right destination, then no one

else would be able to find it.

“Boom!” Eventually, the drake running at full speed rushed out from the mud and entered a stone cavern.

It stopped to let Li Qiye get down. He took a look around the stone cavern that was located deep beneath the land. No one knew its exact coordinates!

There was a stone arch entrance in front of the cavern. Behind it was a pitch-black scenery; who knew where it led to.

Li Qiye revealed a faint smile and murmured: “Yes, this is it. I have finally returned.”

“Ziii—” The Earthdrake behind him cried out.

Li Qiye turned around and looked at the drooling drake. He couldn’t help but smile and threw the rest of the leaves towards it: “This is your reward.”

The drake happily roared after seeing so many leaves from the Dracotree and began its feast. In the blink of an eye, it ate everything then drilled back into the ground.

Li Qiye shifted his gaze towards the stone arch: “I want to see whether it came back to life this time...”

After going through the stone arch, a precipice could be found in front of Li Qiye. Ahead of him was still complete darkness. No one would be able to see anything.

Li Qiye stopped before it and used his steps as a measure to determine the direction. Afterward, he jumped down without any hesitation. He descended like a falling meteor with the wind howling in his ears.

“Boom!” Li Qiye didn’t know how long he had fallen before he slammed into the ground like a huge nail drilling into mud.

“I hate this step the most!” He murmured while more than half of his body was stuck in the mud. Each time he came to this place, he always had to get dirty.

He didn’t stand up just yet. He took out a small bottle and poured out the dew inside. These dew drops dampened his body and then seeped into the soil as if it had its own consciousness.

These dew drops were from the Dracotree and were infused with moonlight. After some minor noises came out, the mud and soil around Li Qiye turned into a swamp. His entire body sank down extremely quickly.

“Almost...” Li Qiye quietly counted down in the midst of this sinking process. After reaching a certain number, he activated all of his blood energy.

“Buzz!” A clear light exploded from his body!

This was the Heaven’s Will Crystallized Physique, the secret art of the Crystallized Sea Sect, the most powerful and flawless defensive technique in this world! Although Li Qiye’s dao foundation was sealed, he was still able to activate this technique due to his great blood energy. The main difference was that he couldn’t use it for as long as before.

He continued to sink deeper into the swamp. He was completely helpless since even the strongest existences wouldn’t be able to fly up.

“Bang-bang-bang!” Some time after the start of his descent, a towering inferno capable of burning everything erupted from below.

Even a God-Monarch would be scared out of their mind if they were to see this scene because this surging inferno was the mythical draconic flame from legend — extremely frightening!

Since he had no control over his body, he was consumed by the inferno instantly. However, the crystal physique protected him perfectly, so he didn’t feel a single thing.

A moment later, he escaped the inferno. However, crackles were heard right afterward. Below was a pool of tribulation lightning. Extremely thick bolts of lightning were down here and flashed continuously; these bolts were capable of ripping apart any creature that fell down here.

“ZZZZ—” Bolts of lightning frantically assaulted his body in an attempt to rip him to shreds. Fortunately, they failed to break through the crystal physique despite their might.

He continued to fall down uncontrollably...

In this manner, he met layers of tribulations one after another. It seemed that he was falling into the eighteen layers of hell.

In the face of such disasters, even a Godking would not be able to persevere and would be eventually rendered to ashes.

However, with the crystal physique, he managed to fall down and survive all the layers of tribulations.

“Boom!” He heavily slammed onto the ground once more and the crystal physique began to slowly disappear from his body.

“That was a bit risky. Luckily, the time limit was within my calculations.” Li Qiye laughed after seeing the physique going away. This was not his first time here, so he knew how long it took to fall all the way down.

After standing up, he took a look around and eventually, his gaze focused on two large doors ahead of him. He then slowly walked towards them. The two doors were cast from divine bronze. They emitted an ancient luster that would never fade for all of eternity.

Chapter 964: Existences Inside The Vast Sea

Both doors were extremely heavy as if they weighed millions and millions of pounds. Even the mightiest of armies would not be able to break them. There were two carvings on them. The left had a dragon while the right had a tiger. Both were extremely animated with aggressive stances.

The dragon on the left door was soaring down to attack the tiger while the tiger was pouncing upward to tear the dragon apart.

Upon closer observation, perhaps these two beasts were not killing each other but competing for something. Right in the middle of the two closed doors was a hollowed circle where their claws were about to meet.

Perhaps there used to be a jewel here right in the middle of the gate! It must have disappeared for some unknown reason. This bronze gate seemed to be telling an old tale of a dragon and tiger competing for a treasure jewel.

Li Qiye smiled after seeing this image before taking out the Dracofruit. He put the fruit in the center of the gate. A click was heard as if something had locked onto the fruit.

The fruit then melted into the gaps like snow and its juices flowed along the copper lines of the gate.

It was hard to imagine that such a little fruit had so much juice. In the blink of an eye, it saturated all the lines of both the dragon

and tiger.

“Omm—” Both of the carvings on the doors lit up at this time. With a clank, a golden light emanated from the dragon as if the dragon was putting on armor. It seemed to have turned into a Golden Dragon with a surging aura, wishing to fly out from the bronze door.

An immortal light also spewed out from the white tiger on the other side. Its entire body was illuminated with this light, and one could faintly hear a tiger roar as if this Immortal Tiger was about to pounce out of the door.

“Clank—” The heavy bronze door slowly opened at this time, allowing others entrance to a whole new world.

Li Qiye immediately entered without any hesitation. Right afterward, the gate slammed shut once more with a loud clank.

There was a vast emptiness ahead that made it impossible to truly discern this world. An endless void with no end or beginning. When Li Qiye turned back, the gate that he just passed was nowhere to be found. If one didn’t personally come from the gate earlier, they would have thought that it was just an illusion.

Whoever stood here in this void space wouldn’t fall down, as if there was solid ground beneath them. This was an illusory world that was beyond the ordinary realm of perception.

However, Li Qiye didn't seem to mind and continued to walk through the void. The area was covered in fog, so one couldn't see very clearly. Nevertheless, Li Qiye was able to travel without needing to check the direction.

Eventually, the void finally changed. There were still layers of fog ahead, but behind them, one could faintly see the gleaming reflection of waves.

The void was replaced with shimmering water. One suddenly became able to hear the sound of waves.

Li Qiye stopped here and focused his attention on the sound. He wanted to see the reflection beyond the layers of fog.

The water in front of him was sparkling with splashing waves like those of an ocean. Perhaps, this was the legendary shore, a place with eternal life.

Nothing in this world could elude Li Qiye's gaze. His eyes pierced through the layers of fog and the surging ocean all the way to its depths.

There was a towering golden lotus down below that seemed to be able to shoulder the nine heavens and ten earths. A force of suppression emanated from it across the ocean. With its presence, there would never be a tsunami in this place.

Li Qiye stopped for a moment to focus on the flower. Its petals

were wrapped around someone with their back turned towards Li Qiye, so he couldn't see their face.

However, it was apparent that it was a woman from the contours of her back. Nevertheless, she was engulfed in the light of the lotus, so her full figure was left unseen.

“Little girl...” Li Qiye's eyes became serious while looking at the figure sitting in a meditative pose. His eyes lit up and were now capable of piercing through time itself and all existences in this world.

“Is it you?!” He shouted with a voice that reverberated across this world. Distance didn't matter, his voice able to reach even the boundaries of this space. Alas, the figure on top of the lotus had no reaction; it was as if she didn't hear his voice.

Li Qiye's expression sank. He stepped forward towards the vast ocean to check it out.

“Bang!” But his entrance to the ocean was denied. An extremely powerful force rushed out and blew him away.

After standing up, he stared at the ocean and coldly uttered: “How long can all of you drag out your last breath? Block my path and I'll flip this world over!”

“Such a big tone. Even if you were an Immortal Emperor, you still may not be able to do so!” A voice responded from the depths.

“Is that so?” Li Qiye sneered. He opened his mind and his sea of memories emerged. He then shouted: “Imperial Decree!”

“Buzz!” With that cry, ancient orders rushed out one after another.

“Boom!” These orders flew towards the four directions and eight divisions. Next, these orders turned into massive divine mountains.

They were not real, only formed by the Imperial Decree. After presiding over the appropriate cardinal directions, a suppressive heavenly net appeared in this land.

Each strand of universal law that made up this net was comparable to a star. They were capable of crushing the world. Even the deities wouldn't be able to stand under the suppression of this net.

“So it is you, damned crow!” The voice deep in the ocean coldly cursed after seeing the net.

Li Qiye stared at the ocean and answered: “Yes, it is I!”

“Hmph!” This voice sounded especially unhappy with Li Qiye: “I already knew that your damned self would eventually return!”

If this person wasn't one with great status, they would have been cursing up and down at Li Qiye.

"No need to be so sad, you should be welcoming instead." Li Qiye smiled: "In a sense, I am your savior."

"Haha, savior?!" The voice coldly answered: "Who did you save?"

"Well, if I didn't destroy the Ancient Ming, what do you think the result would have been? Back then, Immortal Emperor Tian Tu was bullying you quite hard."

Li Qiye leisurely went on: "The Ancient Ming forced so many items and benefits from you!"

"Is that so? You make it sound like you haven't done the same!" The voice snorted: "You stole the Dracotree, no?"

Li Qiye chuckled: "I won't deny having taken a few things, but compared to Immortal Emperor Tian Tu and the Ancient Ming, who squeezed more out of this place?"

The voice became quiet after hearing this.

Li Qiye pointed at the net in the sky: "Just this heavenly net alone; I only slightly changed it. In the past, the Ancient Ming prepared this net and directly placed it on all of your bodies. But me, I only cast it up high. This is more than enough to show that I am a merciful person!"

“Haha, merciful, hahahaha. You are too funny... You goddamned crow are a merciful person? Hahahaha. When you pushed the Ancient Ming back to this place, how many of them did you kill? Hahaha...” A different voice came from the ocean. It was even more aggressive than the previous.

“It seems like my speculation is absolutely correct!” Li Qiye spoke after hearing the second voice.

The second voice freely asked: “Haha, damned crow, what is your guess?”

Li Qiye rubbed his chin: “Old Long has always had the upper hand and suppressed you, and you two swore to a life and death feud. After being trapped here for so many years even during the reign of the Ancient Ming, this feud continued.”

“However, it is quite incredible that you two are actually cooperating now.” Li Qiye said: “What happened to the irreconcilable feud? What happened to the vow of only one of you being able to live?” He continued.

Chapter 965: Some Old Tales

Neither voice answered Li Qiye's claim.

"I came this time with this guess, but now, it has been confirmed." Li Qiye said: "I didn't come for any treasure but the girl on your golden lotus. She is an old friend of mine. If you don't mind, I will take her away!"

"No!" The two voices refused his request in unison.

Li Qiye frowned after hearing this and slowly spoke: "Both of you should know that I am someone who will never give up. Despite my benevolent nature, I will kill those who stand in my way!"

"Haha, damned crow, you are quite presumptuous. Although we are trapped here, even that brat Tian Tu couldn't kill us, so what makes you think you can?" The second voice retorted.

Li Qiye said dismissively: "I don't necessarily have to kill you two, I can suppress you for an eternity. What the Ancient Ming did back then, I can also do the same! You should know that I forced out many secrets back then!"

"Plus, nothing is impossible for me!" Li Qiye slowly took out two items. One of them was the green lamp while the other was the Dao Sword.

The lamp had a black fire while the dao sword was plain and

simple. The two items were not eye-catching at all.

“My god!” The second voice screamed after seeing the two items.

The first voice spoke in disbelief as well: “Impossible! Countless people tried to obtain these treasures, including even deities and emperors. They failed to obtain even one, yet you actually have both!”

“Which is why I said you two have to understand, if I decide to do something, I will pay any price to succeed!” Li Qiye slowly said: “You should also know that you have a lot of treasures here. Even if I have to pay this great price, it might still be worth it!”

The two voices became silent after the threat. After a while, the first voice responded: “We do not wish to harm this girl. To be more exact, we are giving her a supreme creation! Although we don’t know her origin, as her old acquaintance, you should know that her situation is not optimistic. Leaving this place is not necessarily a good thing for her.”

After a moment of contemplation, Li Qiye narrowed his eyes and spoke in a serious tone: “What kind of creation are you two giving her?”

A long silence ensued. The second voice eventually answered: “Hmph. It is related to that item. You damned crow wanted it in the past as well!”

“That item...” Li Qiye turned serious while staring at the ocean ahead: “That’s impossible. You two competed for this item for so many eras, but both of you failed! I understand now, she is the one giving you two the great creation! A chance to come back to the world, she will be your savior!”

“Hmph, we need someone else to save us?” The second voice did not like this claim from Li Qiye and coldly retorted: “Without our guidance, she wouldn’t have obtained this peerless opportunity.”

“But without her, both of you would never have the opportunity in the first place.” Li Qiye smilingly countered.

There was no response since the two voices knew that Li Qiye was right.

Li Qiye didn’t say anything either and only stared at the girl on top of the golden lotus. He gently sighed after seeing her familiar back, at a loss for words. Although he didn’t owe her anything, he felt uneasy because he was the one who brought her into that cruel war.

After a while, Li Qiye gently asked: “Is she doing fine?”

The first voice in the ocean answered: “When she first arrived here, she was in a precarious situation with a lifeless mind. Right now, her spirit is meditating as she is slowly recovering her life. I believe that she will be able to defeat her worries and regain her serenity.”

“Very well, this is a good thing for her.” Li Qiye nodded quietly and sighed: “The past is the most difficult to forget. To be able to forget is also a type of rebirth.”

“It is indeed a godsend for her. Many people had never come across such a chance.” The second voice emphasized.

Li Qiye calmed down after a long period of silence. He looked at the ocean and smiled: “So, it seems that you two will have a chance to come out then.”

“Hahaha, we won’t tell you, goddamned crow. You just want to trick us.” The second voice sneered.

“How can you say that? This is an auspicious day. Not only do we old friends get to meet again, you two have made peace from your timeless irreconcilable feud as well.” Li Qiye smiled: “Since it is such a good day, don’t you think we should exchange some gifts?”

“Really now?” The first voice answered: “Damned crow, although you are not as vicious as that Tian Tu brat, you are not a good person either. It’s not like I haven’t experienced your scheming before.”

Without a doubt, the two existences inside the ocean were very cautious of Li Qiye and knew that he was definitely up to no good.

Li Qiye laughed and leisurely said: “I won’t have any ideas about the item you two have been competing for. Even if I did, you two

would go all out against me, right?”

“Hmph, what do you want from us?” The second voice coldly uttered.

“Frankly, you’re both underestimating me too much. This Dark Crow has never lacked treasures. Even though your treasury has many good things, it is not to the extent where I would start salivating for them. There are many locations in this world with better treasures.” Li Qiye acted as if he was not interested.

“You might not be lacking treasures, but I haven’t seen you say no to any treasure before.” The second voice responded: “If you want some treasures, we can give you a few, but don’t push it!”

“No, no, no...” Li Qiye shook his head: “Why are you two being so contemptuous? I didn’t come here for treasures. On the contrary, I may offer you two a great gift.”

The two existences both went silent. How could they trust someone who had tricked them before? Especially when the guy wasn’t a virtuous soul at all.

“If you two aren’t interested, then nevermind. There is a good proverb for this — [business does not override friendship. May we meet again.](#)” Li Qiye smiled and said.

Another hard to translate proverb. It is saying that a failed business deal shouldn’t affect one’s friendship.

The first voice finally spoke: “We’re listening.”

Li Qiye calmly began: “First, I want you two to answer a question. If you refuse, then I can’t reveal my gift. My question is, with this opportunity, when can you two come out?”

“Don’t tell him.” The second voice clearly didn’t trust Li Qiye.

Li Qiye waved his hand dismissively: “I can’t do anything about it if you don’t want to tell me. The only thing I can say is that both of you will miss the best opportunity.”

The first voice went quiet before answering: “This generation, we can definitely come out this generation!”

“Good.” Li Qiye rubbed his chin and said: “What are your plans after climbing out of this place? To travel freely or to dominate the world? Or perhaps go to look for something?”

The two existences didn’t answer. They had been in this place for too long and had never thought about what to do after going outside.

“Have you two thought about returning?” Li Qiye threw out this topic.

“Hah.” The second voice snorted: “Damned crow, are you trying to trick us? Return? We know more than you about this.”

Li Qiye only chuckled in response: “Know more than me? How long have you been here for? Tell me.”

He paused for a moment before leisurely continuing: “How can you two know how many times I have been there? Or how much time I have spent there? Or what tasks I have accomplished there?”

“Haha, it can’t be anything good, that’s for sure. Only one thing is certain, you must have been chased around by those bastards and had to hide the whole time.” The second voice gloatingly laughed after imagining Li Qiye’s pitiful state.

Li Qiye was still as carefree as ever: “Well, I won’t deny that. I’m not someone who does a lot of good deeds. Wherever I go, the risk of death will follow — this is quite normal. People always say that a crow is an ominous sign, so this isn’t strange at all.”

Chapter 966: Deal

“Hehe, damned crow, don’t try to dodge the question. Tell us some of your stories of being chased around by people so that we can have a good laugh.” The second voice burst into laughter. He really wanted to hear about Li Qiye’s pitiful state.

“Fine, since I squeezed you two dry in the past, I guess it is fine to tell you for fun.” Li Qiye leisurely said: “It’s no big deal. The first time, I didn’t prepare well enough. Those arrogant ones were really a bit capable, so I suffered some big losses. However, you two should know, I like to stand up from where I’ve fallen...”

“... As you can imagine, I returned and made their blood run like rivers and piled their corpses into mountains. I destroyed their world and annihilated their sun and moon! No matter the location and no matter who they might be, even deities and emperors in the heavens will understand that no one can escape after barring my path!”

Having said that, he revealed a gentle smile that made others shiver uncontrollably.

The second person that wanted to gloat over his failure grew quiet. They knew an existence like Li Qiye didn’t need to brag. Moreover, this was true to his character. Even after failure, he would rise again and destroy all of his most powerful enemies!

“Have you attacked that place?” The first voice couldn’t help himself and asked about the most secretive of questions.

Li Qiye paused for a bit before revealing the truth: “I was not the only one, many have tried before. Unfortunately, success was not to be found. If I managed to do it, I wouldn’t be here talking to you two.”

“Damned crow, you’re not fun at all, but that Tian Tu brat is even less fun.” The second voice in the ocean didn’t mock Li Qiye this time. He only commented with emotion.

“Tian Tu... back in the Ancient Ming Era, he was indeed imperious. However, after the Emperors Era, my words are the truth in myriad worlds! Tian Tu, so what?! Didn’t I massacre all of them till there were no places left to hide?!” Li Qiye slowly uttered with an extreme murderous glint in his eyes!

“No one has ever been successful in that place.” The first voice sighed: “So many have tried, so many have failed!”

“I know.” Li Qiye claimed: “But nothing can halt my path in this generation, not even that place! One day, I will overcome everything that tried to stop me!”

This remark was not loud, but it carried a domineering style. It showed Li Qiye’s determination!

“How bold. Do you think you can overcome that place?” The second voice had to ask.

“Yes, definitely. If you two return, you will definitely see the day that I trample that place!” Li Qiye smiled.

The two existences pondered at the same time. They didn’t doubt Li Qiye’s determination. They also knew that once the Dark Crow decided to do something, nothing would be impossible!

Li Qiye smiled and continued: “We got distracted. How about we go back to the topic earlier.”

“You know that it is not possible. Even if you want to go this generation, we still have to wait until we can return.” The second voice answered.

“If that was the case, then I wouldn’t need to talk to you two about this.” Li Qiye said dismissively: “It is impossible for others, but not for me. Don’t forget, I have been there many times without any restrictions!”

“What secrets do you hold?!” The second voice couldn’t help his curiosity.

Li Qiye smiled: “I can only say that if you two go back in time, I can take you along with me. Have you thought about going back home?”

The two existences recalled their past for a moment. Go back? This was a distant memory to them. They had almost forgotten what it felt like.

“What is your condition?” The first voice asked.

“My condition is very simple. I will take you back and you two will work for me.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Haha, your appetite is not small. You should clearly know what type of existence we are. Do you think that is possible? That brat Tian Tu couldn’t force us to bow our heads, and you won’t be able to either!” The second voice snorted.

Li Qiye shook his head at this response: “You are overthinking it. I have no need for you two to bow your heads to me. I just need you two to help me squash some obstacles when necessary.”

“I don’t think so. I don’t like being restrained.” The first voice answered.

Li Qiye calmly spoke: “I’m sure you two will like a few things that are worth pursuing.”

“Haha, damned crow, I’m afraid you have the wrong idea.” The second voice coldly retorted: “We can give up on this generation. It’s fine, you can go up this generation, we won’t compete with you. We’ll wait for the next!”

Li Qiye laughed: “If this is the case, then the two of you will definitely miss the most dazzling generation in this world.”

The first voice slowly said: “Dark Crow, we are old. We have lingered here for countless moons and can even let go of our eternal feud. What else do we care about?”

Li Qiye gently nodded: “I get it, it looks like the two of you are afraid, unwilling to compete against the deities and emperors. Perhaps it is a fear of failure as well since it will harm your reputation.”

“Haha, damned crow, your provocation is too obvious.” The second voice snorted: “We won’t fall for your tricks.”

Li Qiye leisurely smiled: “You know what? I can be quite resolute in my actions. For example, I could take the girl away. Or, when the time is ripe, I would come again. You two should know that she will be willing to go with me...”

“... If I take her away today, you two will never be able to reverse the tides. And if I wait a bit longer, I won’t just take her away, I will also dig that item out and squeeze everything from you two!” Li Qiye grinned: “Do you think I can’t do it? I know that you don’t want to see that happen.”

“Is this a threat?” The first voice turned cold. He was angered by Li Qiye.

The second voice became tempestuous as well: “Damned crow, at worst, we’ll go all out. We aren’t afraid of death!”

“This is not a threat, I also don’t care if you two are afraid of death or not.” Li Qiye drily said: “However, you should know something. I won’t carry out either of these two options. Why? It is because I am merciful. I want you two to be aware that while I can, I won’t do some things because I am benevolent! It is not because of you two!”

Li Qiye continued: “My benevolence is for her! Otherwise, I wouldn’t give a damn. I only hope that you will help me squash some obstacles. This is just a part of my plan. If you don’t want to, I can find other people to work for me. As long as I pay the price, I trust that there are still a few existences willing to cooperate with me. What do you think?”

The second voice snorted once more while the first voice was silent. They couldn’t deny that Li Qiye was speaking the truth.

“Perhaps you two have seen through many things.” Li Qiye said with a smile: “But do you dare claim that you have no goals in life?”

Li Qiye slowly said: “To bring fortune and protection to your descendants, isn’t this a type of goal and desire?”

The two voices still didn’t answer Li Qiye.

He was not in a rush and carefully articulated: “Follow me and one day, glory will belong to your descendants; prosperity lasting for countless ages. One day, you will follow my steps and we shall accomplish something that has never been done before, not even

by the deities and emperors! Follow me to the battlefield and one day, you will witness the most amazing event in this world. For example, that location, do you two really not want to go take a look?”

“Haha, one needs to be alive to see it.” The second voice drily said: “Dark Crow, we know of your stories. Your followers, how many of them died on the battlefield?!”

“I will not deny this. Standing at the top is not an easy matter. Paving this road requires one to constantly spill blood and scatter bones.” Li Qiye gently sighed: “Do you two think you can fight to the end? If you aren’t even afraid of Immortal Emperor Tian Tu, what else is there to be afraid of?”

Li Qiye continued: “If you have nothing worth pursuing, then I have nothing else to say. However, there are still some things you two have always wanted to know.”

“What kind of things?” The first voice asked.

Li Qiye answered: “If I remember correctly, the two of you have been searching for a nest, an extraordinary nest! You have chased it before, yes?”

Chapter 967: Skybearing Monarch

“How did you find out about this?!” Even the first voice — that was normally calm — was shocked after hearing Li Qiye.

Li Qiye smiled: “It doesn’t matter how I found out. Plus, don’t forget, I am the Dark Crow. Not too many things can elude my gaze, right?”

“So, you have some understanding of it?” The second voice was intrigued as well.

Li Qiye rubbed his chin: “How should I put this? I’m not too sure about other things, but I can guarantee this — I definitely know more than you two!”

The first voice decisively said: “If you can give it to us, we can work for you, or at least I will!”

“I also agree!” The second voice confirmed.

“Your demand is too high.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head: “If I had it right now, do you think I would need to negotiate with you two? You aren’t the only ones who want such an item! Plus, you should know full well that if I had it, even the deities and emperors would shed all pretense of cordiality with each other, don’t you think?”

The two existences in the ocean became quiet again. There was a

secret unknown to outsiders in this matter.

“What do you want then?” The first voice broke the silence.

Li Qiye answered: “I can only give you a guarantee if you follow me. If it appears, then it will belong to you and your children! Is this enough?”

The second voice eventually inquired: “You don’t want such a thing?”

Li Qiye smiled: “Of course I want good items, but it depends on what it is. People have different aspirations and needs. My only will is to kill all the way to the high heavens! My pursuit of this will never stop!”

“At the same time, my promise is absolutely priceless! I don’t need to say more about this.” He became solemn after stating this.

The two existences seemed to be thinking about this matter since they did not respond.

Eventually, the first voice in the ocean made a decision: “I agree. We can sign an agreement. I will only wipe out some supreme lords for you, I hope you understand the extent of this pact!”

Li Qiye smiled: “Don’t worry, would I make invincible existences like you two perform some trivial tasks? I won’t bother you with them!”

“Count me in.” The second voice made up his mind as well: “We have been in this half-alive, half-dead state for too long. To have a goal is not a bad thing! At the very least, we will have the ambition to fight!”

“I am confident that the future will be more dazzling because of your participation!” Li Qiye responded: “When the two of you fight together, even the deities and emperors shall tremble.”

“Haha, damned crow, there’s no need to flatter us. We know exactly what kind of enemies we will be facing!” The second voice didn’t give Li Qiye any face and sneered: “Haha, if the opponents are people that you want us to attack, then I can think with my toes about the level they are at!”

“How can you say something like that? Maybe you two will be fighting old friends. Don’t tell me you don’t want to personally kill a few of them?” Li Qiye smiled.

The second voice responded coldly: “I also want to strangle you to death! Should I do it?!”

“Haha, I’m not worried.” Li Qiye was not startled at all and leisurely replied: “If I was still your enemy, then I’m sure I am at least within the top ten of the people you want to kill the most. However, I am certain that you wouldn’t really want to kill a kind person like me, right?”

The second voice only grunted and didn’t say anything else.

After Li Qiye entered the Hidden-dragon Mountains, three more people arrived at the Holy City. The first was Crimson Night's descendant, Chi Zixian!

Being the kingdom's descendant as well as a member of the Blood Race's five saints, she naturally attracted a lot of attention due to her fame!

"She must be here for that Li Qiye guy." Many people immediately understood why she came to the city.

They didn't find it strange either because Li Qiye threw the Supreme Elder into the cave. This matter was definitely not going to end just like that.

As an imperial lineage with two emperors, if Crimson Night could swallow the anger of having their Supreme Elder killed, then they would lose all of their prestige. They would never allow anyone to provoke their authority, thus revenge was in order. Otherwise, it would be difficult to maintain their status in the southern region in the future.

Someone speculated: "I wonder how many Virtuous Paragons are here from the kingdom this time?"

"Maybe the Thunder Tower Lord will come out as well. The

death of a Supreme Elder is too big of a deal, no one will be able to let this go.” A few big shots from the Blood Race began to speculate as well.

Another great character from the Blood Race came to the Holy City right after.

Someone saw another genius from the five saints and exclaimed: “The Skybearing Monarch is also here!”

“The Skybearing Monarch came?” Many young humans were startled.

Some even considered the Skybearing Monarch to be the greatest among the five saints. Although Bai Jian, Chi Tianyu, the Half-moon Princess, and even Chi Zixian were all geniuses, they were not the most brilliant ones.

However, the monarch was one of these brilliant geniuses. The Blood Race believed that if anyone could surpass Lin Tiandi in the future, then it would be the monarch!

The monarch’s real name was Wang Tiancheng. Right now, very few people remembered his name; they came to know him as the Skybearing Monarch!

He was the descendant of the Blood-devil Tribe. Thus, his status in the Blood Race was higher than Chi Tianyu, Bai Jian, and perhaps even Chi Zixian!

“Why is the monarch here? Does he want to spar with Schoolmaster Ye?” Someone became curious.

“Hard to say, the monarch might be bothered by Schoolmaster Ye being the first to reach Virtuous Paragon. Some people said that he went several times to spar with her, but he lost every time!” A big shot explained what happened.

In the Barren Earth, the first among the younger generation to reach Virtuous Paragon was not the brilliant Lin Tiandi or the Blood Race’s hope, the Skybearing Monarch. It was Ye Chuyun who came from the Pure Lotus School that had always been low-key!

The other four saints were considered Ye Chuyun’s juniors. Only the monarch was on the same level as Ye Chuyun in terms of seniority.

As the descendant of the Blood-devil Tribe, everyone assumed that he could return to the Blood Primal Ground to train, just like Immortal Emperor Chi Ye back then, the emperor who ruled over the Blood Race in the nine worlds!

However, his debut was not smooth-sailing. It was one thing being overshadowed by Lin Tiandi’s brilliance, but the title of being the first paragon was taken away by Ye Chuyun who was not famous prior to this.

Thus, it was not strange for the monarch to always be brooding

over it.

“Hmph, the Skybearing Monarch might be great, but compared to our Schoolmaster Ye, there is still a sizable gap! Maybe our schoolmaster has already embarked on the path of the heavens and is ready to compete for the Heaven’s Will!” The young humans naturally viewed Ye Chuyun as their pride.

Of course, the Blood Race didn’t give up either. A Blood youth sneered: “I won’t deny that Schoolmaster Ye is extraordinary, but if the Skybearing Monarch can return to the primal ground to train... Hmph, he will surpass Schoolmaster Ye very quickly. Even the brilliant Lin Tiandi would be overshadowed by him!”

“Haha, that’s a lot of boasting.” The young human immediately fought back: “Everything is merely speculation. Wait until your Skybearing Monarch can actually return to the primal ground, then we can talk.”

The Blood youth sneered: “Among the geniuses of the younger generation, who is more qualified than the monarch to return? Hah, I heard that there are ancestors from our Blood-devil Tribe going to the primal ground. It won’t take long before the monarch returns as well to inherit the progenitor’s will. They will obtain the purest and most supreme blood of our race! At that time, he will be able to command the world!”

“Only the world of your Blood Race...” The human expert said with disdain.

However, this argument didn't last too long before everything became quiet. Someone else even more incredible had arrived at the city!

Both Chi Zixian and the Skybearing Monarch paled in comparison!

Lin Tiandi had arrived! Everyone from the younger generation became quiet after this news spread across the city. No one could stay proud, including the other two saints.

[Lin Tiandi](#) — this name was overbearing enough, but no one would dare to question it!

Tiandi is Celestial Emperor.

Some said that he didn't originally have this name while others claimed that he was born with it. However, this wasn't important anymore. Right now, he was Lin Tiandi and his fame echoed across the Barren Earth!

Chapter 968: Lin Tiandi

Lin Tiandi was a legend in this region. People loved talking about his tales and spreading them around.

He embarked on his dao path at the age of five. At fifteen, he climbed to the Heavenly King realm. At twenty, he began his journey of violence. At twenty-one, he fought against five clans from the Blood Race alone. He went to their territories and controlled a heavenly tribulation to suppress the five clans completely. The power of the tribulation allowed him to sweep through their ancestors. Eventually, the five clans accepted defeat, and Lin Tiandi forgave them afterward. From then on, they closed their gates and no longer came out.

This made him famous in this world. No one from the younger generation in the southern region could compare to him. Both Ye Chuyun and the Skybearing Monarch were eclipsed by his radiance.

In today's Mortal Emperor World, there was a saying. Mei Suyao in the east, Zhan Shi in the west, Wo Longxuan in the north, Lin Tiandi in the south, and Jikong Wudi in the center!

This phrase referred to the most outstanding geniuses of the contemporary times. East referred to the Eastern Hundred Cities. The most brilliant genius there was Mei Suyao from the Eternal River School.

The western Desolate Wasteland had Zhan Shi from the

Rampaging Divine Mountain.

The northern Grand Sea had the famous Wo Longxuan from the Crouching Dragon Cliff!

Of course, who else was number one in the southern Barren Earth besides Lin Tiandi? Even the geniuses from the Blood Race couldn't compare to him.

There was another reason why Lin Tiandi's tales were so popular. This was because he came from a humble background. In other words, he was a mortal.

Compared to Mei Suyao's group who were all from imperial lineages, Lin Tiandi came from humble beginnings and was still a vagrant cultivator at this moment.

Stories told that he came from a scholarly family. Although their ancestors taught the dao and answered many questions, none of them were cultivators until Lin Tiandi appeared.

At a young age, he self-taught himself the most basic merit laws and started his heroic journey, creating one miracle to another.

During his training, rumor has it that many lineages — including imperial ones — wanted to recruit him. Even a mythical lineage like the Grand Palm Ancient Court tried to recruit him.

But strangely enough, he declined all of their invitations and

continued his cultivation alone.

Despite not being able to take him in as a disciple, many great powers still willingly handed their merit laws and techniques to him for training.

From this, one could easily imagine just how brilliant and charismatic he was. Many people in this region including well-informed ancestors all agreed that in this generation, Lin Tiandi's chance of becoming the Immortal Emperor was even higher than Jikong Wudi and the others!

Many people were very proud of him, especially the young vagabonds. They all considered him their idol.

Everyone knew that people like Mei Suyao and Jikong Wudi were exceptional, but they came from imperial lineages. Lin Tiandi was the only genius who came from humble beginnings.

“For many generations, many founders of imperial lineages such as the Heavenguard's Immortal Emperor Qi Zhen and the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain's Immortal Emperor Ba Zhen came from nothing. Compared to the other geniuses, Lin Tiandi with his humble beginnings will definitely become the Immortal Emperor! He will definitely create an invincible sect that can shine for an eternity!” A vagrant cultivator made this comment with pride.

Lin Tiandi's arrival was sensational, and many people went to greet him or to take a look.

He trod through the sky with a transcendent and pure aura. His whole being was shrouded in clouds. His tall yet thin figure was adorned with a blue robe accompanied by an elegant temperament that was beyond this world.

His appearance betrayed his name that was full of arrogance and majesty. He didn't look domineering, contrary to his name's implications.

There was a scholarly essence to him. Others would think that he had read many different scriptures and that he came from a literary family!

He resembled a scholar more than a cultivator. Nevertheless, this did not affect his prestige in the slightest. In the eyes of the crowd, he was still the domineering Lin Tiandi.

After causing quite a stir in the city, he went to visit the ancient and mysterious clans in the Holy City. For cultivators of the southern region, it wasn't easy to go visit these clans. They wouldn't even entertain geniuses.

However, Lin Tiandi not only visited them, he was treated as an esteemed guest. Some ancestors even came out to see him.

A few days later, another piece of news came out from the city. Lin Tiandi visited the Crimson Night Kingdom's Thunder Tower. The tower lord even made an exception to see him. Afterward, he managed to climb to the top of the tower.

“That’s Lin Tiandi for you. It’s not strange that he can do so. Just think about it, so many sects were willing to let him use their merit laws for training.” People weren’t caught off guard by this at all. They were used to his brilliant nature.

The young geniuses were incredibly envious after hearing this. The Thunder Tower was one of the two best locations in the Holy City. It was famous alongside Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform. It once belonged to an ancient clan in the city, but now, it was a property of Crimson Night.

Legend states that the tower was a natural creation of the heaven and earth. There were peerlessly wonderful items inside. It was presided over by the most powerful ancestor of the Crimson Night Kingdom. He was referred to by others as the Thunder Tower Lord.

Today, an outsider like Lin Tiandi was not only received by the tower lord unlike normal convention, he also climbed to the top. Just how glorious was this?

Among the youths of the Crimson Night Kingdom, only Chi Zixian had reached the top before. Other disciples were not qualified to even climb, yet Lin Tiandi, an outsider, was allowed to do so. This speaks volume of his cachet.

After he reached the top, day turned into night all of a sudden. Bursts of thunder resounded in the sky. Lightning streaked above the tower. The Thunder Tower suddenly became sky-reaching in a very mysterious and holy manner.

“Incredible, that’s Lin Tiandi for you. He gained some benefits after entering the tower for such a short time; he was actually able to unravel the mysteries of the tower and obtain the resonance of the heaven and earth!” Many people saw this shocking scene. Even a big shot from the last generation murmured to himself.

The younger generation was naturally envious. Those who could unravel the mysteries of the tower would gain great benefits!

Lin Tiandi didn’t stop at the Thunder Tower for long. On the second day, he left the Holy City and entered the Godwar Mountain by himself.

“The current peerless genius is indeed different. After understanding the mysteries of the Thunder Tower, he immediately entered the Godwar Mountain. Does he want the supreme scripture from there as well?” Many people emotionally commented after seeing this.

Jealousy was useless for the younger generation. Difficult things for others were easily achieved by Lin Tiandi. It was incredibly frustrating to compare oneself to him!

While everyone had their eyes on Lin Tiandi, a buzzing sound suddenly rang inside the large cave on top of the Dragon Platform in the stillness of the night. A light flashed as a man rushed out from the cave.

If any outsiders were here, they would be scared out of their

mind from this scene as if they had just seen a ghost. Everyone knew that there was no coming back after falling into the cave. For millions of years, this truth remained.

But now, someone actually made it out of the cave. This news would shock the world if someone were here to see it.

Of course, it was Li Qiye who leaped out of the cave. After finishing his negotiation with the two existences in the ocean, he immediately left the Hidden-dragon Mountains. The world didn't know that one could leave the Hidden-dragon Mountains through the Dragon Platform. However, entrance via the Dragon Platform guaranteed death. Naturally, these secrets were too elusive for ordinary people.

Li Qiye gazed at the Hidden-dragon Mountains again while standing on top of the platform. He revealed a faint smile with a carefree mood. Although he didn't obtain any treasure from the mountain this time, his harvest was extremely great.

More importantly, Li Qiye was relieved to see the little girl's result. No matter what happened later on, her future would be full of hope with that kind of opportunity.

His mind eventually returned. He then shifted over towards the Godwar Mountain in the distance. He became quiet while staring at the mountain that seemed to be defending myriad realms.

After a long time, he murmured: "After so many years, it is time to find out and let the items within to come out. It is time for my

harvest.”

It was well known that the Godwar Mountain had some incredible mysteries. One could be enlightened by the grand dao or listen to an immortal scripture. Nevertheless, most of this was still hidden behind a secret veil.

Chapter 969: Challenging The Crimson Night Kingdom

While he was looking over the mountain, a buzzing sound suddenly rang. Waves of light emerged from the mountain along with rare visual phenomena. A young man walked out from within and stepped through the hills into the depths of the mountains.

Each of his steps seemed to create a new phenomenon. One could even faintly hear the chanting of immortals as if they were preaching the dao. Nevertheless, the young man continued on without stopping.

“A bit interesting.” Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile after seeing the young man’s slow steps into the mountain.

Meanwhile, those in the Holy City were full of admiration. Even ancestors of the Virtuous Paragon realm were amazed as well: “That’s Lin Tiandi for you. Climbing the highest peak and traversing through the lofty peaks as easily as walking on flat ground. This is the supreme genius.”

The younger generation became excited as well. A genius muttered: “I failed last time, but I want to try again to see if I can reach the highest peak this time!”

“Boom!” When people were still amazed by Lin Tiandi’s solitary entrance to the Godwar Mountain, an immortal light shot up from the deepest location of the mountain.

It soared all the way into the sky with rays flashing everywhere. What was unbelievable was that these rays slowly formed an immortal crown!

This scene was too spectacular since the crown seemed to be illuminating the entire Barren Earth. It didn't disappear until a while later.

The spectators were moved by this scene. One of them took a deep breath and said: "Isn't this too heaven-defying, even for Lin Tiandi?! He only made it into the mountain, yet he has already created such a shocking phenomenon. Will he be able to obtain the legendary immortal scripture?"

"No, this is not necessarily related to Lin Tiandi." A citizen from the Holy City explained: "This has happened before, but the crown was not as big last time."

"What is it? Is it a treasure coming out?" A few people were very excited.

An excited cultivator claimed: "Maybe it is an emerging treasure. Rumor has it that immortals lived in the deepest part of the mountain. After they left, an immortal scripture was left behind."

Another one added: "It's not just an immortal scripture. Legend even says that an immortal buried himself there. Thus, that place seals the body of an immortal. If one can obtain this body, they would definitely become unbeatable in this generation..."

In just a moment, diverse legends regarding the treasures at the deepest part of the Godwar Mountain came about. It was getting more and more ridiculous. Some even claimed that there were still immortals living there.

“It is easier said than done to reach the deepest location of the mountain.” Someone from the previous generation shook their head: “Even Immortal Emperors would not recklessly go to that place. Rumor has it that it is far too terrifying there!”

“Go, to the Godwar Mountain for the treasures!” The older generation was able to handle the sudden change. However, the youths couldn’t wait any longer and immediately rushed towards the mountain.

On the Dragon Platform, Li Qiye was also watching this scene with his gaze focused on the immortal light soaring into the sky as well as the passing crown.

After it disappeared, he murmured: “After so many years, it has finally come! The Ancient Ming back then wasted so much effort and the Dark Dragon Dynasty even built their ancestral ground here, yet they couldn’t obtain it. Even the mighty Immortal Emperor Tian Tu coveted it, yet he still failed in the end.”

“It seems like there will be results in this generation.” Li Qiye looked at the dark night sky as his eyes became very profound. In present times, only he knew what was below the Godwar Mountain. Everyone else has died, especially all the Ancient Ming

back then. Not even one was left alive.

He withdrew his gaze eventually and then went back to Ye Chuyun's place without any hesitation.

The moment Ye Chuyun saw him, she heaved a sigh of relief and quickly spoke: "Brother Li, you are finally back. Something big has happened."

"What happened?" He saw her demeanor and asked with a serious expression: "Is it about Yuanyuan?"

"The Crimson Night Kingdom came." Ye Chuyun wryly smiled and said: "Their descendant, Chi Zixian, brought several Virtuous Paragons here asking for Miss Si. I fought against them, but in the end, she willingly left with them."

It turned out that after coming to the Holy City, Chi Zixian and her paragons immediately went to Ye Chuyun to demand for Si Yuanyuan, the traitor of the Crimson Night Kingdom.

Ye Chuyun was asked by Li Qiye, so she naturally wouldn't hand over Si Yuanyuan. The two sides immediately fought after the failed negotiation. In the end, Si Yuanyuan was afraid that Ye Chuyun was not the kingdom's match. She didn't want to involve the Pure Lotus School and willingly left with Chi Zixian.

"Where is Yuanyuan now?" Li Qiye spoke with a murderous glint in his eyes.

Ye Chuyun busily said: “She is still in the Holy City, imprisoned at the Thunder Tower for now. I have asked several hidden clans in the city to put pressure on the kingdom to delay their journey, but I’m afraid it won’t delay them for long. Chi Zixian will bring Si Yuanyuan back to Crimson Night in about two days!”

Li Qiye revealed a dark smile: “The gods should be thanking me for not killing people, yet Crimson Night is foolish enough to go over my head. They must be tired of living!”

He ordered: “Go to the Thunder Tower and pass on my message. Before sunrise tomorrow, I want to see the kingdom bring Si Yuanyuan to our door, completely untouched! Otherwise, I will personally take a trip there. At that time, I won’t only crush their encampment, I’ll uproot their kingdom as well!”

“I understand.” Ye Chuyun nodded her head. Anyone else would think that Li Qiye was daydreaming, claiming to uproot the kingdom in such an ignorant manner. However, Ye Chuyun knew very well that he was not joking around. He would do as he said!

She went to the Thunder Tower and passed on his message to Chi Zixian’s group.

“So arrogant!” Chi Zixian’s eyes turned cold with murderous intent after hearing this. Even the expressions of the big characters next to her turned ugly as well. Just what was the Crimson Night Kingdom? A nation with two emperors that had controlled the Blood Race for two different generations! In the entire Barren

Earth, outside of the Heavenguard Sect and Mysterious Bamboo Mountain with their three emperors, even the other dual emperor lineages would not dare to utter such arrogant words towards them.

But now, a nobody like Li Qiye dared to bluster and talked about uprooting their kingdom. Not to mention a lineage like them, even an ordinary great power wouldn't forgive such insolence.

“Just in time. I was worried that we wouldn't be able to find the Supreme Elder's killer!” She awe-inspiringly said: “Good, he ignored the accepting heavens and is barging into the unwelcoming hell!”

“Your Majesty, let us take him into custody and bring him back to the kingdom. We'll call for the rest of the world to watch the trial so that they will find out the result of those who oppose our kingdom!” A paragon next to her spoke.

“No need to make it so troublesome. We'll hold the trial here at the Holy City!” A different paragon suggested: “Right now, all the heroes are gathered here. It is the best time to trial this murderer!”

She coldly uttered: “Very well. Then tomorrow, we'll send out the news. If Li Qiye comes kneeling and admits to his crimes, we may spare his life!”

She didn't want to prolong this matter due to possible complications that may arise. She wanted to publicly sentence both Li Qiye and Si Yuanyuan tomorrow in front of everyone. This

wouldn't only increase her kingdom's prestige, it would also build her own so that the world would know she was the future ruler of the kingdom. The life and death of others were in her grasp!

“Li Qiye, listen up!” At night, an expert from the kingdom intimidatingly sent out the message: “You seduced a Crimson Night disciple to kill our Supreme Elder. Even ten thousand deaths wouldn't be enough to repent. Our Highness declares that if you prostrate and beg for forgiveness tomorrow outside of the Thunder Tower, Her Highness may forgive you at her own discretion! Otherwise, it will be a death penalty. Don't even try to escape since there will be no place in the world for you to hide!”

In order to establish her own prestige, Chi Zixian made the disciples create a fuss so the entire city would find out.

Initially, due to Lin Tiandi's appearance, everyone had forgotten Li Qiye's matter. But now, after hearing the message from the kingdom, everyone remembered it again and the city became quite rowdy.

Prior to the message, the truth was that not many people in this region knew who Li Qiye was. But now, his matter had once again entered the limelight, so a lot of people were talking about him.

Someone murmured: “Tricking the Supreme Elder from Crimson Night down the Dragon Platform's cave... this brat is way too courageous.”

An insider added: “This brat has a backer. I heard he is always

together with Schoolmaster Ye, so he has the Pure Lotus School. How arrogant! Not only did he trick the Supreme Elder down the cave, he also threw the Pureblood School's Swiftsword Marquis down there as well!"

"Hmph, even the Pure Lotus School won't do. Offending both Crimson Night and the Pureblood School — this is the same as offending our entire Blood Race. There will be no place left for him in the southern region. Even if Crimson Night forgives him, we should still deal with him!" A Blood disciple sneered.

Li Qiye didn't give any face to this intentional provocation either. He also sent out a message: "Before sunrise, return Si Yuanyuan unharmed. Also, Crimson Night's descendant, Chi Zixian, must prostrate outside of our mansion to admit her wrongdoings. Only then shall I spare Crimson Night!"

Such words astounded the entire city. No one expected Li Qiye to react in such an aggressive manner. Who would have thought that a nobody would act so arrogantly? His challenge towards the kingdom stunned many people.

Someone commented: "Is this brat out of his mind? Telling Chi Zixian to beg for forgiveness as well as talking about destroying the kingdom? Who does he think he is, Lin Tiandi or Jikong Wudi?!"

"Haha, even Lin Tiandi wouldn't dare to bluster to this extent!" A Blood disciple snorted: "Does this Li guy think that just because he sucks up to the Pure Lotus School, he can do as he pleases? Tomorrow, we'll show him the strength of our Blood Race!"

“This ignorant child really does not understand the immensity of the heaven and earth.” Even the previous generation felt that Li Qiye was too arrogant. He was simply making a fool out of himself.

“Very well, we’ll watch the brat’s comedy show tomorrow!” Someone from the unified Blood Race said: “Even Pure Lotus won’t be able to protect him. Crimson Night will show its might tomorrow. It is good to let the humans in the southern region witness our strength!”

Chapter 970: Hatred

Li Qiye's provocation towards the Crimson Night Kingdom affected the entire Blood Race due to their great solidarity. Many Blood disciples in the city mocked him and wanted to see him making a fool out of himself tomorrow.

As for the human cultivators, they were more ambivalent as they glanced at each other. They found him to be quite ignorant in his provocation. Even Lin Tiandi wouldn't dare to do so, let alone a junior like him!

"Perfect. What a fool! No matter how powerful you are, only death awaits those who oppose Crimson Night. You're saving me the trouble of having to kill you myself." Chi Tianyu, who also wanted to kill Li Qiye, snorted while heaving a sigh of relief! He was quite happy with this new development.

No one wanted to kill Li Qiye more than Chi Tianyu since he was his biggest rival in love. Now, Crimson Night was about to kill Li Qiye for him. How could he not become excited?

The Half-moon Princess sighed after hearing this. Of course, she was not feeling bad for Li Qiye. In fact, she couldn't care less about his life. The only issue was that if Li Qiye died, Chi Tianyu wouldn't be dissuaded from courting Ye Chuyun.

"This Li Qiye guy, his performance at the Dragon Platform was absolutely brilliant. It is surprising that he is this overbearing and arrogant. Even if he was a Virtuous Paragon, he wouldn't be able to

hold back Crimson Night. This is him courting death.” The princess slightly shook her head: “What a shame, I really thought that he could marry Ye Chuyun!”

As for the Skybearing Monarch, the most talented genius of the Blood Race, he only laughed: “This brat really doesn’t know any better. The Crimson Night Kingdom’s strength is beyond his imagination.”

However, after he received a new message, he suddenly felt gloomy.

An ancestor from the Blood-devil Tribe finally returned from the primal ground. He came into the city and immediately met the monarch.

“Ancestor, did the ancestors from the primal ground agree for me to go there to train?” The spirited monarch asked right away.

Although any disciple from the Blood Race could go back there to train, that was only simple training. To be truly accepted by the primal ground to return had a different significance. Anyone who received this treatment would be taught by the oldest ancestors in the primal ground. Moreover, there was a chance for them to observe and train in the oldest laws of their race!

In the legends, the primal ground had an extremely ancient ancestor that had always been buried in the earth. Moreover, rumor has it that both Immortal Emperor Chi Ye and Immortal Emperor Chen Xue were taught by this ancestor!

Thus, a true return meant gaining the guidance of this ancestor as well as the chance to be able to rule the Blood Race in the nine worlds in the future!

This was the dream to many Blood geniuses! Even if they couldn't become the Immortal Emperor, an existence that could order the Blood Race was still quite supreme!

"I'm afraid there's no hope..." The Blood-devil ancestor gently shook his head with a dejected expression.

The monarch was in disbelief and asked: "Ancestor, how, how can this be? The last time I went to the primal ground, all the ancestors there had great evaluations for me."

Prior to this, the monarch had gone to the primal ground to meet the old ancestors of the primal ground. These ancestors had very good impressions of him due to his bloodline and talents. Because of this, he was very confident that he would eventually be accepted. This was also why other people thought that he could rule the Blood Race in the future, just like Immortal Emperor Chi Ye's group!

The ancestor smiled wryly and said: "Yes, the ancestors last time really liked you, but I'm afraid there have been some changes in the primal ground, so your second assessment has been pushed back for now."

"Changes?" The monarch did not understand: "What changes are

you referring to? Are there other candidates there?”

He found this astonishing since he had absolute confidence in his bloodline and talents among the current younger generation! He had the purest bloodline from the Blood-devil Tribe’s imperial family. His ancestor was an Immortal Emperor. Moreover, his talents were peerless as well.

Both Chi Zixian and Bai Jian were not a threat to him. In his mind, who was more fitting to train at the primal ground to become the next ruler of the Blood race?

“Well, I couldn’t ask the ancient ancestors about it.” This ancestor pondered for a bit before speaking: “But I did hear some news there. They said that a candidate has appeared. It is likely that this person will be the future ruler.”

“Impossible!” The monarch was startled: “Who? Who can rule the Blood Race? If someone from the primal ground does not come out, then who is more worthy than me in the entire Mortal Emperor World?”

This was not him being arrogant, he really had such qualifications. Even Chi Zixian and Bai Jian were nobodies in his eyes, let alone others.

Moreover, the primal ground had never taken direct control of the Blood Race before. Most of the time, they would only indirectly do so.

“The details haven’t been disclosed.” The ancestor answered: “I used a lot of different methods before finding out a little bit of information. I heard the person’s name is Li Qiye, but there’s not much else.”

“Li Qiye...” The monarch became wide-eyed after hearing this: “Li Qiye is at the Holy City right now!”

“I don’t know the brat.” The ancestor shook his head: “I only heard that not only did this brat go to the primal ground, he could have entered the blood pool as well.”

“What! Enter the blood pool?!” The monarch was completely shaken after hearing this. As the descendant of the Blood-devil Tribe, he naturally knew the significance behind entering the blood pool. It was the same as a carp jumping over the dragon gate. Even if one couldn’t become the future ruler, they would still be highly valued by the primal ground. It was an extremely prestigious position.

He murmured in disbelief: “Isn’t this Li Qiye a human? How could he have entered the blood pool? How can he become the Blood ruler?”

“We don’t know anything for now.” The ancestors spoke: “The old ancestors didn’t say anything about your matter. They didn’t confirm or deny anything, your matter was simply put on hold. Maybe they will restart the assessment later.”

In just a short period of time, the monarch became quiet as his

expression darkened. He was fully confident in being able to return to the primal ground to train and even made this news public.

But now, this Li Qiye came out of nowhere and ruined all his plans as well as his beautiful dreams!

“Li Qiye!” The monarch revealed a frighteningly murderous glare. He had no feud with Li Qiye prior to this. In fact, he didn’t even care for him.

Even when Li Qiye was acting arrogantly against the Crimson Night Kingdom, the monarch only laughed and watched on the sideline as if it was no big deal. After all, it was only an ignorant brat.

However, now was a different story. Even though he hadn’t seen Li Qiye, he viewed him as a mortal enemy.

At this time, he only wished for Li Qiye to die, especially to the hands of the Crimson Night Kingdom! With that, the primal ground would test him again and he would be able to realize his ambition!

For the experts of the Blood Race, who didn’t want to return to the primal ground to rule the Blood Race in the nine worlds? This was a crowning glory. Nothing was more eminent than this outside of becoming an Immortal Emperor.

The monarch coldly uttered: “Li Qiye must die!” Li Qiye, who he

had never met before, was now standing in his way, so he must die!

In the Holy City, many people were not optimistic about Li Qiye's chance while others mocked him.

However, there was one exception. It was Bai Jian, the descendant of the Grand Palm Ancient Court!

He murmured after hearing Li Qiye's aggressive provocation towards the Crimson Night Kingdom: "It really is him. After so many years, he is still this arrogant and overbearing!"

At this moment, he had guessed who Li Qiye was! Unlike the others, he had taken an adventure to the Grand Middle Territory and Eastern Hundred Cities when he was younger. Although he had never seen Li Qiye, he had heard of his prestige.

Later on, rumors of Li Qiye being dead began to spread, and thus his reputation declined. Even the people from those two realms began to gradually forget about him.

But this time, Bai Jian was able to guess Li Qiye's identity after seeing him in the southern region.

He smiled and said: "The madman of the past is still so domineering no matter where he goes... It will be fun this time. I wonder if the Crimson Night Kingdom will be able to handle it or

not. Hopefully, they won't be annihilated like the Tiger's Howl School back then."

Chapter 971: Thunder Tower

On the next day, the sun slowly rose. No matter the time, the Holy City remained unchanging. It was still ancient and solemn as well as full of mysteries.

Many people were waiting eagerly for what was to come. All eyes were on Chi Zixian and Li Qiye since they wanted to see how this storm would end.

Of course, the majority of them thought that Li Qiye was courting death for provoking the Crimson Night Kingdom. They only wanted to see how he would die, that's all.

There were some humans who hoped that Li Qiye would be able to put up a fight to deter the Blood Race's ego. Recently, Heavenguard didn't come out while the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain maintained a low profile. This made the Blood Race's momentum rise while the strongest race in the southern region, the humans, was pressured!

Of course, Chi Zixian didn't return Si Yuanyuan this morning, and she didn't prostrate before Li Qiye's door for forgiveness either.

As a result, Li Qiye personally took a trip to the Thunder Tower with Ye Chuyun right behind him.

He already became the focal point the moment he left the mansion. Many young male cultivators were very annoyed to see

Ye Chuyun obediently following behind him.

“Pah! A flower stuck in cow dung. I wonder what a master like Schoolmaster Ye sees in this human junior?” Those who adored Ye Chuyun were especially unhappy.

In their eyes, Li Qiye was simply not worthy of her. He had no background and wasn't handsome either. His strength was most likely lacking as well.

“Haha, just let him be for the moment. It won't last for long. Even Schoolmaster Ye won't be able to keep him from dying.” Someone sneered and prayed for Li Qiye to die to Chi Zixian's group.

The Crimson Night Kingdom's branch was built in the best location inside the city. The Thunder Tower was at the center of this area and made the lineage seem like a small castle.

This tower soared high into the sky. It was one of the tallest structures in the city! It could be seen from afar and was made from unknown materials. It was suffused with an ancient color.

One could faintly see streaks of lightning flash on top of the tower. It came and went as if the tower was the center of the storm!

Legends state that the tower used to be the dwelling of a thunder god. Another said that it connected a thunder vein from

underground to the sky...

Regardless of its origin, its preciousness was on par with Tiger Hill and the Dragon Platform. Immortal Emperor Chi Ye paid a sky-high price to an ancient clan for this tower back then.

After many generations of business, the Crimson Night Kingdom established this vast branch in the city. Since then, it continued to expand nonstop.

In a city where land was worth as much as gold, the territory Crimson Night commanded was more than enough to show the kingdom's power...

“Clank—” When Li Qiye made it to the branch, the two steel doors slowly opened. The guards of the kingdom didn't stop Li Qiye and simply let him inside.

“The confrontation is about to happen.” Many cultivators entered the branch to watch the fun. There were also those who remained at a safe distance to avoid any trouble.

There was a martial plaza inside the branch. The left and right were both full of Crimson Night experts. They let their blood energies run free to intimidate people! Experts from the other Blood tribes and sects were there as well. Young geniuses such as Chi Tianyu were also present. Without a doubt, Chi Zixian invited many of them to watch this trial.

The group that followed Li Qiye inside took a deep breath after seeing so many big shots from the Blood Race. It seemed like Chi Zixian was going all out this time.

Everyone knew that such a trial should be done in a more discreet manner. However, Chi Zixian called for so many people. This made everyone feel that something was amiss.

Someone made a good guess and murmured: “It looks like Chi Zixian wants to be the royal lord of Crimson Night. She wants to establish her unquestionable authority right now.”

Li Qiye looked around and finally saw Si Yuanyuan. She was on the side and locked with shackles like a criminal.

Despite the chains imposed on her, she still remained carefree and composed without showing any sign of pain. No matter what might come today, she would meet death head-on without crying or begging for mercy.

She might not be a famous character, but she had a rare sense of composure.

“Young Noble Li, you shouldn’t have come here.” She saw him and became a bit dejected. She gently sighed: “Even an upright official won’t be able to deal with a family matter. I’m afraid you can’t do anything since this is Crimson Night’s internal affair.”

Prior to this, she still had some hope for the kingdom. After all,

she was still its disciple and had an agreement with the elders. However, Chi Zixian maneuvered some people to capture her. A few of these paragons were of the elder level as well. This made Si Yuanyuan realize that Chi Zixian would never forgive her as she headed for the top; she would forever be a nail sticking out in Chi Zixian's eyes!

Li Qiye's eyes narrowed after seeing Si Yuanyuan's imprisoned state. With a glint in his glare, he responded: "Before me, even the heavens have to listen, let alone some familial affairs."

She wanted to reply but chose against it. She didn't want to drag him down as well, but she knew that she couldn't convince him otherwise! Thus, she stopped talking so that Li Qiye could focus on facing the enemy!

"You're finally here!" A proud voice rang out.

At the base of the Thunder Tower was a chair decorated with dragon patterns. A woman was seated in this imperial throne. She was very beautiful and alluring. Her figure with its curvy waves was top-notch.

She was Chi Zixian, the descendant of Crimson Night. It wouldn't be long before she became its royal lord.

There were three old men on her left and right for a total of six Virtuous Paragons protecting her. Although they were only ordinary paragons, the strongest among them was a Peaceful Era Paragon. They were ancestor level characters of the kingdom.

Despite being the future royal lord, this status was not enough to have so many paragons protect her. After all, no matter the lineage, all would have many candidates.

To have so many ancestors act as one's dao protectors required them to be extremely brilliant. Of course, Chi Zixian was not this type genius. She was indeed brilliant, but not to an abnormal extent.

The reason for her great protection was very simple — her backing was the Storm God! Because of this, she had a very prominent position in the kingdom.

Both the spectators who came here for fun and the invited Blood experts were very wary of her. Naturally, it was not her that they feared but the Storm God!

Everyone watched with bated breaths. As long as they weren't too stupid, anyone could tell that Chi Zixian wanted to make an example out of Li Qiye to build her own prestige.

Li Qiye glanced at her and spoke: "If you let her go now, I'll only carry out a light punishment and forgive you!"

"Such a big tone!" Chi Zixian snorted. She sat in her high spot and looked down at him: "Li Qiye, do you know who I am?"

Li Qiye was too lazy to look at her again: "How funny, you're

only a descendant of the Crimson Night Kingdom, yet you still think you are somebody? My patience is limited. Will you release her, or do I have to take action?”

A paragon next to her shouted: “This thing doesn’t know life from death!”

Chi Zixian coldly glared at him and sneered: “Li Qiye, to bluster so wantonly within my kingdom’s territory, do you really think you have three heads and six hands?!”

Li Qiye answered: “Is that so? It seems like you don’t wish to release her and want me to take action!”

“Release her?” Chi Zixian snorted: “Li Qiye, you conspired with the traitor to murder the Crimson Night Duke and killed our Supreme Elder. The traitor should be drawn and quartered while you will face beheading! Kneel and admit your crimes, then we may spare you the pain by giving you a swift end!”

Li Qiye couldn’t help but smile. He leisurely said: “Everyone has been saying that I am the arrogant one with zero regards for others, but why do I feel like I am not the arrogant one today?”

He continued on after lazily looking over her: “Very well, since you want me to take action... It has been awhile since I last washed my hands with blood, might as well do so today.”

“Before you die, I will let you know that I will not only save Si

Yuanyuan today, I will also cut off all of your heads! If I am still not satisfied, I will visit your kingdom and kill until my hands grow tired. Perhaps then, I will forgive your kingdom!” He ended with this threat.

Chapter 972: Unstoppable

“Haha, can you believe this guy?” Many cracked up after hearing Li Qiye.

“What a blustering fool. Crimson Night is a dual emperor lineage and can kill him with one finger.” Chi Tianyu sneered while sitting in a seat of honor.

A Blood schoolmaster from the same region snorted coldly: “Human juniors really are too impudent nowadays. Do they think the Barren Earth is still their territory? Hmph, just a human ant yet he still dares to provoke our Blood Race’s prestige!”

“Your Highness, in my opinion, we don’t need to kill this insect so quickly. Just destroy his cultivation, sever his limbs, and destroy his tendons. Then tie him up outside the Holy City so that people will know the result of those who challenge our Blood Race!” Another Blood expert in this region coldly uttered.

“Li, listen up.” Up on her imperial throne, Chi Zixian looked down contemptuously at Li Qiye: “Don’t even dream about leaving this place alive today!”

She raised her hand and clanking sounds appeared. Two lines of experts from the kingdom unsheathed their swords with their sharp reflecting glints lighting up the sky. The armed experts surrounded Li Qiye with a murderous aura permeating across the martial stage.

“It’s coming.” The spectators quickly retreated after seeing this to avoid being caught in the crossfire.

Ye Chuyun stepped out before Li Qiye. She glanced at the surrounding experts and stated: “All of you come together so that I don’t have to waste time chasing after you!”

Such words left many people out of breath. Earlier, she was standing obediently behind Li Qiye so people couldn’t feel her might. But now, her Virtuous Paragon’s aura soared to the sky along with her surging blood energy — full of life and power.

Anyone present would feel the pressure. Geniuses like Chi Zixian and Chi Tianyu had a hard-to-explain feeling in their minds!

Chi Zixian was proud and considered herself to be the top of the five saints. However, the gap was apparent when Ye Chuyun stepped out. Ye Chuyun’s powerful aura completely overshadowed Chi Zixian.

She became quite jealous. Despite coming from a dual emperor lineage, she was not as great as Ye Chuyun. This made her feel like something was biting her heart inside!

“Schoolmaster Ye, you may want to think again!” Chi Zixian coldly spoke: “You can’t drag down your entire Pure Lotus School for personal reasons! This won’t end well for your school.”

Ye Chuyun met her gaze and answered: “I know exactly what I’m

about to do. The one who should be reconsidering is you. Don't be blinded by your own stupidity and push Crimson Night down into the abyss. You will be the sinner of your kingdom!"

"Schoolmaster Ye, I am only trying to persuade you out of respect." Chi Zixian coldly retorted: "Don't say I didn't warn you once a calamity befalls your school..."

Ye Chuyun interrupted her: "Don't act as if you're someone who can speak with me as equals! Even if you become the Crimson Night Royal Lord, without becoming a paragon, you are still only a junior before me!"

Chi Zixian's expression turned sour after hearing this. Ye Chuyun humiliated her in front of everyone. This was more than just challenging her authority.

"Schoolmaster Ye, you went too far." A paragon protecting Chi Zixian interjected: "Our Crimson Night is showing you some consideration..."

"No need to say more!" Ye Chuyun cut him short: "Either do as Brother Li said and release her and admit your mistakes, or fight to the end and perish. The choice is yours!"

"It seems like you are completely confident in him." All six paragons glared at her aggressively. In their eyes, no one was allowed to question their kingdom's authority!

“Then all six ancestors may come together. Our fight ended abruptly last time and I didn’t get a chance to see your supreme emperor laws.” Ye Chuyun decisively challenged the six paragons.

Such words suffocated the crowd. They were too domineering.

“That’s the first Virtuous Paragon of the younger generation, worthy of being the genius of our human race!” A human expert’s blood began to boil after hearing this challenge.

The six paragons glanced at each other quickly. They revealed a chilling murderous glint in their eyes.

Without a doubt, they wanted to kill Ye Chuyun. Although her position was problematic, the Crimson Night Kingdom was not afraid of the Pure Lotus School.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Chuyun, I’ll handle this small matter before people really think I like to hide behind the backs of women.”

Ye Chuyun only glanced at the experts before backing off behind him. Li Qiye took the stage and directly spoke to Chi Zixian: “I had no intention of murdering inside the Holy City, but since that is your wish, I’ll go big!”

“With just you alone?” Chi Zixian snorted with disdain: “If Ye Chuyun doesn’t join in, I can crush a nobody like you with one hand...”

In a split second, before anyone could react, Chi Zixian abruptly stopped speaking.

This scene seemed to last forever. They saw a hand raise up high, gripping Chi Zixian by the neck, making her seem like a helpless duck. She couldn't move at all while her eyes were turning white.

“Bang!” Time finally began to flow again. The experts who were blocking Li Qiye earlier were all sent flying in the air while spurting blood everywhere. They were no longer breathing the moment they hit the ground.

This entire process, from the dispatch of experts to the choking of Chi Zixian, all happened in the blink of an eye. Many couldn't see what happened. Only Virtuous Paragons were able to keep up; however, her six protectors couldn't react in time to help her. It was unimaginably fast.

Li Qiye leisurely said: “Yes, crushing with one hand... Unfortunately, the victim is you and not me.”

“Junior, what, what are you doing?!” One of the paragons shouted: “If you touch a single hair of hers, our kingdom will let you taste a fate worse than death!”

The six were afraid of breaking the vase by chasing the rat. They wanted to help but were afraid of Li Qiye reacting by strangling her.

“Don’t worry, I won’t touch a single hair of hers, I have zero interest in that.” Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at the six paragons: “I only want to add a bit more force to crush her neck.”

While struggling to breathe, Chi Zixian thunderously shouted: “If... you... kill me, Si Yuanyuan... will die!”

Sure enough, the shackles on Si Yuanyuan’s body tightened after her threat, causing Si Yuanyuan to groan. Although she didn’t scream out loud, her expression made it clear that she was in tremendous pain.

“Threatening me?” Li Qiye’s eyes narrowed as he tightened his grip. Chi Zixian’s eyes became bloodshot while her limbs twitched!

“Buzz!” As her life was hanging by a thread, the Thunder Tower suddenly quaked. Before anyone knew what was going on, Chi Zixian fell down to the ground with a loud plop.

Chi Zixian coughed harshly while feeling her own neck. She struggled to get up. At the same time, the six paragons quickly surrounded Chi Zixian to prevent Li Qiye from catching her again.

“Young friend, this is not a place where you can do as you please.” An old voice came from the Thunder Tower after Chi Zixian barely managed to survive.

“The Thunder Tower Lord...” Someone exclaimed after hearing

this old voice.

Everyone here gasped, especially the experts from the Blood Race including royal lords and sect masters. Someone murmured: “This finally got the tower lord’s attention!”

“Hmph, this brat is done for now!” Chi Tianyu celebrated. He was trembling after seeing Li Qiye gripping Chi Zixian’s neck in an instant. He thought that the brat was too scary; he didn’t notice that Li Qiye was just hiding his strength before!

He felt despair after seeing Li Qiye’s terrifying speed, but now, the tower lord had appeared. This changed the entire situation and made people realize that Li Qiye’s death was swiftly approaching.

Chapter 973: Thunder Tower Lord

The tower lord was rumored to be one of the most powerful ancestors of Crimson Night. He had guarded the tower for many years. Nobody actually knew how long he had been here for!

The only thing people knew was that very few could see him. Even Chi Zixian, their descendant, couldn't easily gain an audience with him.

But now, the tower lord was moving to save Chi Zixian from Li Qiye.

Everyone watched very closely at this moment; they weren't willing to miss out on the tiniest of details.

"The human brat is dead for sure." A Blood expert cruelly guffawed. He was excitedly waiting for Li Qiye to die to the tower lord!

Only Li Qiye remained nonchalant on the martial stage. He slowly sat down on the imperial throne and smiled: "The lord of the Thunder Tower — I'm afraid you aren't qualified to have this title."

"The masses gave me this title." The tower lord answered: "Young friend, I see that you are a rare genius. This time, just admit your mistakes to our kingdom and we'll let all of this go. How about it?"

Everyone was surprised to hear this. They all assumed that the tower lord would kill Li Qiye, who would have thought that the tower lord would forgive him so easily?

Li Qiye leisurely answered while relaxing on the throne: “A bit interesting. Crimson Night finally produced a discerning person. Although you are not qualified to be the Thunder Tower Lord, the kingdom was right to let you guard the tower due to the virtue of your vision.”

Such arrogant words astounded the spectators. But of course, the tower lord’s perception far exceeded ordinary experts. After seeing Li Qiye’s speed, he immediately knew that Li Qiye was training the Soaring Immortal Physique. In the nine worlds, anyone who could cultivate an Immortal Physique would be an unfathomable character!

“Young friend, the Crimson Night Kingdom sincerely wishes to let this go. Just admit your mistakes and let our disciple return, then everything will end.” The tower lord spoke.

“No—” Chi Zixian interjected with a serious tone: “Ancestor, this guy and the whore conspired to kill our disciples. They cannot be forgiven! Without killing them, we can’t calm the anger in our disciples’ hearts!”

“Ancestor, this disciple was asked by Ancestor Storm God to try them in order to obtain justice for the Supreme Elder and the Crimson Night Duke! Please lend me a hand to take him down!”

Chi Zixian finally regained her aggressive momentum.

Once the tower lord came out, even the six paragons didn't dare to utter a single word. Although they were of the ancestor level as well, there was a huge disparity between them and the tower lord. They were only juniors of juniors compared to him.

Among them, only Chi Zixian dared to act so fearlessly because her backer, the Storm God, was not afraid of the Thunder Tower Lord.

The tower lord did not respond, causing her to look stiff. She had no choice but to follow through in this precarious situation. If she couldn't kill Li Qiye and Si Yuanyuan, then all of her efforts would have been for naught.

“To tell the truth, there is no saving the kingdom when they pick a descendant like you, someone who is foolish to a subhuman level. It is simply incredible that you even managed to reach your position.” Li Qiye looked at her and smiled.

Chi Zixian solemnly spoke: “Little animal, surrender now or I'll kill this wretch!” With that, a sword with a cold aura was placed on Si Yuanyuan's neck.

Ye Chuyun took a step forward with a serious demeanor, intending to save Si Yuanyuan. However, Chi Zixian sneered: “Ye Chuyun, don't try anything funny. The shackles on her are incredible treasures. Touch her and she'll be ground to a pulp!”

Ye Chuyun immediately stopped, not daring to make any careless moves.

“Enough!” A cold voice emerged. A person set foot in the area and commanded: “Release her then kneel!”

Everyone was startled by this newcomer. It was a woman wearing a white dress. She had a mask that hid her face and emitted an aura as cold as ice.

This person coming out of nowhere and ordering Chi Zixian left the crowd puzzled. No one recognized who she was or why she suddenly gave the order.

Of course, only Li Qiye recognized this person. She was the Winter Matron, one of the four Skymatrons of the Blood Race!

“Who are you!” Chi Zixian coldly asked: “You aren’t the one calling the shots around here!”

“Pop!” Before Chi Zixian could finish, the Winter Matron’s hand reached out and blew her away, spilling her blood.

“Don’t harm her!” The six paragons shouted and attacked the Winter Matron at the same time.

However, the matron didn’t need to look at them. With a single gesture, the celestials in the sky lost their brilliance. The world and the fabric of space and time were affected. The six paragons were

blown away in an instant for they were nowhere near being her match!

“Clank!” The matron’s body flashed. No one knew how she did it, but the shackles on Si Yuanyuan’s body were unlocked and fell into her hand.

She put away the shackles and drily uttered: “We didn’t give this treasure to you back then so that you could use it to seal Blood disciples!”

Chi Zixian and the six paragons finally crawled up. They were both angry and afraid; they didn’t know who this newcomer was or why she was so powerful.

She stared at the Blood disciples here and coldly spoke: “Blood disciples, kneel and greet, then leave quickly!”

The people here glanced at each other in confusion since no one knew who she was!

“Lady, even though you are very powerful, making us, Blood disciples, kneel before you is way too much!” Chi Tianyu stood up in protest: “We of the Blood Race are not so easily bullied!”

“This is your honor!” A weak voice came out. A large palanquin appeared, its bearers were all Virtuous Paragons!

Such a showing astounded many people. Paragons were acting as

bearers! Just how prestigious and noble was this? Not even a God-Monarch would enjoy this treatment!

While everyone was still guessing the identity of the person in the palanquin, the gate of the Thunder Tower opened and an old man stepped out.

He had gray hair with withered blood energy. However, he exuded a presence that would cause paragons to tremble. Totems floated around him, creating a very god-like appearance!

“Thunder Tower Lord...” Someone exclaimed after recognizing this old man. Very few people were able to meet him, let alone be worthy of his personal welcome.

The tower lord quickly arrived in front of the palanquin and prostrated on the ground: “I didn’t know Ancestor was coming here in person. This junior didn’t welcome you in time, please forgive me!”

Even the tower lord was kneeling on the ground — this scene shocked everyone. A looming threat permeated the crowd’s mind at this moment. All the Blood disciples here, including Chi Tianyu, felt their legs give in. They all kneeled on the ground and didn’t dare to do anything foolish.

“Rise.” The voice inside the palanquin came out. The tower lord finally stood up along with the Blood disciples present.

Although no one knew who was inside the palanquin, they didn't dare to ask. Even an existence like the tower lord had to kneel down, so how could anyone else dare to speak?

“Young Noble Li, how about letting it go?” The voice asked.

Everyone held their breaths at this moment and looked over at Li Qiye. They were shocked and scared. Just who was this Li Qiye? Why was this mysterious figure acting so polite towards him?

“Let it go?” Li Qiye remained seated on the imperial throne and said: “Only blood can settle this! If she commits suicides, then I can spare the Crimson Night Kingdom.” With that, he stared at Chi Zixian.

Chi Zixian's expression quickly shifted and she had to take several steps back. She finally felt fear!

“Young Noble Li, would you please spare our kingdom's disciple?” The tower lord quickly pleaded: “We are willing to make amends!”

No matter what, Chi Zixian was still their main descendant. Her death here would be a huge loss to their prestige!

“You are mistaken.” Li Qiye shook his head: “Those who dare to maneuver against my people must pay with blood! Simple amends won't do.”

He stared at her and said: “Will you do it yourself, or will I have to help you? If you do so, I will forgive the people around you!”

Chi Zixian was filled with dismay. She was the descendant of the kingdom, a high and above existence. But now, she was merely an insect in Li Qiye’s eyes.

“I, I, I am the future ruler of Crimson Night! My ancestral grandmother is the Storm God!” She took several steps back while screaming. She put up a strong appearance despite trembling inside.

Chapter 974: Climbing The Thunder Tower

The crowd eagerly waited to see how Li Qiye would deal with Chi Zixian. No matter what, they were still quite afraid when she brought up the Storm God! Who wouldn't be afraid of Immortal Emperor Chen Xue's daughter?

"I've had enough of hearing about her." Li Qiye shook his head: "I don't care for this Storm God or whatever. Besides, no one can threaten me! Not this vixen Storm God, and not her father either."

"You..." Chi Zixian still tried to maintain a strong front despite her fear: "If, if you kill me, my grandmother won't forgive you..."

"You're truly disappointing me with your struggle. You didn't even think about those close to you before death." Li Qiye slowly stood up from the imperial throne.

"Young Noble Li..." The tower lord wanted to plead for her.

Li Qiye waved his hand dismissively and said: "There's no need to plead for her. I'll be frank, I won't give you any face. I wouldn't give face to the old geezer in the palanquin either, let alone you!"

The crowd was stunned after hearing these extremely arrogant words! Who were the Thunder Tower Lord and the mysterious existence?! But Li Qiye still dared to speak without a care for them!

He looked at Chi Zixian who was acting tough despite being

scared. The six paragons still protected her. They would never allow for him to hurt her.

“Li, Li... if you have no objections, your feud with Crimson Night ends here!” Chi Zixian shouted: “We won’t pursue your killing of our disciples anymore!”

“You finally understood, but it is too late.” Li Qiye gently shook his head.

Si Yuanyuan hesitated for a moment and spoke on Chi Zixian’s behalf as well: “Young Noble, Senior Sister Chi will learn from her mistake, nothing can be better than...”

“Yuanyuan, even though you are following me, no one can cross my bottom line. Your pleading is of no use.” He interrupted her.

Si Yuanyuan could only sigh, not saying anything else.

“Stop!” The six paragons shouted as Li Qiye approached. In the blink of an eye, their auras surged with layers of imperial might from their laws, seemingly aiming to suppress Li Qiye.

“With just the six of you?” Li Qiye chuckled and narrowed his eyes. His mind opened and a bright radiance rushed out.

“Boom!” Before anyone knew what was going on, a loud clap of thunder resounded from the top of the Thunder Tower, as if the pond of lightning above had exploded.

“Ccrackk!” A lightning bolt struck down from above and exploded.

The crowd was still in a stupor. They heard banging sounds then in the next moment, Chi Zixian, the six paragons, and the rest of the disciples from Crimson Night all fell down to the ground, their eyes still opened wide. Even at the very last moment, they didn't believe or know the reason why they had died!

It all happened too quickly. The lightning at the top of the tower shot down like an arrow and penetrated all of their chests, pinning them to the ground.

Green plumes of smoke floated in the air while the smell of something burning permeated the martial stage, almost as if someone was cooking. However, no one present would salivate from this smell, they wanted to puke instead!

“Lord of the Thunder Tower — is not a title just anyone can have.” Li Qiye didn't even bat an eye. He nonchalantly said this then turned around to enter the tower.

Everyone was blown away at this moment. Even the tower lord was shaken. He was called the tower lord by others and had protected this place for many generations. It could be said that he was the one who understood the tower the best. Alas, he still couldn't control the tower like Li Qiye did just now.

A stranger like Li Qiye, who had come here for the first time,

controlled the mysteries of this land so easily — this was too frightening and illogical.

Many people gasped and felt a chill running down their spines. One of them murmured: “Lin Tiandi is supreme and he took one night to unravel the mysteries of the thunder. Li Qiye, how long was he here for? He didn’t even climb the tower yet he can already control the lightning?”

“Gentlemen, it’s time to leave.” The tower lord calmed down and raised his voice.

At this time, both the spectators and experts from the Blood Race invited by Chi Zixian quietly left without comment.

Chi Tianyu was pale and had an ugly expression. He also left with the group. In fact, he was not the only one. The Skybearing Monarch was also quite aghast. Even though he was invited as well, he chose to watch from a distance. This result left him completely speechless.

“Li Qiye is exactly like the legends.” Bai Jian was watching from far away as well. He commented: “Only death awaits those who oppose him. He is someone who meets god, buries god; meets devil, buries devil.”

The tower lord lifted his head to look at the tower as well. He felt that this tower that he had guarded for so many years suddenly became very distant. It was as if he had learned nothing about it all this time.

The voice in the palanquin slowly said: “Come inside.”

The top of the tower seemed to be a different world. One could see surging thunder ponds with lightning bolts dancing all around. It was a world of lightning.

Li Qiye quietly sat in the master’s seat and closed his eyes. His carefree pose seemed to be so natural and at home!

At this second, he was the master of the Thunder Tower. Only he was qualified to sit there; only he was qualified to control this tower!

However, the aura he gave off was far more than that. His reach seemed to expand beyond the tower, not stopping until he grasped all the nine worlds as well. He gave the illusion that the world would be dark when his eyes were closed, and the world would be bright when his eyes were open!

Ye Chuyun and Si Yuanyuan stood behind him in silence. The Thunder Tower Lord followed right behind the palanquin. The Winter Matron was there as well. She didn’t say anything and only coldly stared at Li Qiye as if she wanted to see through him.

“Extraordinary.” After the palanquin was placed on the ground, the voice inside praised: “To be able to cultivate the Sunset Glow Scripture to this level... Only Immortal Emperor Chi Ye back then had a greater mastery.”

The person was praising Si Yuanyuan. Of course, she was surprised to receive such praise as well.

The master of the palanquin spoke: “What is wrong with your Crimson Night Kingdom? It has such a good seed, yet it didn’t bring her to the primal ground and only sent along trash.”

The tower lord felt very awkward and didn’t know what to say. Eventually, he smiled wryly in response: “Ancestor, I am not in charge of Crimson Night at the moment.”

“Hmph! Chen Xue’s daughter, right? She’s a crazy idiot.” The master snorted.

The tower lord had no response. He didn’t agree with the Storm God’s conduct, but she had absolute power in Crimson Night. It was not easy to confront her.

“This degree of mastery of the Sunset Glow Scripture... Hmm, even if she can’t become an existence like Immortal Emperor Chi Ye, her future is still quite promising. This type of candidate should be sent to the primal ground for training!” Without a doubt, the master of the palanquin had taken a liking to Si Yuanyuan.

Li Qiye opened his eyes and dismissively said: “Unfortunately, you are one step too late. She is one of my people now.”

“Then she is still considered someone from the primal ground.” The master didn’t become angry and held Si Yuanyuan in high regard.

Li Qiye didn’t respond. He stared at the tower lord and said: “It seems like Immortal Emperor Chi Ye and Immortal Emperor Chen Xue have tampered with this tower a bit!”

“I really don’t know about that.” The tower lord smiled. He was very curious about Li Qiye and why the old ancestor from the primal ground was so courteous to him!

“There are some things that cannot be changed, not even by Immortal Emperors.” Li Qiye smiled and gently shook his head without caring.

At first, the Thunder Tower was not like this. It had a huge connection with this area. Later on, the Ancient Ming built this tower on top of the already established foundation.

After their destruction, Li Qiye spent countless efforts to let future generations of Immortal Emperors recreate this tower.

It carried a great significance for the Holy City. To a certain extent, as long as the tower remained standing, the city would be indestructible. The human race could go on due to this as well!

When Immortal Emperor Chi Ye bought this tower, he had to pay a sky-high price even for an emperor. Nevertheless, he was still

willing to pay it!

Chapter 975: Bloodbull Godfiend

Li Qiye chuckled while looking at the old palanquin. He straightened his posture and said: “So it appears that you have personally come. Your primal ground is indeed acting in good faith.”

The existence inside replied: “You know who I am?” Its voice was feeble, yet carried an awe-inspiring prestige.

Li Qiye couldn’t help but laugh at this response: “Others might not know who you are, but who else has the stench of cattle at the primal ground besides you?”

“How dare you!” Even the Winter Matron scowled and glared at Li Qiye.

Li Qiye met her glare and gently waved his sleeve to say: “Girl, I’ve always been presumptuous throughout the nine worlds! Moreover, it is you who wants to ask me for a favor, not the other way around!”

He paused for a bit and smiled: “I am actually a very amiable person. Otherwise, regardless of whether I feel like being presumptuous or not, none of you would be able to stand in front of me!”

Such words made the tower lord sweat a bit. He simply couldn’t imagine how Li Qiye was still talking in such an overbearing manner despite knowing who was in the palanquin.

Anyone else would be stricken with fear and fall to their knees after knowing who it was.

“Young Noble Li, confidence is a virtue. However, too much ego can lead to ruin.” The master inside spoke flatly.

“You are mistaken there.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “I have never been egotistical. Bloodbull Godfiend, do you really think that I have been overstepping my bounds?”

The tower lord jumped from shock again. No one had ever dared to call out the title of the existence in the palanquin like this, but Li Qiye didn’t give a damn! Such arrogance couldn’t be described with words.

Even Ye Chuyun’s heart skipped a beat. Si Yuanyuan, on the other hand, didn’t know who the Bloodbull Godfiend was. Ye Chuyun — as the schoolmaster of the Pure Lotus School — had heard the legends before!

The Bloodbull Godfiend was the oldest existence in the Blood Race and was rumored to be a real godfiend, not a false, self-titled god!

Not to mention the younger generation in the Blood Race, not many experts knew of his existence even within the tribe. Only real masters like the Thunder Tower Lord knew of him.

He was said to have complete control and supreme authority within the Blood Race. As for how powerful he was, even the Thunder Tower Lord wouldn't be able to answer this question clearly. This was because the godfiend had taught Immortal Emperor Chen Xue before.

“Domineering enough.” The godfiend inside did not become angry. He slowly retorted: “But you should know that you are not invincible even though you have obtained the legacy within the blood pond.”

The tower lord lost his voice as he exclaimed: “Legacy of the blood pond...”

He stared at Li Qiye in amazement then glanced over at the Winter Matron. After seeing their expressions, he realized that this was the truth. He took a deep breath to calm down. If Li Qiye had obtained that legacy, didn't it mean that he had become the Blood Forefather?!

A human becoming the Blood Forefather of the Blood Race was simply unfathomable! The tower lord did not understand why the blood pond would pick a human to become the new forefather!

Li Qiye smiled and shook his head in response: “You're greatly underestimating me. Within the bounds of the Thunder Tower, I am the true ruler. Even without your legacy, I can still slay both gods and fiends. Do you want to try, Bloodbull Godfiend?!”

The Winter Matron coldly stated: “Do you think you are an

Immortal Emperor?”

He countered: “Even if I’m not one, an Immortal Emperor would still have to take the long way around me inside the Holy City!”

The tower lord became slack-jawed. The more Li Qiye talked, the more outrageous he became. To even look down on Immortal Emperors, could there be anyone more insane than him in this world? Although the tower lord didn’t view Li Qiye with any disdain, he still felt that these words were too arrogant. To be frank, it was just boasting.

“I haven’t heard such words in a long time.” The godfiend only murmured to himself.

“Since Your Bullhead is here in person, it clearly shows that you came in goodwill.” Li Qiye was very satisfied with the godfiend’s attitude. He gently nodded: “Very well, we can talk alone.”

The godfiend contemplated for a moment before ordering: “Carry me in.”

With that, the men carried out an old coffin from the palanquin. It was completely blood-red, as if the coffin was sealing immortal blood.

A bloody gloss cloaked the coffin and created many strange images. There were flying phoenixes and humming dragons. Stars were also falling from the sky...

One could faintly see a figure inside this coffin. This figure was lying inside quietly, but no one could see their true appearance.

“An amazing immortal coffin.” Li Qiye had to praise after seeing the coffin: “If it wasn’t out of consideration for providence, I would have seized this coffin already!”

“It isn’t easy to meet someone who has such discerning taste.” Li Qiye’s words were very rude, but the godfiend didn’t mind at all. On the contrary, he seemed to have taken it as a compliment.

His appreciation was not unfounded. This immortal coffin had a heaven-shattering origin. It was the reason why he was able to sleep here from one generation to another; this coffin weakened the erosion of time to its lowest level!

The godfiend commanded: “All of you, leave.”

The tower lord naturally wouldn’t dare to say no and immediately left along with the palanquin bearers. Even Immortal Emperor Chen Xue was only a junior before the godfiend, let alone him. The Winter Matron only glared at Li Qiye one last time before leaving as well.

Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve. Both Si Yuanyuan and Ye Chuyun went out right afterward.

A private conversation between the two of them meant that this

was not a trivial matter. It involved secrets that others weren't allowed to know.

“If you are willing, I can let you rule the Blood Race and have its full support. I trust that you will definitely become a brilliant Immortal Emperor.” The godfiend spoke when it was only the two of them left.

Li Qiye shook his head: “No, you misunderstood my intentions. Even without the Blood Race, I will still become the most brilliant Immortal Emperor across all the eons! I want to talk to you alone, but not about the matter of the Blood Forefather.”

Li Qiye paused for a bit before continuing: “Of course, if you or the Blood Race deem it necessary, I can still become your Blood Forefather. It would still be convenient and easy, but I do not wish to command the Blood Race.”

The godfiend pondered for a moment before asking: “Then what do you want?”

Li Qiye smiled and answered slowly: “What I want is very simple. When necessary, I want you to come into being! Take that item from your Blood Race and exert your power to fight for me!”

“That's impossible.” The godfiend smiled: “Even when Immortal Emperor Chen Xue vied for the Heaven's Will that year, I still didn't come out to protect him; there's no way I will come into being for you. I can lend you a hand, but I won't come into being.”

The godfiend was too important to the Blood Race. He was their soul. Outside of the legendary progenitor, no one had a greater importance to the Blood Race than him.

“I know your reason to live on!” Li Qiye smiled: “You have kept on struggling with your last breath till now to prevent the fallen from seeing the sunlight again. You are afraid that the Blood Race will descend to their doom and become void of sunlight!”

“Who are you!” The godfiend raised his voice after hearing this.

“This private conversation should show my goodwill in discussing this matter.” Li Qiye solemnly said: “In the Blood Race, you are known as the Immortal Emperor’s dao teacher because Immortal Emperor Chen Xue was your disciple. However, I’ll be frank, you are not qualified for this title.”

He continued on slowly: “You should have heard as well. Across all the eons, only one person is qualified to be called the teacher of Immortal Emperors! And that person is me!”

The moment Li Qiye finished speaking, the immortal coffin loudly shook. There was no doubt that even an existence like the godfiend was shocked by this.

Others might not know what Li Qiye was referring to, but the godfiend was privy to such information and understood Li Qiye’s intent!

“I should have thought of this much earlier...” The godfiend murmured: “I should have realized this when the Black Dragon King tore apart Immortal Emperor Ta Kong’s Heaven’s Will. He didn’t wish to compete for the Heaven’s Will with the emperor, he did it for you, Your Excellency Dark Crow!”

Since the ancient ages, even the great ancestors who knew of the existence behind the curtains would have to call him “Your Excellency”. On the other hand, those who would dare to call Li Qiye “damned crow” were all eternal existences!

Chapter 976: Deal

After a while, the godfiend finally returned from his bewilderment and spoke: “Your Excellency has not revealed yourself for a generation now. It is an honor to see you today.”

Although the godfiend was the soul of the Blood Race — an extremely incredible existence, he was only a junior before the real teacher of Immortal Emperors, the Dark Crow. Even older emperors were only Li Qiye’s juniors, let alone him.

“I don’t appear every single generation.” Li Qiye shook his head and said: “Sometimes, I disappear for several.”

The godfiend let out an emotional sigh and said: “I didn’t think that I would be able to meet Your Excellency in this situation. I have long heard of your thunderous fame before. I especially didn’t think that our legacy would be obtained by you.”

Li Qiye said: “Although your legacy is indeed incredible, it is not to the level where I must have it. Fate is what brought me to your Blood Race’s legacy.”

The godfiend had no response to this because he had heard of many legends regarding the Dark Crow. If the Dark Crow truly wanted something, very few items could elude him.

Li Qiye stared at the coffin and spoke: “Of course, since I have taken your legacy, I can do a few things for your race when necessary.”

“However...” Li Qiye paused for a bit: “We won’t talk about trivial matters like ruling the Blood Race. I have no interest in this, it is only a waste of my time.”

The godfiend didn’t deny this opinion. Ruling the Blood Race was the dream of many Blood geniuses. It was a supreme glory that would make their ancestors proud. However, the godfiend knew that the Dark Crow had even ruled the nine worlds. For an existence like him, ruling the Blood Race was no big deal.

Such overbearing words were said, but they seemed so natural when it came from Li Qiye.

The godfiend asked: “What will Your Excellency bring to my Blood Race if I am willing to come out to fight for you?”

This time, the godfiend’s words had no semblance of doubt or posturing. His tone was full of compliance.

He knew very well of his own strength. He was strong enough to be described as heaven-defying. However, this was not enough to act foolishly before the Dark Crow. For millions of years, many heaven-defying existences had pledged loyalty to the Dark Crow. Even Immortal Emperors were willing to work for him.

“We won’t talk about some stuff like glory or dominating the world, these are meaningless and I don’t have time or the mood to lead your Blood Race to such things.” Li Qiye answered: “If you take out that item and come into being for me to fight with all your

might, I can give you something that no one else can!”

“I’m all ears.” Despite living for so many years, the godfiend’s heart still jumped just now. Very few things could leave him with such eager anticipation.

“Blood Forefather!” Li Qiye slowly said: “I can give you a true Blood Forefather!”

The godfiend’s heart was stirred: “Your Excellency is saying...”

Li Qiye clarified: “Your progenitor! The thing, or rather, the existence that all of you have been waiting for!”

“No way!” The godfiend lost his voice, something that was very unbecoming of a character of his level. He was quite shaken by this.

“That is impossible because our progenitor is dead! That is why we have the Sky Dome and the blood pond as well as our legacy!”

“Perhaps, but perhaps not.” Li Qiye smiled: “Many things have remained a mystery until now, things that are quite difficult to trace. One of them is the origin of your Blood Race. Was your progenitor a drop of immortal blood or an evil existence, or a mythical devil?”

Out of all the theories, the primal ground supported the one about the immortal blood! However, as the soul of his race, the

godfiend knew that there was another branch of their Blood Race!

“If, say, I give you a true Blood Progenitor to finalize your Blood origin, how would you feel about that?” Li Qiye leisurely continued: “With a progenitor and a real origin, will you still be afraid of the fallen under the abyss?”

“I still don’t quite understand a few things. Please enlighten me.” The godfiend spoke after careful contemplation.

Li Qiye smiled and said: “Very well, ask.”

The godfiend inquired: “Your Excellency is a character that has been around for eras and ruled this world. Others might be unaware, but I know full well that it would be difficult to find an existence capable of threatening you in the nine worlds. With your abilities, why do you need some old bones like me to fight for you?”

Li Qiye said: “You are right about that. I’m not afraid of anyone in the nine worlds or even what is outside of them!”

“However.” He paused for a bit: “I still need people to fight for me in addition to guarding certain territories! I don’t need you to fight in the nine worlds, but in that place, I need a lot of people to explore and create bases for me!”

“Your Excellency is talking about that place...” The godfiend was intrigued since he knew of this legend as well. A legend that

weaklings wouldn't know.

Li Qiye said: "You have taught Immortal Emperor Chen Xue before, so after he obtained the Heaven's Will, he should have told you some things that only emperors know about."

"Your Excellency is talking about the place where the Heaven's Will returns to?" The godfiend spoke with emotions.

"Yes, that place! The place that only Immortal Emperors know about." Li Qiye responded.

The godfiend mused for a second before adding: "Your Excellency, as far as I know, only one person in each generation can go to that place. And they have to be an Immortal Emperor!"

"That was the past." Li Qiye revealed a mysterious smile: "This generation is different, everything has changed. Moreover, you should know that there is nothing I can't do. If I say it is possible, then it can be done!"

"Can I really go to that place?" The godfiend hesitated for a moment. His dao heart that had been calm for so many years suddenly grew hot with anticipation and excitement.

"Yes, I don't need to trick you and ruin my own reputation, right?" Li Qiye said.

The godfiend took a deep breath and finally solemnly spoke: "As

long as Your Excellency needs me, I am willing to take the vanguard and be of service. I am willing to go to the very end for glory!”

“Very wise.” Li Qiye said: “This is killing two birds with one stone for you. Not only is it beneficial for your Blood Race, you will also be able to see a different world, a world of deities and emperors!”

“May I ask when Your Excellency will prove our origin?” The godfiend asked with a solemn tone: “Where is this progenitor Your Excellency is referring to?”

“I can’t tell you right now.” Li Qiye gently shook his head: “But if you go to that place, I will give your race a progenitor.”

The godfiend’s expression changed as he asked: “You mean our progenitor really came from that place?”

“Maybe, maybe not.” Li Qiye smiled: “A few things are not as simple as they appear on the surface. Like I said earlier, solving this type of mystery is not an easy task.”

“I should have guessed that this was the case.” The godfiend murmured. If this was the case, then their progenitor didn’t come from the nine worlds, but rather that place where others couldn’t go to. That legendary location, the destination of the Heaven’s Will!

Li Qiye continued: “I can assure you that as long as you come out and fight for me, I won’t only take you to that location, I will also help you find your Blood Progenitor. Of course, I won’t force you. I will only give you and your race an opportunity. I’m not interested or in need of anything else.”

“I am willing!” The godfiend agreed: “Your words are the truth. With your assurance, there is no need to question anything! When will Your Excellency depart?”

“The time is not yet ripe. I will let you know when the time is right.” Li Qiye said.

Chapter 977: Changing Time

After settling everything with the godfiend, he finally called for the tower lord's group who were waiting outside.

They came in and Li Qiye told Si Yuanyuan: "Yuanyuan, you stay here for now. This place is quite beneficial. Try to the best of your abilities to learn something here."

"I, I can stay here?" Si Yuanyuan was stunned after hearing this. The Thunder Tower was a very important location to the Crimson Night Kingdom. Not just anyone could stay in here to meditate.

She had to look over at the Thunder Tower Lord because the tower was under his jurisdiction. If a disciple of Crimson Night wanted to meditate here, they would require his permission.

"Yuanyuan is a disciple of Crimson Night, so she is eligible to learn here." The tower lord agreed right away. Even the godfiend held her in high regard, so the kingdom couldn't possibly continue to waste her in this irrational manner.

For him, even if the backlash from the imperial family and fury of the Storm God were greater, he would still have to keep Si Yuanyuan here.

Chi Zixian was now dead, so the kingdom needed a new inheritor. If Si Yuanyuan could take this position, there was a big chance that she could return to the primal ground in the future. This made her a candidate with limitless potential!

“Now this is a sensible person.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “As long as your Crimson Night Kingdom understands the rules, the Thunder Tower will still be your property and Yuanyuan will still be a disciple of the kingdom.”

With that, his eyes became serious before continuing: “However, the old geezers there better sharpen their eyes. Since I am leaving Yuanyuan here, don’t blame me for being merciless if anything happens!”

“Yes, certainly.” The tower lord smiled wryly: “Young Noble Li can rest assured. I can guarantee that nothing will happen to Yuanyuan!”

Si Yuanyuan was in a daze while standing by the side. Not even in her dreams would she have imagined such a reversal. She had prepared for the worst; either being executed or exiled from her home, the Barren Earth! This result was completely outside of her expectations.

“If your kingdom doesn’t train such a good successor, it will surely decline.” Even the Bloodbull Godfiend commented.

The tower lord immediately felt a huge pressure after hearing the godfiend. He was a renowned character in the Crimson Night Kingdom. Alas, since he had to always guard the tower, the imperial family’s matters were out of his reach. More importantly, the Storm God had complete control. Even the few extremely powerful ancestors like him were somewhat helpless!

“If you have the chance to see Feng Piaoluo, tell her that this isn’t the generation when her father ruled the nine worlds. Don’t wallow in the illusion that she can still do what she wants!” The godfiend spoke: “There are a few people whom she can never afford to offend! This was true even back during her father’s generation! Once she does, there will be no one in this world that can protect her!”

Feng Piaoluo was the Storm God, the daughter of Immortal Emperor Chen Xue. Coincidentally, the godfiend was also her father’s dao teacher. Because of this relationship, the Storm God could do as she pleased like a tiger with wings. Rainfall and storms came and went at her beckons! In the Blood Race and even throughout the entire Barren Earth, countless lineages and experts were slightly fearful of her.

“This disciple will send the message.” Since the godfiend had spoken, the tower lord took a deep breath and bowed towards him.

It wasn’t as if the Storm God was the strongest ancestor at Crimson Night. However, her status as an emperor’s daughter and her ties to the primal ground caused these ancestors to make concessions at times.

However, it became a different story now since the Bloodbull Godfiend had given his input on the situation. Ye Chuyun was shaken as well since she was privy to more information thanks to her status as a ruler. His words meant that the Storm God wouldn’t be able to monopolize the kingdom’s future decisions.

Furthermore, the future successor of the kingdom was most likely no longer under her control!

The godfiend eventually spoke: "Let us go." The Virtuous Paragons lifted the immortal coffin into the palanquin and were getting ready to leave.

Li Qiye looked at the Winter Matron who was leaving as well and smiled: "Little girl, don't forget. I am your Blood Forefather, so you four sisters will have to carry my palanquin one day."

Such words enraged the matron. She glared at him before leaving.

Li Qiye, Si Yuanyuan, and Ye Chuyun returned to their abode. At this time, all of his actions attracted a lot of attention. Many people were speculating his identity.

Although the Blood Race didn't recognize the Bloodbull Godfiend, even the Thunder Tower Lord had to kneel. This was more than enough to show that the person inside the palanquin had a heaven-defying background. Plus, they could be from the Blood Primal Ground.

Even without knowing his exact identity, some big shots from these lineages could still guess that a great character had arrived from the primal ground. Thus, this made many curious about how a human junior like Li Qiye was related to the Blood Race. Why did the primal ground view him so highly? This was truly difficult to believe.

“Rumor has it that Li Qiye is likely to enter the primal ground and will rule the Blood Race in the future.” No one knew who spread this message or whether it was even intentional or not.

In short, this message spread from the Holy City to the outside!

“What a joke.” Someone heard this message and didn’t believe it at all. They sneered: “Li Qiye is a human. How can he enter the primal ground, let alone rule the Blood Race?”

However, a few Blood experts found that the source of this message was very reliable, so they quickly came together to discuss this matter in private.

“We are Blood, we definitely cannot let a human be our ruler!” A big shot stated during the meeting: “No matter what Li Qiye did to infiltrate the primal ground, we have the responsibility to protect the purity of our bloodline!”

“Yes, he is not a real Blood, so he definitely has ulterior motives.” A great character from the Blood-devil Tribe commented: “The primal ground can’t publicly show itself in many matters. This has been true for millions of years now. Perhaps, Li Qiye caught their weakness or secret. However, we, the Blood Race and my Blood-devil Tribe, have the duty to eradicate external threats to protect our eternal legacy!”

In a short moment, an atmosphere full of scheming filled the night sky.

After returning to their place, Li Qiye told Ye Chuyun: “We’ll go to the Godwar Mountain tomorrow. If you want, I can help you go up and maybe you will be able to learn some nice things.”

“Brother Li, I also want to go with you, but I most likely can’t. I have to go back to the Pure Lotus School tomorrow.” She quickly replied.

“Go back?” Li Qiye was a bit surprised.

She answered: “Brother Li, I received a message from the sect recently. We have made contact with your Cleansing Incense, so now our two sects might be building a dao portal. I have to personally preside over this matter.”

The construction of a dao portal between the two sects meant that there would be a direct teleportation path. It was a test of the relationship between the two sects. Under normal circumstances, only trustworthy allies would build a dao portal to connect to each other. Otherwise, it would create an underlying problem in the future.

Because of this important matter, Ye Chuyun — as the schoolmaster — had to look over the process herself. Otherwise, both sides would not be able to reach an agreement.

“Then you should go.” Li Qiye gently nodded.

However, when night came, Li Qiye had yet to go to the Godwar Mountain and Ye Chuyun still hadn’t returned to the Pure Lotus School, but an explosion suddenly occurred.

The entire region trembled and everyone woke up from the shock. They all rushed out in order to see what was going on.

At this time, an endless light spewed out from the Godwar Mountain like an erupting volcano. The difference compared to last time was that the light was no longer just an immortal light, it also carried a bronze affinity!

This massive bronze light rushed out from the deepest area of the Godwar Mountain and illuminated the entire area, brightening the Holy City as if it was daytime.

This scene horrified others as if this was the end of the world since this surging bronze light engulfed the entire city.

Once enough bronze light was present, strange images began to appear in the sky. These images carved themselves into the night sky with blinding flashes, making it so others couldn’t really see them clearly.

There was an image of a kingdom and a city. In the midst of the commotion, there seemed to be living beings walking around across the streets and corners. It was a very crowded area.

However, with a more careful observation, people could see that the busy pedestrians were not humans or members of the Blood Race or even existences from any other race. These pedestrians all seemed to be bronze statues. However, this image was too faint, so it was difficult to completely see it.

Chapter 978: Strange Phenomenon At The Godwar Mountain

The people in the Holy City and even those on top of the mountain right now were stunned at this scene. No one knew the meaning behind this phenomenon.

“Boom!” At the same time on a majestic, towering peak inside the Godwar Mountain, a bright figure seemingly wished to cross time itself and all obstacles. He trod forward to reach the deepest and highest location in the mountain to look at the phenomenon.

“It’s Lin Tiandi...” Someone exclaimed after seeing the figure beneath the bronze light: “Does he want to reach the deepest location?”

Meanwhile, no matter how Lin Tiandi tried with his myriad laws or even time-traveling sequences, he could only stop at this spot, failing to reach a greater height.

“Even the supreme Lin Tiandi can’t reach that peak.” Another murmured after seeing this.

One more added: “He is already quite amazing. Even if he can’t be listed among the top five of all ages, this is more than enough for him to be considered a supreme genius. Only supreme geniuses can reach this level.”

This phenomenon went on for a long time as if it was replaying

the past; these visual images seemed to have occurred in distant years.

Both Li Qiye and Ye Chuyun, who were sleeping, were alarmed by this commotion as well. They rushed out at the same time and looked at this phenomenon over the Godwar Mountain.

“What’s that?” Ye Chuyun quietly asked Li Qiye standing beside her.

He looked at the image for a long time before slowly answering: “There are a few things in there that ordinary people cannot grasp.”

“What kind of things?” She couldn’t help her curiosity.

His gaze remained fixed on the visual phenomena in the sky as if there was something within attracting his attention. After a long time, he finally responded: “A few items that are ancient beyond imagination.”

Ye Chuyun looked back at the mountain. The truth was that she didn’t know much about it, let alone the rest of the world. No one had heard of someone being able to reach the deepest crevice or the highest peak in the Godwar Mountain.

“Brother Li, how much do you know about the Godwar Mountain?” She knew that he specifically came for the mountain this time.

“How should I put this?” Li Qiye smiled: “If I say that there is no one in this world who understands it more than I do, you may not believe me.”

“I believe you.” Ye Chuyun nodded seriously and responded without any hesitation. Her trust in him was absolute.

He continued to stare at the mountain before speaking after a long intermission: “I believe in something as well. The Godwar Mountain might not be called an ominous ground, but it is the most dangerous place in this world.”

She inquired: “Why is that? I haven’t heard about any dangers there.”

Li Qiye gently shook his head: “Not just anyone can reach the dangerous areas. Moreover, the danger of the mountain is different from the general sense of danger.”

Ye Chuyun didn’t quite understand what he was trying to say. However, if he didn’t want to reveal everything, she wouldn’t keep on asking.

“Lin Tiandi can’t do it. He isn’t capable of reaching the Prime Peak.” Ye Chuyun looked at the mountain and noticed Lin Tiandi’s repeated attempts at climbing.

“The Prime Peak isn’t a place that he can climb to.” Li Qiye said:

“It is already incredible that he has made it through a Million Peak to reach that point. His understanding of profound truths is quite high. Unfortunately, he doesn’t need such a thing.”

“Can no one in this world climb the Prime Peak?” She asked. There were many legends about the Prime Peak of the Godwar Mountain, but a successful attempt was unheard of.

“Yes, Immortal Emperors!” Li Qiye answered: “However, Immortal Emperors won’t want to go to that place.”

“How come?” She inquired as she mused over the idea. She didn’t remember hearing about an emperor climbing the Prime Peak before.

“That place isn’t a nice or auspicious location, especially for Immortal Emperors.” Li Qiye smiled.

Ye Chuyun wanted to ask more but decided against it.

The phenomenon continued until the middle of the night before it slowly disappeared. The Godwar Mountain finally reverted to its normal appearance.

A large number of cultivators of many races rushed for the mountain.

“An immortal item is surely coming out of the mountain in this generation!” Both young and old ran hysterically to the mountain.

A youth freely laughed and said: “No one other than me will obtain the immortal scripture. I will definitely be able to soar to the heavens and ascend to godhood!”

“Quiet down. I heard that there is more than just eternal existences from the previous generation coming. If an immortal scripture actually does come out, I’m afraid even God-Monarchs will come.” A friend whispered him a reminder.

“Haha, there’s nothing to be afraid of. Don’t forget that this is the Godwar Mountain.” The youth responded leisurely: “No matter who they might be, eternal existences or Godkings, everyone is equal inside the Godwar Mountain. [Nobility is not preordained by the heavens](#)! Maybe I will even take a God-Monarch down!”

Okay, this is a hard one but also interesting. The official translation for this phrase “王侯将相，宁有种乎” is “Do those gentry certainly have blue blood?” This is a popular phrase after a farmer rebels during the Qin Dynasty. It brings up the question if nobility is innate. Why do the nobles get to have more than the peasants? The official translation is problematic in this context, although the meaning is fine in Chinese since it is known as a phrase and simply understood. Thus, I have to make it into a statement with the same meaning to fit this context. On a different note, I do find this concept to be surprising because it came earlier than I thought — around 209 B.C. It definitely seems more of a western idea.

This young cultivator's unrestrained speech scared his companion stiff. He quickly covered his friend's mouth and told him to be quiet.

Overnight, many cultivators entered the mountain, whether it be for the immortal scripture or for something else. In short, a great influx of cultivators arrived at the mountain despite it being in the middle of the night.

“Nobility is not preordained by the heavens at the Godwar Mountain!” Contrary to some careless young cultivators, a few great characters from the previous generation — including Virtuous Paragons — became quite cautious the moment they faced this mountain. They didn't want their boat to capsize in waveless waters; what if they died to the hands of a nobody or a junior? Their lifelong reputation would then collapse in a second.

“I should also leave.” Li Qiye gently nodded and told Ye Chuyun after the image had disappeared.

Ye Chuyun didn't go with him as she wanted to return to the Pure Lotus School instead.

Li Qiye left on that very night, but he didn't go to the mountain. He secretly visited several ancient and mysterious clans in the city.

These clans maintained a very low-profile even within the Holy City. Some didn't even want others to know about their existence. Outsiders simply didn't know about them at all.

After the visits, he finally left the city for the Godwar Mountain. Of course, he was not the only one. More cultivators poured towards the mountain from the other areas as well through the night.

At this moment, Li Qiye was famous. Each of his actions was noted even in the darkness, especially by those who were paying attention.

“Li Qiye is also going to the Godwar Mountain!” Someone privately discussed this matter.

Under the cloak of darkness, a pair of eyes had been watching Li Qiye’s every move. He noticed that Li Qiye was heading for the mountain and became excited, prompting him to command someone next to him.

He was the descendant of the Blood-devil Tribe, the Skybearing Monarch. He instantly came up with a plan the moment he saw Li Qiye on the road. Thus, he sent people to invite Bai Jian and Chi Tianyu.

The five saints of the blood race were close friends. Moreover, since he was the leader, Bai Jian and Chi Tianyu should have no reason to decline.

However, Bai Jian actually refused the invitation. He told his confidant: “Tell the Skybearing Monarch’s messenger that I am in closed cultivation. When I come out, I will go apologize to him.”

Bai Jian's confidant sent the monarch's messenger away. He came back and asked with some confusion: "Young Master, your relationship with the monarch is quite good. You are usually happy to answer his beckons, so why are you refusing this time?"

"A'Fu, this is a turbulent period." Bai Jian gently shook his head: "The Skybearing Monarch has great ambitions. Him inviting me at this key moment is probably not a good thing." With that, he glanced outside the window: "Fierce has arrived at the Barren Earth — this is not a good omen at all. I shouldn't be involving myself in these muddy waters. From today on, I will go train and won't ask about anything. If anyone comes, just send them away for me."

His confidant acknowledged the command and would carry it out.

The monarch was dissatisfied at Bai Jian's absence. As the Blood-devil descendant, he was quite influential within the Blood Race. He wanted to join forces with Bai Jian, so how could he be happy when Bai Jian didn't show up? He coldly grunted in response.

Nevertheless, Chi Tianyu arrived!

"Brother Tianyu is indeed my brother. You came to see me at a time like this." The monarch personally came out to greet him.

Chi Tianyu smiled: "Brother Skybearing has helped me many times in the past, so how could I not come after you called?"

Chapter 979: Nobility Is Not Preordained By The Heavens

Inside the room, both the monarch and Chi Tianyu walked side by side before seating themselves. The monarch looked at Chi Tianyu and smiled: “It seems like Brother Tianyu has something on your mind.”

Chi Tianyu smiled in response after looking up: “Please don’t laugh at me. I am only being bothered by a trivial matter, it’s not worth mentioning.”

“If I’m not mistaken, you are troubled with love.” The monarch said: “Is it Schoolmaster Ye?”

Chi Tianyu coughed after being exposed by the monarch: “Just a secular affair, please don’t tease me.”

“No.” The monarch solemnly shook his head: “Love between a man and a woman is part of the human experience. Plus, the Pureblood School and Pure Lotus School have always been close. Brother Tianyu and Schoolmaster Ye can be described as childhood sweethearts. It is only natural that you have feelings for her.”

Chi Tianyu turned quiet after hearing this. Although they were not really childhood sweethearts, it was true that their schools had a great relationship.

Prior to this, he was confident that as long as he tried, he would

be able to win over the beauty. He didn't expect for a stranger like Li Qiye to come out of nowhere!

With Li Qiye popping up in his mind, he couldn't help but grit his teeth in anger. The guy didn't only steal the lover of his dreams, he even killed his junior brother, the Swiftsword Marquis, as well!

He wanted to mince Li Qiye to pieces, but he didn't dare to act recklessly after Li Qiye's showing at the Thunder Tower.

The monarch smiled and said: "If Tianyu wants to win the beauty's heart, it is not impossible."

"Brother, don't tease me about this matter. If this is the purpose of this meeting, then I will have to take my leave." Chi Tianyu quickly shook his head.

The monarch shook his head and spoke in a serious manner: "Brother Tianyu, why do you think I am joking? Am I such a senseless person? We are brothers, so I only want to lend you a hand."

Chi Tianyu was glad to hear this and quickly inquired: "What advice do you have?"

The monarch said: "Winning the beauty isn't difficult. The first thing Brother needs to do is to kill Li Qiye, to eliminate your rival. Then, as long as you keep trying, you'll win her over eventually."

“Kill Li Qiye?” Chi Tianyu smiled wryly: “Brother, this is easier said than done!”

He was a proud person and had previously looked down on Li Qiye. However, after Li Qiye’s performance at the tower, he understood the discrepancy between them.

“Not necessarily.” The monarch said: “I heard Li Qiye is going to the Godwar Mountain. Brother, keep in mind that once you are at this mountain, nobility is not preordained by the heavens! Everyone will be equal, so Brother won’t lose to Li Qiye!”

Such words did move Chi Tianyu. He naturally wanted to kill Li Qiye, perhaps even more than anyone else.

“I’m afraid it still won’t be easy. Even with the suppression of the mountain, his speed...” Chi Tianyu’s eyes narrowed at this point. Li Qiye was way too fast, so fast that he couldn’t really see him back then.

The monarch smiled: “We are brothers so your problem is my problem. I can help you in this regard.”

Chi Tianyu happily asked: “Really?” Their relationship had always been good, and the monarch had helped him before!

The monarch replied: “If Brother Tianyu is determined, I will lend you my tribe’s imperial weapon for a bit! Even though Li Qiye is extraordinary, it will no longer be up to him once he enters the

Godwar Mountain. Even if he is very powerful, with an imperial weapon, Brother Tianyu, won't it be easy to kill him?"

Chi Tianyu's heart became red hot after hearing this; he couldn't contain his excitement.

The monarch went on: "Moreover, Brother can rest assured, I will tell our tribe's disciples to help you as well so that you can become famous."

Despite his boiling blood, Chi Tianyu had to say: "I'm afraid it won't be okay for Brother to assist me so much. Lending your tribe's imperial weapon to an outsider is not a trivial matter."

"We are brothers so it is nothing. Don't worry, I can handle it even if the elders scold me." The monarch spoke with great heroism.

Chi Tianyu was very touched after hearing this. He bowed towards the monarch: "You're someone who truly values brotherhood, I am very appreciative of this."

The monarch smilingly replied: "There's no need to be so polite, Brother. We are all disciples of the Blood Race. I will need your help later on."

Chi Tianyu hurriedly said: "Don't worry, Brother. When you take control of the Blood Race in the future, I will be the first to show support!"

The two of them looked at each other and laughed.

After the monarch saw Tianyu off, a Blood-devil ancestor spoke: “I’m afraid this plan might go awry. In my opinion, the primal ground greatly values Li Qiye. He might even take charge in the future! Even if he doesn’t become the ruler, he would still be an esteemed guest there...”

“... If you can kill Li Qiye with this maneuver, then it will be good. But if you can’t, then it will be quite precarious. Either way, we will be offending the primal ground.” The ancestor analyzed the situation for the monarch.

“Ancestor, who can be certain of this? We still don’t know Li Qiye’s position in the primal ground.” The monarch deepened his tone: “But one thing is certain: without Li Qiye, I can enter the primal ground. Plus, I am a Blood. If I can kill this human, won’t that show that I have the power to replace him? That I am stronger and more capable than him? This will only show the might of our Blood Race, and our clan disciples will love me for it!”

The ancestor pondered then said: “You are playing with fire. If you fail, you will burn.”

The monarch smiled: “Ancestor, there is no smooth sailing in cultivation. If one is afraid of a wolf and a tiger, then they might as well be an insignificant human. I shall seek prosperity in peril; if I can kill Li Qiye, then I shall be successful!”

“This is true.” The ancestor gently sighed.

“I need your help to take out an imperial weapon, Ancestor. Also, help me get that crossbow as well. With the Godslaying Crossbow, I will be able to deliver a fatal blow the moment Li Qiye becomes distracted, to give him a death without a burial!” With that, he revealed a frightening bloodlust!

“Fine, I hope that you will be able to lead the Blood Race one day.” The ancestor spoke gravely.

Nobility is not preordained by the heavens — this is a widespread phrase in the mortal world, but one would often hear this the moment they arrived at the Godwar Mountain.

This was especially true for the lively and ambitious youths. They loved repeating this phrase in this place. There was a reason for the phrase’s pervasive presence.

The mountain was a very special location. No matter how powerful one might be, they would be suppressed the moment they set foot inside. There seemed to be the hand of a god pressing down on one’s body, instantly lowering their cultivation all the way down to the Physique Accumulation realm!

It didn’t matter if one was a Virtuous Paragon or a Heavenly King or even a legendary Godking, their cultivation would instantly

drop down to the Physique Accumulation realm without exception.

Legend states that only Immortal Emperors could escape the suppression in this place. However, for millions of years and one generation after another, no one had heard of an emperor trying to climb to the Prime Peak of the Godwar Mountain!

From then on, after arriving at the mountain, both famous Virtuous Paragons and the unknown little cultivators would share the same starting line. Because they were all at the same realm, this place's defining phrase became very popular.

Here, even a weak cultivator could have the chance to assassinate a Godking!

Of course, killing a Godking was not such an easy matter, it was just that it was no longer an impossibility.

For many years now, many brilliant geniuses had killed Godkings on this mountain. Of course, this made it so that Godkings wouldn't easily step inside this area!

Not to mention the distant past, several years ago, a Godking was killed here. At that time, rumor has it that the Space Trample Mountain's Jikong Wudi came to the Barren Earth and offended the Blood-devil Tribe. Both sides immediately fought after this quarrel.

[Jikong Wudi](#) was just like his name. Even against the mighty

tribe, he continued on fighting while retreating. A large number of experts were killed by him, and this forced many ancestors to come into being.

Wudi means unbeatable/no peers/unequaled.

Eventually, a Godking from the tribe personally took action and chased him all the way to the Godwar Mountain!

After stepping inside, this Godking finally met the bane of his existence. During this battle, Jikong Wudi tore him apart.

This battle brought Jikong Wudi extreme fame as he threatened the entire Mortal Emperor World. Many people said that he would become an invincible emperor just like his ancestor, Immortal Emperor Ta Kong.

Meanwhile, the Blood-devil Tribe viewed this battle as a great humiliation. Both the young and old of the tribe were reluctant to talk about this battle.

There's an author's note in this chapter that I thought was cute.

I'll briefly summarize it here:

Recently, many readers asked when I will mass release. The truth is that I sincerely cannot do so right now.

Some said that I have a reserve. This is true, I do have some chapters, around 10,000 words.

I have recently been in a slump. Plus, there are many tasks to do at home. If I mass release and use up all of my backup chapters, then there might not be any new chapters. Because of this, the chance for a mass release is very low.

My son has just got into kindergarten as well, so I want to spend a bit more time with him.

Yesterday, when I got out of bed and wanted to write more, he told me to go play with him. I said no due to work because I had to make money, but then he said something that left me quite touched. He said: “Papa, don’t write, play with me. I don’t need toys so there’s no need to spend money.”

After hearing this, I felt that I have spent too little time with him.

Chapter 980: Entering The Godwar Mountain

Nobility is not preordained by the heavens! This phrase was truly not just for show at the Godwar Mountain.

On the mountain was a youth carrying a bloody saber. His body was engulfed in a blood energy as his long hair fluttered with the wind just like a waterfall of blood.

He came with a group of Blood-devil disciples and arrogantly laughed: “Will Godkings from the human race dare to come here?!”

“The Saber Emperor School’s Feng Zhicheng!” Many cultivators here were startled to see this young man.

He was the main descendant of the Saber Emperor School, one of the thirty-five great lineages of the Blood-devil Tribe. Its power was among the top five. What was even scarier was that he had also inherited the school’s terrifying weapon, the Blood-devil Saber. Thus, he was known to be quite vicious!

Humans and Bloods didn’t always get along in the Barren Earth. The Skybearing Monarch, as one of the leaders of the Blood-devil Tribe, was friendly compared to Feng Zhicheng. Since the Blood-devil Tribe was the most powerful branch of the Blood Race, Feng Zhicheng considered humans to be invaders. Normally, he would argue with human experts right away, and the result would be fights to the death.

“If a human Godking comes here, I will definitely kill them!” Feng Zhicheng laughed proudly while emitting a cold aura.

The Blood-devil Tribe viewed Jikong Wudi’s dispatch of their Godking as a great shame that they were unwilling to speak of. But today, Feng Zhicheng was quite aggressive to the point of provoking the humans!

Despite his deliberate showing of disdain, the human experts here didn’t want to say anything because nothing good would come out of debating with this brute.

Feng Zhicheng laughed proudly and went deeper into the Godwar Mountain with a large group of Blood-devil disciples.

At this time, wondrous lights emerged from the mountain alongside faint immortal hymns. Runes appeared on the hills with some intertwining universal laws as well...

Even though this mountain suppressed peoples’ cultivation, many cultivators still enjoyed coming here! This was because by successfully climbing these peaks, they would be able to obtain an extraordinary fortune.

Each peak hid a different opportunity. Some had an ancient sage that gave dao sermons. Others had natural immortal voices preaching the dao while others told different legends...

Just by being able to climb these peaks, people would have different adventures and harvests.

No one knew the reason for these fortunes at this place. Some said that there was an immortal buried in the deepest location of this place. Others stated that there was an immortal scripture underground. There were also those who claimed that this place was the dynasty of an immortal...

These hidden fortunes were the reason why many people came here. However, not just anyone could climb these peaks after entering.

The deeper one went, the taller the peaks became. And of course, the taller peaks were harder to climb! Thus, people used the height of the peaks as a standard.

From then on, the majority of the mountains were named [Hundred Peak, Thousand Peak, Myriad Peak, Deca-myriad Peak, and Million Peak.](#)

The raw would be Hundred Zhang Peak, Thousand Zhang Peak and on and on... Zhang is ten Chinese feet or 3.3 meters. Left out the Zhang measurement to make the name more presentable.

Million Peaks were the limit because for many generations now, no one had surpassed these mountains; they couldn't climb them. If one could cross this type of mountain, then they would reach the Prime Peak of the Godwar Mountain!

Legend states that no one had ever climbed to the top of the

Prime Peak before. No one knew what this feat entailed or what was located at the summit.

Li Qiye came before the Godwar Mountain and took a look. He saw many rolling peaks. Each of these peaks was very tall, giving quite an oppressive feeling to any visitor.

Directing his gaze even further, he saw the untouchable Prime Peak standing among the clouds like a divine mountain. It seemed to pierce the firmament as the celestials in space orbited it.

Li Qiye gently sighed while looking at this mountain. The mountain of imperial massacre! Even an Immortal Emperor had fallen in this place, showing its incomparable glory and might!

However, Li Qiye had never felt any glory worthy of praise after entering. Even after the end of that battle, he still didn't want to talk about this matter, let alone spread the tale. The mountain, in both the past and present, was the same in Li Qiye's mind because too many people, too many of his followers, had died here.

Those who were loyal and supportive of him, those who loved him... They died here, buried with his memories and emotions! Even if he was the Dark Crow that had experienced countless ages, he was still reluctant to turn his head back.

“Young Noble Li is going to the Godwar Mountain too?” The human cultivators greeted him as he gazed at the mountains.

He was very famous in the Holy City at the moment. Back at the Thunder Tower, he killed Chi Zixian's group of experts. Even in front of the Thunder Tower Lord, he still spoke about the Crimson Night Kingdom with contempt.

His strength was a source of pride for the human race. His killing of the Crimson Night's descendant was a reason for elation.

Of course, while some humans came to greet him, there were also those who avoided him because what he did was the same as starting a life and death feud with Crimson Night. They didn't want any part in this trouble.

As for the Blood Race, they naturally wouldn't give him any friendly gestures. Although they were not willing to provoke him right now, these Blood experts all had some level of animosity towards him!

It could be said that Crimson Night, to a certain extent, represented the prestige of the Blood Race. Thus, his murderous actions were a challenge to the Blood Race itself.

Back when Jikong Wudi wreaked havoc in the Barren Earth and murdered many Blood members, the entire race felt ashamed. And now, another human like Li Qiye was causing trouble, so how could the Blood Race act amicably towards him?

Li Qiye simply didn't mind friendliness or hostility. He only smiled and entered the Godwar Mountain.

He didn't go straight for the Prime Peak and instead started at the shortest Hundred Peak instead. After climbing to the summit of one, he would bury an item there.

This region was huge, spanning for millions of miles. There were up to many tens of thousands of Hundred Peaks!

He climbed them and continued the burying process. Of course, since there were so many, he didn't go to every single one. His selection of particular mountains contained a profundity that no one else knew about.

As the new star of Holy City, each of his actions was being watched. What made people even more surprised was that when he climbed to the top of these peaks, there was no visual phenomenon at all. No fortunes, no immortal preaching, or immortal hymns...

Everyone should have some harvest after reaching the summit, but nothing happened after Li Qiye reached the top. The dao runes didn't even move in the slightest.

"What is going on?" Those who were watching felt that his lack of harvest or fortune was unbelievable.

"Haha, he must be cursed, even the fortunes of the Godwar Mountain won't recognize him!" A Blood expert sneered.

"That's right. I heard the cursed ones aren't tolerated by the high

heavens. Not to mention this peak, even if he crawls to all the Hundred Peaks, he still won't be able to obtain any fortune." A young Blood laughed gloatingly.

Many people felt an indescribable joy in their hearts after seeing Li Qiye's failure, especially those of the Blood Race.

Those with a little skill and determination wouldn't bother climbing Hundred Peaks due to the lowest grade fortunes, so very few cultivators climbed this level.

Of course, there were also people willing to do so. After reaching the summit of some peaks, Li Qiye found that there were cultivators present already. They all obtained something for their trouble.

On a different one, there was a group sitting in front of a boulder and were observing the dao runes on it. Some were quietly listening to the faint dao noises underground...

When they saw Li Qiye burying an item in the mud, they became quite curious. A human asked: "Young Noble Li, what are you burying?"

Li Qiye only smiled and said: "Everyone says that plant a seed in spring and harvest the fruits in autumn. So, I am planting a seed containing the grand dao. Maybe when autumn comes, I will be able to pick up many immortal scriptures."

Such words left the group looking at each other. Such a belief was too ridiculous and quite frankly impossible. Only a fool would believe such a thing.

Although they didn't believe him, after he left, someone immediately dug up the location that he had just buried the item. However, there was nothing there at all.

“No way, I clearly saw him burying something down here, how could it have disappeared?” A cultivator dug a very deep pit, but he still couldn't find the item Li Qiye put in there.

“Maybe that guy is just trying to trick us. He knew that we would dig it up so he cast an illusion.” A friend shook his head and smiled.

“This kid is sick! It's one thing that he didn't get any fortunes after going to so many Hundred Peaks, yet he still has the mood to tease other people! What a freak!” The digger said with frustration.

Chapter 981: Meeting Yi Chuan Again

Li Qiye, of course, didn't have so much free time to tease other people. The truth was that he truly buried items there, but these items were instantly dragged down to the deepest location of the mountain. This wasn't something that others could see.

Moreover, these items were extremely frightening. After the last battle with the Ancient Ming, he gave these items to the mysterious clans inside the city for safekeeping. This time, he visited them and took back all those items.

For millions of years, people thought that a war between deities had taken place in this location. Of course, in a certain sense, that past battle was also a battle between gods. It ultimately resulted in a battle to kill an Immortal Emperor!

In present times, few people knew that this place wasn't always called the Godwar Mountain. In the past, it was a divine land. After the Ancient Ming took over the nine worlds, the Dark Dragon Dynasty built a supreme ancestral ground at this place.

After the death of an Immortal Emperor, this land was transformed into its present state, the current Godwar Mountain. Countless ancient battlefields had shattered here. Towering mountains and peaks were rebuilt from the accumulation of flesh and blood.

The world also didn't know that the thing suppressing everyone in here was not an immortal or any item, it was the most

terrorizing formation in this world — the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation!

After the battle, Li Qiye left the formation to reign over this place. Outside of the Immortal Emperor blood still flowing here, the more important reason was that this land was too mystical. Furthermore, the Ancient Ming had fortified this land for many years and truly affected the terrain. Thus, Li Qiye left the formation here as insurance to destroy everything the Ancient Ming left behind with the erosion of time.

The sight of the phenomena told Li Qiye that the time was finally ripe after these millions of years. This day had finally come, the day of his harvest.

Despite their great efforts, that highly coveted item was too profound and in the end, the Ancient Ming's efforts came to naught. They were unable to get the item inside as the time wasn't right!

Li Qiye finally waited until this day. He was not only going to take back the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation, but also a few things buried underground!

Virtually no one knows that the suppression was due to a great formation. They believed in the myth of an immortal being here instead.

Li Qiye continued to bury items deep underground. He started from the Hundred Peaks and then the Thousand Peaks, Myriad

Peaks...

For many cultivators, climbing these mountains was not an easy matter. This was especially true after the Myriad Peaks, it became prohibitively difficult to continue onward. The suppression became stronger the closer one was to the center of the Godwar Mountain. It was a great test to anyone's dao heart, determination, perception, and skill!

However, this was not difficult for Li Qiye. He was the creator of Godwar Mountain. For him, not to mention the Million Peaks, even climbing the Prime Peak was easy.

At one of the special Thousand Peaks Li Qiye was burying items in, a respectful figure immediately bowed the moment he saw Li Qiye: "Young Noble Li..."

Li Qiye looked up and smiled leisurely: "Royal Lord Yi, we meet again. This is truly a type of fate."

So it turned out that this old man who bowed respectfully towards Li Qiye was the Suhuang Country's Royal Lord Yi Chuan. At this time, a group of disciples were standing behind him. A'Bao, who didn't like Li Qiye, was among them.

Yi Chuan quickly told his disciples: "Come, greet Young Noble Li."

Back at the Void Trap Desert, some of them had looked down on

Li Qiye. But now, they knew that Li Qiye was their great lord's esteemed guest. What shocked them even more was when they heard some of his stories.

He even dared to kill the descendant of the Crimson Night Kingdom — this was too much to take in for little cultivators like them. In their eyes, Chi Zixian was a goddess from legends, someone completely out of reach. However, Li Qiye casually killed someone of her level so easily. How could they not be astonished?

Thus, after seeing his arrival, A'Bao's group didn't dare to slight him in the least. They were stricken with both fear and awe as they bowed towards him.

“Rise.” Li Qiye gently waved his sleeve and smiled: “Oh? That little lady isn't coming?”

He was referring to Yi Chuan's disciple, A'Li. He had a good impression of her due to her broad-mindedness.

“She's here.” Yi Chuan was happy to see Li Qiye bringing up his disciple right away. He pointed at a Thousand Peak ahead and said: “She climbed up that peak and is comprehending the fortune up there.”

Li Qiye looked at this peak for a bit. It was around five to six thousand zhang high. It was relatively tall among the Thousand Peaks.

“Mmm, to be able to climb a Six Thousand Peak at that age, she either has a strong dao heart or a mind free of distractions.” Li Qiye gently nodded: “However, there is still a big gap compared to real cultivators if she can only climb up a Thousand Peak.”

His words made the majority of disciples behind Yi Chuan lower their heads in shame. Even the proud A’ Bao was very embarrassed.

One couldn’t be considered a real cultivator by just climbing a Six Thousand Peak. Meanwhile, they could barely climb a Three Thousand Peak — this was not much different from mere mortals.

“May I ask how you define a cultivator?” Yi Chuan noticed this rare opportunity and immediately asked Li Qiye. He was seizing the chance for his disciples.

“Cultivation is not about innate talents. It relies on one’s dao heart, determination, and perception...” Li Qiye only smiled since he knew what Yi Chuan was thinking, so he casually taught them.

Most cultivators wouldn’t care for this basic theory. Li Qiye didn’t want to pass down a real dao system either. This was only casual speech. As for how much they could understand from it, this depended on their own efforts and fortune.

“Wow, I feel like I’ve missed something?” While Li Qiye sat on the ground to teach Yi Chuan’s disciples, a crisp and pleasant voice rang out.

Yi Chuan's youngest disciple, A'Li, finally came back from the summit. She was both excited and scared to see Li Qiye sitting together with her brothers.

Yi Chuan hurriedly said: "A'Li, come greet Young Noble Li."

She looked at him with surprise in her big and round pair of eyes before she happily smiled: "Young Noble Li is also here? Don't tell me you want to compete with Lin Tiandi by seeing if you can reach the Prime Peak?"

Yi Chuan was startled after hearing his disciple. Both Li Qiye and Lin Tiandi were peerless characters, not people that a small kingdom like them could provoke.

"This girl, what nonsense is this? Just greet Young Noble Li first." Yi Chuan gently scolded her so that his disciple wouldn't speak more outrageous lines.

Li Qiye gently waved and stopped Yi Chuan. He then glanced at the Million Peaks in the distance and smiled: "I am only competing with myself, there's no need to compare with others."

"How awesome!" A'Li cutely smiled and said: "So Young Noble Li is saying you are not weaker than Lin Tiandi?"

In the past, among Yi Chuan's disciples, only A'Li was unprejudiced towards Li Qiye.

“Lin Tiandi? I don’t need to compete with him.” Li Qiye smiled towards this curious girl.

If this was before, A’ Bao’s group would have laughed at Li Qiye and thought that he was ignorant. However, they didn’t think so today. Daring to kill Crimson Night’s descendant showed that Li Qiye had the power to back it up.

Li Qiye spoke to A’ Li: “It seems like you had a good harvest at the summit. A runic water vein... it can nourish your dao foundation.”

“How, how do you know that?!” She was jolted from hearing him reveal her harvest. She had only managed to comprehend the dao runes on the mountain and didn’t even have the time to tell her master, but Li Qiye was able to tell with a single glance.

“I only calculated with my fingers.” Li Qiye chuckled. How could this elude his eyes? It was only a small exaggeration to say that he was the creator of the Godwar Mountain!

A’ Li was both puzzled and scared. She wanted to ask, but Yi Chuan shook his head towards her and motioned for her not to.

Li Qiye told Yi Chuan: “Royal Lord Yi, when I drank your wine back then, I said I would give you a good fortune. Today, we met by chance, so it is time to finish our connection.”

After hearing this, Yi Chuan became quite joyous. He brought his disciples to thank Li Qiye and said: “Thank you for your guidance,

Young Noble Li. We are very appreciative.”

“Follow me.” Li Qiye accepted their gesture and then turned around to leave.

Yi Chuan quickly followed with his disciples. This was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity in his eyes. It wasn't easy to encounter a supreme genius like Li Qiye.

Li Qiye brought them into a hidden mountain base in this area. After entering, they all disappeared right away. No one was more familiar with this place than Li Qiye, so he brought them here to learn.

Chapter 982: Dao Passing

After bringing them here, Li Qiye looked at the group and slowly explained: “I only have half a day. I will repeat the theories I’ve stated earlier. You, you, you...”

With that, he pointed at three people in the group.

They were Yi Chuan’s best disciples. A’ Bao was one of them.

“I see that the three of you have trained in a combination technique and have decent teamwork. I will pass down an old Trinity Formation to you three. I will only repeat it twice, whether you can learn it is up to you.” Li Qiye said.

Yi Chuan’s disciples quickly held their breaths and focused. They were afraid of missing out on such a good opportunity.

Li Qiye then repeated the few dao basics. Even though this was only elementary information, it was completely different when explained by Li Qiye. Everything became so brilliant and easy to understand.

A’ Bao’s group had read these basic dao guidelines before and felt that they were too simple and boring. However, this tedious information became completely different when told by Li Qiye.

They never thought that such basic information hid such profundities. Even Yi Chuan, the ruler of a country, was immersed

in the teachings.

At this time, both the master and the disciples who looked down on Li Qiye were completely convinced and greatly admired him.

After the dao preaching, he gave A'Bao's group the Trinity Formation. This ordinary formation was not too profound, but after being modified by Li Qiye, it became incredibly abstruse. This made the three quite ecstatic, as if they had just found a great treasure. They felt incredibly grateful towards Li Qiye.

Yi Chuan was happy as well. He inadvertently created a good relationship with Li Qiye, but he didn't expect for this good of an outcome.

After passing down the formation, Li Qiye told A'Li: "You obtained a runic water vein. This vein is a bit special. Since our meeting is a type of fate, I will help you improve it."

With that, he pointed at her forehead. In the blink of an eye, bright waves rippled in the sky. A'Li closed her eyes and didn't stop Li Qiye from judging her dao foundation.

"Zzzz—" With Li Qiye's finger movement, the runes with a wavy texture suddenly intertwined like needles. In a short time, they combined to turn into a universal law in the form of a divine chain.

"Zzz—" Eventually, this divine chain imprinted itself into her sea

of memories and took root there like a healthy tree. It seemed to be turning into a heavenly merit law.

“This is...” A’Li felt the item in her mind. She was both happy and scared before asking curiously: “What is this merit law?”

“Carefully study it. One day, you will understand what kind of merit law it is.” Li Qiye didn’t answer her question completely, only smiling instead.

He then shifted his gaze towards Yi Chuan’s group: “You all can stay here for now to meditate. Try to climb the higher peaks afterward, there won’t be any more chances in the future. In the Godwar Mountain, your talents do not matter. It is all about your dao heart and determination...” He pointed at his heart after finishing this.

He taught them a few techniques to climb the mountains before turning around to leave.

Yi Chuan asked with concern as Li Qiye turned around: “Young Noble wants to climb up the Prime Peak?”

“Yes, but there’s no rush for now.” Li Qiye smiled: “When I climb up the Prime Peak, you all should leave. The Godwar Mountain won’t be like this from then on.”

“Thank you for your guidance.” Yi Chuan bowed again. He pondered for a moment before speaking with some hesitation:

“Young Noble should still be a bit careful on your trip. I heard the Blood Race wants to monopolize all the Myriad Peaks and up; they’re not allowing humans to come close!”

“I’ll be careful.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Will we meet again?” A’Li curiously asked while looking at Li Qiye’s back.

“If it is meant to be. To meet or not to meet, let it be up to fate.” Li Qiye smiled before disappearing at the entrance.

“What a strange person.” A’Li tilted her head and murmured: “He is arrogant but also friendly. After drinking one cup of wine from us, he gave us so many good things.”

“Because he is a master, a real master.” Another disciple spoke: “I heard a master only teaches when it is fateful, they won’t care about one’s background.”

“Either way is fine.” Yi Chuan sighed softly: “He is not from our world. He will definitely break the nine heavens and climb to the apex. We are only insects in this world and can only watch in admiration. He taught us these grand dao just because of the fateful connection back then.”

Yi Chuan understood that Li Qiye was returning the kindness from that cup of wine back then. From now on, Li Qiye no longer owed them anything.

Li Qiye continued on burying items in the Thousand Peaks. Each item he buried was different as well. Alas, no matter how many peaks he climbed, there was no reaction at all. He didn't meet any fortunes unlike the others.

Just like the speculations of the Blood Race, Li Qiye must have been cursed and the Godwar Mountain did not welcome him.

“Haha, it is useless even if you climb up a million peaks. A cursed person like him will never gain anything from the Godwar Mountain.” Someone gloatingly mocked after seeing Li Qiye's attempts.

Of course, the truth was far from this. He was the one who set up the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation to suppress this place. How could he obtain any fortune here? If he wanted them, he could have taken as many as he wanted. It was just that he didn't wish to disturb the peace underground because his followers were buried there!

In addition to Li Qiye who was attracting a lot of attention, there was another who commanded the same level of spotlight, Lin Tiandi!

He had reached the top of the highest Million Peak. However, no matter how hard he tried by crossing time and space, he couldn't reach the Prime Peak.

His methods were extremely heaven-defying. Many images

appeared. There was even an immortal paving the way for him. He even took out one supreme treasure after another! Some were completely unrecognizable by others!

Alas, even his best efforts didn't allow him to reach the final peak.

Even though others called him Tiandi, he was insignificant, unable to reach the apex that was the Prime Peak.

The Prime Peak had been there for millions of years. It seemed that no one could conquer it by reaching its summit!

“He is indeed amazing. Every generation, a wondrous genius like this would come out.” While carrying out his planting process, he occasionally looked up to see Lin Tiandi's methods and nodded approvingly.

Others marveled at Lin Tiandi's methods as well: “So powerful. No wonder why he is called the number one in the Barren Earth. Despite coming from humble beginnings, he can still stand tall against Mei Suyao's group. He is the pride of vagrant cultivators like us!”

Of course, there were also those who were jealous of Lin Tiandi, especially the younger generation. They knew they couldn't compete against him.

After exhausting his means and still being unable to reach the

Prime Peak, Lin Tiandi had to give up. He felt a bit dejected. Since his dao debut, everything had been smooth sailing and nothing could halt his pace. He was completely confident and would challenge any powerful existence.

However, he finally suffered a setback before the Prime Peak. Although he couldn't come up with a reason for failure, he still had to stop right here.

Of course, Lin Tiandi was still Lin Tiandi. He didn't lose his confidence because of this setback. He only smiled wryly with a touch of helplessness.

“Wait until I'm more powerful, I will come back to conquer you!” Eventually, he looked at the Prime Peak and murmured before leaving.

Some were happy and some were sad to see his failure. The happy people found consolation in his failure. At the very least, not everything went well for him. No matter how brilliant he might be, he was still met with failure this day.

As for the sad crowd, they felt that if even Lin Tiandi couldn't do it, there was no chance for other people. It was likely that they would never be able to reach the Prime Peak and see the scenery up there.

“It is no surprise to see Lin Tiandi fail here. Since the start of time, even Immortal Emperors face defeat one day, let alone us normal people.” A fella commented after this event. No one knew

if these words were meant to console Lin Tiandi or himself.

Chapter 983: Overbearing Blood Race

As Lin Tiandi was leaving the Prime Peak, he saw Li Qiye planting items along the way.

Although they were only staring at each other in the far distance, this was more than enough to cause the atmosphere to change.

There wasn't a need to say more about Lin Tiandi. His fame at the southern region was incomparable as the current number one.

On the other hand, Li Qiye recently climbed to fame by instantly killing the Crimson Night descendant in front of their ancestors. He used his own power to challenge the kingdom. This was enough to show his tyrannical nature.

Today, Tiandi and [Fierce](#) had finally met. There were many who watched them with excitement. They all wanted to see if the two would fight or not.

One thing I want to clarify here is that the people here are also calling Li Qiye "Fierce" like the previous world. This might raise some eyebrows since they should not know who Li Qiye is, so how do they know his title? Remember that long footnote about the choosing of this title? Just think that it is a more common vernacular used by the people in this novel. If we were to come up with an equivalent in our own language, the closest would be monster. Of course, later on, there is a reason why Fierce fits better than any other word due to a new modification to the title.

"Fierce and Tiandi, will they fight and who will win?" Someone

curiously wondered.

“We can’t tell who is weak and strong at the Godwar Mountain. Everyone is suppressed, so they wouldn’t be able to use their most powerful attacks.” A Barren Earth cultivator spoke: “However, if they leave the mountain, Lin Tiandi is probably stronger in my opinion.”

A human cultivator responded: “Not necessarily. Li Qiye is a monster that dared to challenge the Crimson Night Kingdom by himself. He didn’t even care for the Thunder Tower Lord back in the city!”

“Right, I am also very optimistic about Li Qiye. One of them challenged a Blood imperial lineage while the other suppressed five Blood tribes. It can be said that both of them are the nemesis of the Blood Race while being the pride of our human race!” A young human was especially excited.

This made the nearby Blood members very annoyed. The feats of these two on top of Jikong Wudi’s rampage back then left them humiliated.

“Look at these [humans flattering themselves](#).” A young Blood sneered: “Who says Lin Tiandi is a human? Legend states that he came from a family of scholars, but that family has our race’s blood running through their veins. Lin Tiandi is our pride, a human like Li Qiye is nothing compared to him!”

The literal idiom for the first sentence is gilding one’s face, meaning to elevate oneself through exaggeration or lies.

Despite this claim, no one knew whether Lin Tiandi was a human or a Blood. This had always been a secret!

“Hmph, what’s so special about your Blood Race?” The human youth didn’t give up. He snorted in response: “Li Qiye used his own power to mess with your imperial lineage, what did your race do about it?”

The Blood cultivator’s expression turned ugly after being provoked. He gave a sinister smile: “Just let Li Qiye act all cocky for now, he won’t be able to keep it up for long. In the Godwar Mountain, one’s background doesn’t matter! Even an emperor will be dragged down from his horse! Just wait, if Li Qiye dares to come close to the Myriad Peaks, he will never leave! That place is our world!”

The human cultivator’s expression sank after hearing this threat. He wanted to counter, but his friend pulled him back and motioned for him to stop running his mouth, lest he risks his life.

Meanwhile, Lin Tiandi stared at Li Qiye while standing on a different peak. Li Qiye only gave him a passing glance and went back to burying his items.

Lin Tiandi asked: “May I ask for Fellow Daoist’s name?” Even though his voice was not loud, it easily reached Li Qiye’s ears.

“Li Qiye.” Li Qiye continued his task while answering without looking back. After finishing with his digging on this peak, he

continued to the next.

In the eyes of many people here, Li Qiye's attitude was very contemptuous towards Lin Tiandi. Everyone thought that Lin Tiandi would throw a tantrum in response, but he didn't become angry at all.

Lin Tiandi watched Li Qiye's back going further away and murmured: "A character with complete disregard for myriad worlds, definitely someone who is hiding his true abilities."

He didn't challenge Li Qiye out of rage either. He only smiled and left the Godwar Mountain in a cool manner.

This scene completely disappointed many spectators. It wasn't easy for Fierce and Tiandi to meet each other. Many of them were waiting for the two to fight, but it didn't happen.

The strange images appearing at the Godwar Mountain made a large group of experts run here. Some sects even mustered all of their forces to obtain a great fortune on the mountain.

These groups were often led by the Blood Race. Although many human cultivators came as well, they didn't have the same amount of experts.

Currently, existences like the Heavenguard and the Mysterious Bamboo Mountain were reclusive and didn't interfere with worldly affairs. This made the humans in the southern region

weaker than the Blood Race in terms of both momentum and strength.

Thus, just as Yi Chuan mentioned before, the Blood Race acted quite aggressively and even divided the area into multiple sectors. They didn't allow for humans to climb certain peaks. A few Blood lineages categorized some peaks to have great fortunes and took them as their own territory, not allowing anyone else to approach.

Humans and the other races were naturally upset by this overbearing style from the Blood Race. However, without strong sects or imperial lineages backing them, they couldn't provoke the Blood Race, especially the unified Blood-devil Tribe. Thus, they could only leave in anger and avoided the Blood Race while choosing their peaks.

After finishing with the Thousand Peaks, Li Qiye began planting on the Myriad Peaks. At the beginning, he wasn't met with any trouble. However, once he chose the better ones, it finally came.

“Human, stop! This is our Blood Race's territory, do not take another step!” More than a dozen Bloods stopped Li Qiye the moment he got close to a Myriad Peak. They consisted of both young and old that had considerable blood energy.

Li Qiye paused and looked at these experts before smiling: “Your territory? Since when did the Godwar Mountain fall into the jurisdiction of the Blood Race?”

There were spectators from the other races stopped here as well;

they couldn't climb these Myriad Peaks or the Deca-myriad Peaks, so they felt quite indignant. This group saw the Bloods stopping Li Qiye and paused to watch. Some became quite happy and hoped that the brutal Li Qiye would open the way for them.

“Because we said so!” The leader of the Blood experts here sneered with a tough attitude: “And it's not just this Myriad Peak, with this as the starting point, the surrounding 100,000 miles all belong to us! Anyone who dares to pass will become the enemy of our Saber Emperor School and the entire Blood-devil Tribe!”

This tribe indeed had great solidarity. Not just the thirty-five great lineages, even the majority of the sects in this tribe consistently united against outsiders, especially humans.

“Quite overbearing.” Li Qiye smiled: “It's as if the world belongs to your Blood-devil Tribe and you can divide it however you want.”

“You are right!” The leader snorted: “This is our world. Be smart and scram or else your blood will stain this land!”

“Such an aggressive tone. It is not others' turn to act so overbearingly in front of me.” Li Qiye smiled.

“Haha, you are Li Qiye, right?!” A young expert among them recognized Li Qiye. He revealed an unfriendly expression to the point of being murderous.

“Yes, I am Li Qiye, and?” Li Qiye caught the murderous glare and couldn’t help but smile. Someone was considering him a fat sheep in a slaughterhouse again.

The moment he revealed his identity, the Blood experts immediately surrounded him in the sky completely like an inescapable net.

“Fight!” After seeing this scene, the spectators became excited before Li Qiye himself reacted. Due to his recent notoriety, everyone wanted to see how he would beat up the Blood Race. This was especially true for the humans, they wanted to see him rampage.

Li Qiye stared at these experts and leisurely smiled: “Oh? You want to rob me?”

“Haha, yes, we want to take your dog life!” One of them smiled deviously.

The leader snorted: “If you were someone else, then we could have spared you. But Li Qiye, there is no way out for you today. This place will be your burial!”

The Blood youth who recognized Li Qiye shouted: “That’s right, tear him to pieces so that the humans can see the result of those who oppose us!”

“It seems like you all really think that I am a fish on the chopping

board.” Li Qiye chuckled: “You think you can kill me with just your group alone?”

“Haha, Li Qiye, you can keep acting smug all you want.” The young Blood laughed arrogantly: “You might be strong outside, but don’t forget, this is the Godwar Mountain where everyone is equal at the Physique Accumulation realm! You might have the advantage in a one on one situation, but one against a dozen, where is your advantage now?”

“That’s right, we’ll tear this Li guy into a million pieces so that he will forever wallow in regret for opposing our Blood Race!” The experts here revealed their bloodthirst.

Chapter 984: Killing The Enemies

This situation left the majority of the spectators from the other races outside shuddering. Some of them glanced at each other and finally realized that at this moment, everyone had the same starting line.

The human cultivators held Li Qiye in high regard for killing Chi Zixian. However, it was just like the Blood experts had claimed, everyone was at the same realm — Physique Accumulation. Li Qiye would win if it was a one on one, but against a dozen, all of his advantages were gone.

At the same level, fighting a pack of wolves alone would be a very grim situation regardless of one's techniques and means.

“Ants can bite an elephant to death. This is looking very unfavorable for Li Qiye.” The human experts were worried for Li Qiye, but no one was willing to help him. Only a madman would help a stranger and offend the powerful Blood-devil Tribe in the process.

“Nobility is not preordained by the heavens! No matter how powerful you are, you are only a little cultivator here!” The young Blood spoke with a fierce look: “Li, accept your fate. You should have known that you will die by coming to this place!”

Li Qiye leisurely smiled in response: “Wow, it sounds like you are saying that I will really be torn to pieces here. Come, all at once so that I don't have to waste time cleaning up.”

“Go, tear him to pieces!” The young Blood shouted. With that, he was the first to lunge towards Li Qiye. He wanted this merit. If he could kill Li Qiye, he would become renowned in the world while raising the prestige of the Blood Race!

“Tear this little human animal apart!” The other Blood experts were not willing to fall behind. In the blink of an eye, more than a dozen experts all rushed towards Li Qiye!

“Watch out!” The human experts’ hearts were hanging on a thread. They were nervous for Li Qiye and quickly warned him.

Li Qiye didn’t bat an eye in the face of this assault. He stood still in place, giving the feeling that he was too scared to move.

“Not good...” The spectators outside wiped off their sweat and felt that it wasn’t looking good after Li Qiye’s lack of reaction.

As a blade was inches from slitting his neck, Li Qiye suddenly lifted his hand.

“Buzz!” An absolute domain seemed to have opened up. In this split second, time seemed to have stopped and space was frozen. All the murderous experts became motionless.

But it didn’t end there. While time was halted, one could hear sounds of metal being smashed and shattered. Both the experts and their weapons were decimated in the blink of an eye.

Silence quickly ensued as everyone became stunned. No one saw how Li Qiye did it. They only saw him raise his hand, then a dozen Blood experts were slaughtered.

“Too weak, I thought you all could have struggled a bit more.” Li Qiye slightly shook his head while looking at the bloody carnage with a regretful demeanor.

He was just testing his Stagnation Domain. Although there were Heavenly King level experts among the dozen, they couldn't even handle one blow inside the domain. Moreover, they were suppressed to the Physique Accumulation realm, so they were instantly rendered into a bloody pulp!

The spectators nearby were astonished by this scene. This was truly too shocking since they couldn't even see how Li Qiye slaughtered these experts.

Li Qiye didn't seem to care, as if this was an ordinary occurrence to him. He looked at the spectators and smiled: “In this place, I am higher than even deities. I welcome anyone who wants to challenge me.” With that, he climbed up the Myriad Peak.

The crowd turned quiet and just watched Li Qiye's departure. When he smiled and revealed his white teeth with that nonchalant expression, it made many of them quiver.

“That brat is too scary. It looks like the mountain isn't even suppressing him!” An older cultivator calmed down and seemed to

have noticed something.

The group began to compose themselves at this time. A cultivator became startled and exclaimed: “The Saber Emperor School’s Feng Zhicheng and other geniuses from the Blood-devil Tribe are all meditating at that peak, yet he is actually climbing up!”

“What about Feng Zhicheng?” A human expert spoke with contempt: “Li Qiye even dared to kill Chi Zixian, you think he cares about this Feng Zhicheng? Hmph, in my eyes, he is still nothing even with the Blood-devil Saber.”

“Yeah, Chi Zixian is one of the five saints while Feng Zhicheng isn’t qualified to join this group. Even if the Saber Emperor School is a big sect, it still can’t compare to the Crimson Night Kingdom.” Another human spoke: “Someone as fierce as Li Qiye simply doesn’t care for the Blood Race!”

Some human cultivators were supporting Li Qiye both openly and covertly. In their eyes, Li Qiye’s ability to strike the Blood Race allowed the humans to feel proud.

Li Qiye climbed to the summit and found that there were people meditating in this place. Strange images were showing themselves. Without a doubt, they had obtained a fortune at this place.

His presence immediately alarmed them. They turned around and sharply glared at him.

This group consisted of young geniuses from the Blood-devil Tribe. Although they were weaker than the five saints, they were quite famous in the Blood Race and even the Barren Earth.

“You’re that Li Qiye!” A young man with a pair of falcon-like eyes and a saber on his back stared at Li Qiye. He was Feng Zhicheng, the descendant of the Saber Emperor School.

Li Qiye lazily stared at them and said: “Yes, I’m that Li Qiye.”

“You killed A’Hong’s group!” A different man had a murderous glint in his fierce eyes. They immediately knew what had happened after seeing Li Qiye reaching this summit.

At the same time, experts from other summits watched from the distance. They wanted to see how this storm would end.

“Are you referring to the ones at the base?” Li Qiye smiled: “My bad, good dogs do not block the way; they did attempt to stop me, so I just offhandedly made mincemeat out of them.”

Li Qiye’s provocation made the group turn ugly. They were geniuses with high statuses, so Li Qiye killing their people in such a blatant manner was an affront to their authority and looking down on their sects.

“Ignorant fool!” Feng Zhicheng unsheathed the Blood-devil Saber and pointed the tip at Li Qiye: “Human ant, kneel and accept your death!”

The saber in his hand was crimson like flowing blood. It was especially demonic as if this was not a blade but a wave of devil blood.

It became even more diabolic once he poured his blood energy into the saber. The blade emitted an evil aura as if it was the hand of a devil, capable of extinguishing the life of any creature instantly.

Li Qiye slowly responded in a nonchalant manner: “Someone of your level can’t even block a single move of mine. Don’t waste time. All of you come together so that I can dispose of you all with one move. Of course, if you want to live, then scram right now and I might spare you.”

The group turned livid after hearing this. Such contemptuous words were beyond just putting them down. He was essentially challenging their entire race.

“So fierce, challenging the entire Blood Race by himself. How driven and determined is he? This is how a human man should be!” A human cultivator saw this scene and felt his blood boiling.

“Little animal, I’m going to hack you a thousand times!” Feng Zhicheng shouted. Li Qiye was looking down on him too much. Not capable of stopping one blow? Who did Li Qiye think he was? Even Lin Tiandi wouldn’t be able to beat him with one move. The moment his saber came out, it would destroy all existences.

He howled: “Die!”

“Clank!” The saber slashed through the air, creating gusts wherever the blade passed. A devil blood engulfed the sky. As the blade continued on its trajectory, this blood surged upward as if it wanted to break the firmament. Inside this devil blood was seemingly the hand of a devil reaching out. It was completely undetectable yet vicious in its life-devouring endeavor.

It went straight for Li Qiye’s throat. No one could escape this devil hand no matter where they tried to hide!

“Blood-devil Saber, it really is an evil blade.” Someone saw the evil affinity of the blade soaring to the sky and felt a chill run down their spine.

Chapter 985: Too Weak

“Clang!” The saber rang. In the blink of an eye, everyone thought that it had slashed Li Qiye.

However, after this sound came about, the sea of blood disappeared and the evil affinity moldered. Li Qiye remained there in the same spot as if he didn’t even lift a single finger.

At this time, people finally had a clear view of them. Li Qiye’s hand was pushing down on the blade in a carefree manner.

The Blood-devil Saber beneath his palm was completely immobilized, as if his palm weighed the same as countless divine mountains. Once stopped, even a godfiend wouldn’t be able to escape, let alone a mere saber.

Feng Zhicheng’s complexion was flushed because he couldn’t pull back his saber from Li Qiye’s leisurely grasp. It felt as if his saber and Li Qiye had fused together. He mustered all of his strength, yet he still failed to move the blade even a tiny bit.

“Like I said, someone of your level wouldn’t even be able to withstand one blow.” Li Qiye smiled and shook his head.

Under the Hell Suppression Godly Physique, Feng Zhicheng’s puny cultivation couldn’t reach the apex. Although the Blood-devil Saber was a supreme evil blade, it was still suppressed by Li Qiye’s hand.

“Junior, do not be so presumptuous, die!” The other geniuses here saw Feng Zhicheng in trouble and all shouted at the same time. They summoned their treasures and attacked Li Qiye with their most powerful moves.

“Things should have been like this from the beginning.” Li Qiye smiled and didn’t bother looking at the oncoming barrage. He simply lifted his finger and unleashed a strike.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Before the crowd could realize what was going on, many bodies fell down. These attacking Blood geniuses lost their lives to just one finger strike!

It was too swift! No one saw Li Qiye’s technique that killed all the Blood-devil geniuses instantly. There was a frightening, bloody hole in each of their foreheads.

There was no doubt that his finger penetrated their skulls. They died with their eyes agape without even realizing how they died.

Soaring Immortal Physique — the ultimate in speed. The swiftness of this finger attack surpassed the void. These geniuses were nothing in the face of this attack.

“So brutal!” Even Virtuous Paragons from the previous generation shuddered after seeing this from the other peaks. Li Qiye’s speed could even threaten themselves.

“No techniques or dao laws, just pure speed alone. Don’t tell me he cultivates the Soaring Immortal Physique?” One of them was astonished and had this thought.

Feng Zhicheng was currently shocked. He quickly ran and even gave up on his saber! In the blink of an eye, he created a gap between him and Li Qiye! However, he had to stop after feeling a chill on his neck. A very sharp saber was hanging before it.

This sensation was too familiar. He didn’t need to look to know that it was his own Blood-devil Saber threatening his life!

It happened in an instant, so no one could see it. The other cultivators felt suffocated after witnessing this scene.

Feng Zhicheng came to a standstill and didn’t dare to move. He even stopped breathing. The saber had followed him for decades, so he knew just how sharp and terrifying it was. If he moved even a little bit right now, his head would be rolling on the floor.

“What a pity. What a nice blade, a shame that it wants to cut off its master’s head.” Li Qiye gently shook his head and smiled with the saber in his grasp.

Feng Zhicheng’s expression was extremely ugly. Until now, he was the only one who decapitated people with the devil blade. He never expected that one day, his own blade would be hovering around his neck! The blade that had always followed him was now the cruel instrument on the verge of slaying him.

“If I just apply a little force, your dog head would fall to the ground.” Li Qiye leisurely smiled.

“Li, halt your impudence!” A cold voice resounded as someone climbed up the peak.

“Chi Tianyu is here.” An attentive watcher quickly stated after seeing the fella.

Many people held their breaths after seeing this newcomer. Everyone knew that the Blood-devil Tribe had always been united. Provoking one was the same as provoking them all. No one found it surprising that Chi Tianyu would interfere at this moment.

“What, you want to stand up for the weak?” Li Qiye glanced at Chi Tianyu and grinned.

“I will kill anyone who murders members of my Blood Race, no matter who they are!” Chi Tianyu landed on the summit and glared at Li Qiye like a wolf eyeing its prey. He didn’t hold anything back and released his blood energy in its entirety.

Despite the great suppression from the mountain, Chi Tianyu’s surging blood energy still carried an ancient might as if a deity was protecting him. It made him quite powerful.

“It seems like the rumors are true.” Someone in the distance saw this and murmured: “Chi Tianyu really has an ancient Blood Race bloodline flowing through his veins!”

Li Qiye laughed and quipped: “So if I kill a few Blood members, I will be chased forever?”

“Let go of Feng Zhicheng now and I will give you a swift death. Otherwise, I’ll slowly torture you and let you taste a fate worse than death!” All of Chi Tianyu’s blood energy rushed out, turning him into a blood god with a murderous momentum.

“How confident. Good, go for it. I’ll give you a chance. If you can’t save him in one move, I’ll chop off his head...” Li Qiye smiled.

“Suppress!” Chi Tianyu was also quite decisive and made his move before Li Qiye could finish his words. He formed a mudra with both hands at an unparalleled speed. In the blink of an eye, his blood energy fused to form a seal of blood. This technique immediately gave birth to a strange image of a deity controlling this blood seal that was then unleashed straight at Li Qiye.

The laws of the dao were instantly overshadowed and repressed by this blood seal. Even the cultivators on the other peaks felt its ancient power that stemmed from the Blood Race.

“Sealing Evil Divine Mark! The ultimate attack of the Pureblood School!” Many human experts gasped and were very worried for Li Qiye after seeing this attack.

However, Li Qiye was unperturbed in the face of this sacred attack. He simply punched the air without using any special

techniques. No universal laws emerged, and neither did the surging power from the grand dao appear.

This fist only had absolute speed, absolute power, and absolute weight...

“Bang!” The punch directly shattered the blood seal. Blood splattered everywhere along with the unpleasant sound of bones breaking.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” Despite using the ultimate attack of his school, Chi Tianyu still couldn’t escape defeat. He had to stagger dozens of steps back while spewing out a mouthful of blood. And even then, he still couldn’t stabilize himself!

His injury didn’t stop there! Li Qiye’s punch shattered his entire arm. His flesh was dangling from what was left of his bones!

Such a scene forced everyone to take a deep breath. No one expected that Chi Tianyu, one of the five saints, wouldn’t be able to handle a single punch from Li Qiye.

“This, this is far too strange, too devilish...” An older Virtuous Paragon from the Blood Race shuddered: “How could there be such a big gap when they’re both at the Physique Accumulation level? This is simply impossible. Can it be, can it be that this brat is not suppressed by the Godwar Mountain?”

After arriving at this conjecture, the paragon quickly shook his

head and murmured: “No way. Even Godkings would be suppressed, let alone a junior like him.”

“You truly disappoint me.” Li Qiye smilingly shook his head while looking at the wounded Chi Tianyu: “Completely lacking in skill yet you still want to interfere... No matter what your intentions are, trying to save a fellow clan member is a good thing. Unfortunately, you don’t know your own limits!”

The pale Chi Tianyu became furious after hearing this. He had witnessed Li Qiye’s terrifying speed, but in an actual fight, Li Qiye’s speed was even more frightening than he had previously anticipated!

He would quiver whenever he thought about Li Qiye’s speed even when he was being suppressed by the mountain. This made him want to eliminate Li Qiye even more. Chi Tianyu couldn’t afford to let him live since the guy was too big of a threat.

“All I can say is, sorry, you have failed. I can only fulfill my promise.” Li Qiye smiled and said while staring at the paled Chi Tianyu.

“No...” Feng Zhicheng let out an unwilling scream, but it was too late. Blood spurted from where his head used to be. As his skull was flying in the air, he could see a stream of blood gushing from his own neck.

Eventually, it rolled far away while his body made a loud thump, falling flat on the ground. His blood dyed the mud red as if it was

nourishing the land.

“That felt good!” A human expert swung his fist in the air to celebrate: “This is how things should be! The Blood Race has been long overdue to be taken down a notch. If we humans don’t show our might, they would keep on thinking that they’re the boss of the Barren Earth!”

Such words incited a lot of hostile glares. In just a second, many Blood experts nearby coldly stared at him.

This human was frightened and lowered his head a bit. Nevertheless, he still had to let out a few laughs since he felt quite good from Li Qiye quickly dispatching Feng Zhicheng.

Chapter 986: Breaking An Imperial Weapon BareHanded

“You still haven’t escaped. I actually do admire your courage.” Li Qiye put the saber away and smiled towards Chi Tianyu.

Chi Tianyu took a deep breath and channeled his blood energy. With a series of crackles, his crushed arm was restored!

Even though his cultivation was suppressed by the Godwar Mountain, his dao foundation was still there so he could reconstruct his ruined arm.

“Our Blood Race only has heroes who die in battle, not fleeing cowards!” Chi Tianyu took a deep breath. After thinking about his ace, he proudly arched his chest and his aura soared once more!

“Yes! That is a man of our Blood Race!” A Blood expert quietly praised after seeing Chi Tianyu regaining his confidence.

Li Qiye chuckled after seeing Chi Tianyu’s revitalization and slowly said: “It doesn’t matter if you’re truly unafraid of death or have sufficient strength to back it up. No matter what, just this confidence alone is worthy of praise.”

“Very well, if your Blood Race only has heroes who die in battle and no fleeing cowards, then I’ll help you.” He continued: “Come, show off all of your moves. This is your final chance.”

Chi Tianyu prepared himself while staring intensely at Li Qiye. In the end, he bit his lip and spewed out some longevity blood while shouting: “Die!”

“Boom!” The moment he cried out, the wind and clouds suddenly changed. The mountain range shook and a gigantic ring flew out. When his longevity blood stained this ring red, it covered everything and suppressed the world.

This was a surging imperial aura that could deter even gods. The gigantic ring’s suppressive momentum came crashing down and destroyed all things.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!” With loud explosions, the frightening ring sealed Li Qiye’s body. Moreover, it continued to emit loud blasts with its constant rotation to grind him into a bloody mist.

“An Immortal Emperor Life Treasure!” Many were startled before this imperial aura. Some even screamed in horror!

Such a sudden development frightened the crowd. This was outside of their expectations since they didn’t think that Chi Tianyu’s hidden card was an imperial weapon!

A human expert shouted: “There’s no way. As far as I know, the Pureblood School doesn’t have an imperial weapon!”

The Pureblood School was indeed powerful, but it had never produced an Immortal Emperor before. Thus, it was common

knowledge that it didn't possess an imperial weapon. However, Chi Tianyu had just taken one out, so how could the crowd not become shocked?

“It is a weapon from the Blood-devil Tribe!” An expert from the previous generation recognized this gigantic ring and murmured: “From the Wang's direct branch!”

He was referring to the Skybearing Monarch's clan. The Skybearing Monarch's real name was Wang Tiancheng, but everyone nowadays referred to him as the Skybearing Monarch.

“The Blood-devil Tribe is truly unbelievable when it comes to their solidarity. They even loaned out an imperial weapon!” Both humans and members of the other races became quite envious.

Everyone knew that imperial weapons were priceless treasures. They were the defining treasures of their respective sects, meant to be used for their own protection. Even a sect's disciples wouldn't normally get an opportunity to use them!

But now, the Wang Clan from the Blood-devil Tribe actually let Chi Tianyu borrow their imperial weapon. This was a great showing of camaraderie and solidarity!

Thus, it was understandable that the experts from the other races became quite envious of the whole thing. This was doubly true for the humans. They could be considered the top race in the Barren Earth, but they had always been fragmented with their own individual goals!

“It’s over, Li Qiye is dead for sure!” A Blood expert snorted after seeing the imperial weapon.

A young Blood was even more jubilant. He laughed with contempt: “What is this about being the ‘Fierce’ of the human race? Hmph, a junior with such a shallow foundation still dares to challenge our Blood Race? He doesn’t know his own strength. We have been standing strong in the nine words for millions of years with unfathomable power. How can an ignorant junior like him challenge us!?”

Although some human experts were annoyed by this claim, they remained silent as they had no other choice. It seemed like Li Qiye’s defeat was a foregone conclusion the moment the imperial weapon came out.

The cultivation of everyone in the area was suppressed to the Physique Accumulation realm. In this circumstance, if one could control an imperial weapon, then victory would certainly be within their grasp.

“Boom!” The imperial aura continued to spread like an ocean engulfing Li Qiye. He appeared incredibly small in contrast to this vast and mighty aura.

“Bang!” A deafening blast resounded. Li Qiye directly unleashed a fist without any special attributes. It was a direct contest of force.

This attack that resembled an immovable fist of a god struck the

gigantic ring and actually managed to stop its offense. Beneath the ring, people could still see the shimmering golden brilliance of this fist. It radiated a holy aura as if it was of the Buddhist faith, as if the legendary Buddha had unleashed it. It was capable of subduing demons and devils!

“Meeting an imperial weapon barehanded? He’s insane!” A spectator in the distance became slack-jawed. This was the craziest thing they had ever seen!

“Ignorant brat, he is asking for death. He’s actually punching an imperial weapon with his bare fist!” A young Blood sneered as if he could foresee Li Qiye’s tragic end.

“Bang!” With another loud explosion, the unbelievable happened. Li Qiye’s golden fist actually stopped the gigantic ring. He was completely fine; even an imperial weapon couldn’t hurt him in the slightest.

“Break for me!” Chi Tianyu didn’t dare to believe it. He had never seen such a domineering display before — actually halting an imperial weapon with one’s bare hand! He wouldn’t even dream of such a thing, but it was unraveling right before him!

He didn’t hesitate any longer. He spewed out even more longevity blood onto the ring to unleash an even more devastating force.

But regardless of his urging, the imperial weapon still couldn’t kill Li Qiye. His heavenly fist was immovable even when facing the

mighty weapon.

Indestructible Diamond Fist — one of the Myriad Dao Fists. This attack was even stronger than an imperial weapon's might, allowing Li Qiye to be unharmed.

“That, that's impossible...” The crowd was dumbfounded by this. Stopping an imperial weapon with bare hands — this was beyond the imagination of common men, yet it was actually happening.

The youths from the Blood Race were even more shocked. At this time, it seemed like they had just swallowed a fly. Earlier, they announced that Li Qiye's death was assured, but now, he indirectly gave them a fierce slap to the face.

“Is this brat still a human?” An older Virtuous Paragon from the Blood Race quivered a bit. This was simply too frightening.

“You're too weak. Being suppressed to the Physique Accumulation realm in this place means that you can't even unleash one or two percent of the weapon's strength, yet you wish to kill me?” Li Qiye blocked the weapon then looked at Chi Tianyu with a smile.

Chi Tianyu, on the other hand, was completely pale; it was as if he had just seen a ghost!

“Time to end this!” Li Qiye was still smiling when he suddenly put more strength into his fist on the imperial weapon. In the

blink of an eye, the Soaring Immortal and Sky Destroyer Physiques erupted. Absolute power and absolute speed combined to form an unstoppable might to resist the ring from above.

“Boom!” The ring was blown away like a gigantic mountain by Li Qiye. It flew all the way out of the Godwar Mountain and disappeared into the horizon.

The crowd turned silly after seeing this. Blowing an imperial weapon away with one fist? This was even more miraculous than anything that could be seen in a dream, something that only belonged in legends. It was likely that until today, no one had ever seen something like this before in person!

Someone who didn't believe his own eyes murmured: “Am I dreaming? Pinch me real quick...” Of course, he quickly screamed right afterward; his companion showed no mercy and pinched him hard. He woke up from the pain and understood that this wasn't a dream.

“This kid is unreal...” Virtuous Paragons from the Blood Race were in awe. This feat was not something a normal person could do.

“Thump, thump, thump...” Chi Tianyu took several dozen steps backward. He wasn't pushed back by Li Qiye, it was due to fear.

While watching Li Qiye coming closer towards him, he no longer had the courage to fight. Broken down from fear, he turned around to flee!

“Zzz!” Li Qiye casually flipped his palm and a universal law appeared within his grasp. He launched it forward and it pierced Chi Tianyu’s body, nailing him to the ground.

Chi Tianyu’s utter defeat left the majority of the Blood spectators completely dejected. At this moment, no one was willing to jump out to save Chi Tianyu.

Li Qiye could even knock an imperial weapon flying, what else couldn’t he do? Against someone who was devilish to this level, even the unified Blood-devil Tribe didn’t want to come out and fight Li Qiye to the very end!

Chi Tianyu continued to struggle in an attempt to escape, but the law had nailed him down to the ground. He couldn’t even move, let alone escape as Li Qiye inched closer and closer.

He looked at the struggling man on the ground and gently shook his head: “To tell the truth, I’m a bit disappointed. Earlier, you were quite heroic, saying something about your race only having heroes and no cowards. Unfortunately, look at you now...”

Chapter 987: Sneak Attack

“Whoosh!” Before Li Qiye could finish his words, a powerful arrow pierced his body and pinned him to the ground as well.

This development was so sudden that no one could react in time.

Li Qiye had just defeated Chi Tianyu and nailed him to the ground. Chi Tianyu had no way of fighting back, so Li Qiye was at his most vulnerable state.

No one saw where the arrow came from. It was extremely fast, a hundred times faster than lightning. Even Li Qiye couldn't avoid it in time.

Someone eventually calmed down and asked in a daze: “What happened?”

A human expert from the previous generation had a dark expression and spoke wryly: “Someone performed a sneak attack!”

At this time, anyone could guess that it was the Blood Race who performed this ambush.

“Lowly slime!” A young human gritted his teeth after seeing this, but he couldn't do anything about it. The arrow struck Li Qiye with frightening speed.

“Finally dead!” Countless Blood experts felt great relief after seeing Li Qiye’s death. In their eyes, this devilish guy was simply too much. He was even able to blow away an imperial weapon with his bare hands! He would be a big threat to the entire Blood Race if he continued to live.

Even though it was not very honorable to kill him via ambush, this was still much better than leaving him as a future threat.

“Is he really dead?” A few humans couldn’t accept this sudden development. Everyone held Li Qiye in high regard, but he was ultimately assassinated.

It was fine to die in the hands of enemies in a direct confrontation, but to die via assassination... this was the most frustrating way to go for a genius!

A big shot took a careful look and murmured: “I’m afraid he is. This arrow was most likely shot out from an incredible crossbow.”

Even Chi Tianyu, who was lying there, awaiting his death, became stunned. He found this unbelievable as well.

Finally, someone dressed in black slowly climbed to the summit under the eyes of all the spectators. After seeing Li Qiye pinned to the ground, he finally heaved a sigh of relief and took off his black hat.

“Brother Sky!” Chi Tianyu was ecstatic after seeing this person

clearly and cried out: “Thanks for saving me!”

Returning from the verge of death couldn't have made him happier.

“Skybearing Monarch!” When people finally saw this person's face, they took deep breaths and felt a chill inside.

“So shameless!” Another young human felt indignant: “The leading successor of the Blood-devil Tribe is only an ambushing slime.”

“The victor becomes the king while the losers are vilified as bandits. For so many years, countless brilliant geniuses had been assassinated.” A young Blood immediately mocked him: “If Li Qiye was truly strong, he would have been able to dodge that arrow.”

“The Skybearing Monarch is worthy of his title and being the future leader of our tribe. The moment he took action, he was able to get revenge for our fallen disciples!” Another Blood applauded.

One more Blood quickly joined the fun: “That's right, this Li guy's hands are stained with our Blood disciples' blood. The Skybearing Monarch dispatching him today is still not enough to atone for all of his sins!”

The victor becomes the king while the losers are vilified as bandits — this phrase was not wrong at all. After killing Li Qiye, the monarch became the hero of the Blood-devil Tribe. It was no

longer important which method he used to kill Li Qiye.

Although many human cultivators were unwilling to accept this, there was nothing they could do. They glanced at each other and felt a cold chill. The Blood Race was too unified, especially the Blood-devil Tribe. They always stood on the same side to fend off outsiders no matter the circumstances!

The monarch stared at Li Qiye's corpse and boldly uttered: "I will kill anyone who murders members of my Blood Race no matter what!" His voice echoed across the entire Godwar Mountain.

In fact, he felt very relieved at this moment. Finally, he was able to kill Li Qiye; if he didn't, the guy would have always been a thorn in his side.

Many Blood disciples chanted in unison: "We will kill anyone who murders members of our Blood Race no matter what!" Some were even shouting the Skybearing Monarch's title in jubilation.

His feat today immediately propelled his position in the tribe like a ship on water. Many people now supported him, and this would pave the way for him to eventually lead the entire tribe.

The monarch sonorously declared: "Today, I will take Li Qiye's head and hang it outside of the Holy City so that people will know the fate of those who kill our race's disciples!"

His declaration was heard by a lot of people. Many Blood

disciples cheered in response. Earlier, the Blood Race felt very repressed due to Li Qiye's actions, but now, they could hold their heads high again.

The monarch smiled after seeing the positive response from the Blood disciples. This event was enough for him to become famous in this world. His position in the Blood Race would soon be unparalleled.

The monarch came closer to Li Qiye's body to chop off his head so that he could hang it outside the city. Only by doing so would his fame spread even more; this way, others would know that it was him who killed Li Qiye.

"Pluff!" Blood spurted everywhere. When everyone thought that the monarch had chopped off Li Qiye's head, they were completely stunned by the actual unbelievable development.

The monarch took several steps back. His chest cavity now had a terrifying bloody hole. His heart was ripped out from his body.

"What is going on?" Many people jumped from seeing this with widened eyes.

At this time, they saw Li Qiye — who should have been dead — stand up. There was a heart still beating in his hand, the monarch's heart!

The crowd gasped from seeing this. Who would have thought

that the supposedly dead Li Qiye would actually manage to claw out the monarch's heart?

“Yes, well done!” The human cultivators became relieved after seeing this. Some of them even cheered in response.

“No, this can't be...” The monarch could no longer stand straight. He stared at Li Qiye in disbelief while mumbling: “No... no one has ever survived the Godslaying Crossbow!”

Li Qiye tightened his grip and the heart in his hand turned into a bloody mush. He smiled and slowly pulled out the arrow from his body: “Not a bad arrow. Unfortunately, it is still far from being able to kill me.”

Having said that, he looked at the monarch and said: “I have been waiting for this for quite some time.”

He casually threw the arrow. “Whoosh!” The monarch couldn't dodge it and was pinned to the ground by the arrow.

The truth was that Li Qiye knew people were watching him even before he entered the Godwar Mountain. He was only playing dead to lead the snakes out of their nest. He wanted to see how many people from the Blood Race actually came for him.

“Haha, the leader of the Blood-devil Tribe is only a wretch. He's not worth mentioning before our human race's ‘Fierce’!” A human cultivator excitedly shouted after seeing the reversal.

The majority of the Blood disciples had ugly demeanors. They couldn't help but become speechless. They were very excited about the monarch's success earlier, but now, it was just another slap to their faces. Even a sneak attack couldn't kill Li Qiye!

“All of you, come out now or else I'll slowly flay his flesh. I want to see the people in this world hear the pitiful screams of the Blood-devil Tribe's future leader.” Li Qiye held a saber in his hand and gently slapped the monarch's face with it while leisurely smiling.

His voice was not loud, but many people could hear it easily.

Not long after, a group eventually reached the summit. Although their cultivations were suppressed on this mountain, they still emitted an aura that would cause others to tremble.

The spectators were startled after seeing this. Someone murmured after seeing this group dressed in black: “The Blood-devil Tribe came prepared, they didn't try to kill Li Qiye on the spur of the moment.”

Li Qiye looked at them and leisurely said: “Since you are here, take off your masks and be direct. Your tribe shouldn't be acting like rats that don't even dare to show your faces.”

Someone snorted among the dozens of black-clad men. Eventually, they all took off their masks and revealed their faces. Every single one of them was a famous character unafraid of

showing their true identities.

“An ancestor from the Wang Clan, Second Ancestor of the Blood-devil Tribe...” Many people were astonished to see the faces of these old men. They were all famous ancestors of the Blood-devil Tribe. Some of them had been reclusive for a long time, yet they actually came out today!

“Two eternal existences, eight legendary masters, twenty-seven ancestors...” Someone quietly counted the people in this group. After finishing the tally, even the Virtuous Paragons here shuddered.

The Blood-devil Tribe actually sent out this many ancestors to the Godwar Mountain! They were only short of God-Monarchs, but this was still a mobilization of epic proportions.

Even a fool would understand that it was a grand scheme. The tribe had wanted to take Li Qiye’s life long ago!

Chapter 988: Suppression

“It seems like I have kept you all waiting.” Li Qiye glanced at the dozens of gray-haired ancestors and smirked with a relaxed attitude.

These ancestors all harshly stared at him. Without a doubt, they all came from the Blood-devil Tribe with the majority being from the Wang Clan.

“It’s better to get rid of the enmity rather than keeping it alive.” The leader among the ancestors stared at Li Qiye and gravely spoke: “If Daoist Li is willing to let them go, we’ll pretend as if nothing had happened.”

Li Qiye stared at Chi Tianyu and the Skybearing Monarch, who were pinned to the ground, and grinned again.

The monarch was both angry and afraid at this moment. Not even in his wildest dreams would he expect his plan to fail like this. He thought that his assassination would be a definite success. Who knew that Li Qiye would still be alive and well, completely unscathed, even after being pierced by the Godslaying Crossbow?

The monarch simply couldn’t grasp this reality. The crossbow was the Wang Clan’s supreme weapon. He understood its power full well, making this even more difficult to accept.

Chi Tianyu, on the other hand, was lying there quietly without struggling. He seemed to have accepted his fate; he thought that

struggling would be futile, so he chose to give up.

Li Qiye was amused by this scene and spoke: “You are speaking as if you are doing me a huge favor, as if your Blood-devil Tribe acting as if nothing happened is the biggest showing of benevolence in this world.”

Another ancestor spoke in an awe-inspiring manner: “You can think of it like that.” He sneered: “You should be thankful that our tribe won’t pursue your crime for murdering our disciples. Otherwise, there will be no peace for you in the Barren Earth. Even if you run to the edge of the world, our billions of disciples will still tear you into pieces.”

The majority of the cultivators on the other peaks were holding their breaths. Anyone would feel apprehensive when facing so many ancestors from the Blood-devil Tribe.

“No peace in the Barren Earth?” Li Qiye smiled and looked at the ancestors: “Do you know that I have a really bad habit? If others prostrate before me to beg for forgiveness, I will feel soft and forgive them. However, for those who provoke me? There’s no need to think twice, I love to antagonize others the most!”

“If you claim that I will never find solace in the Barren Earth, then very well, I want to see what your tribe is capable of to declare such a threat.” Li Qiye grinned.

With that, he gently flicked his wrist and the Blood-devil Saber looming next to the monarch’s neck flickered.

“No!” The monarch knew what was going to happen in this moment. His frightened soul yelped, but it was all too late. The moment the sound came out of his mouth, his head was already flung up high with blood spraying out.

His eyes were still opened as his head rolled far away on the ground. He died an indignant death for his great ambitions and aspirations were unfulfilled.

“No—” The ancestor in charge shouted as well. He wanted to tell Li Qiye to stop, but it was too late. Everything happened too quickly. Li Qiye took action right after declaring his intention without a care for the many ancestors present.

This scene shocked many people. Some gasped and felt a chill down their spines. Li Qiye still killed the monarch under the pressure of dozens of Blood-devil ancestors. He didn’t even bat an eye — from this, one could easily imagine just how vicious he was.

Someone couldn’t help but murmur: “So fierce, this is the Fiercest! Not giving the ancestors from the Blood-devil Tribe any face in public and killing the Skybearing Monarch... this is only something the [Fiercest](#) would do!”

Fiercest is Li Qiye’s new moniker. They added number one before “Fierce”. This is why Fierce is such a nice choice even though it didn’t completely fit certain English narratives. Fiercest actually makes a good title.

The ancestors present were slightly dumbfounded. They didn’t

think Li Qiye would dare to actually kill the monarch. It was as if he wasn't scared of their threat!

They quickly glanced at each other. The ancestor in charge angrily shouted: "Little animal, you deserve death!" With that, he threw out an item.

Several other ancestors threw out their treasures as well.

"Clank! Clank! Clank!" Eight imperial pikes, seemingly cast from gold, were thrown out and embedded themselves at eight different junctures. They emitted an imperial aura that instantly sealed this area.

Li Qiye's surroundings were instantly locked down. This place had turned into an imperial prison that could trap even godfiends!

"Clank—" A series of metallic rattling appeared. After the seal activated, imperial chains instantly coiled around Li Qiye.

It was way too fast for visual perception. When everyone figured out what happened, they saw Li Qiye's limbs being locked down by these thick chains just like a prisoner.

"A bit interesting." Despite his imprisoned state, Li Qiye did not panic and only smiled while looking at the chains.

"Little animal, we will grind you to dust today and let you taste a fate worse than death!" The Blood-devil ancestors roared. The

dozens of them worked together to attack in unison.

“Boom!” After a heaven-shattering blast, an imperial seal appeared above Li Qiye’s head and carried with it an invincible suppression.

The seal contained the force of countless divine mountains that pressed downward. Even a godfiend would be crushed to a pulp!

“Two imperial weapons!” More than half of the cultivators watching were aghast.

This time, the Blood-devil Tribe came with dozens of ancestors and even two imperial weapons. This kind of lineup could only be described as being overly extravagant!

Someone murmured: “The Blood-devil Tribe wanted to kill Li Qiye from the start.”

With a group that consisted of so many ancestors in addition to two imperial weapons, the plans for this day must have been in the making for many nights.

“Open!” Li Qiye shouted and resisted the imperial seal with his bare hands. Even though these chains were locking his limbs, images of countless hands appeared behind him. These hands carried the sky and myriad worlds and their inhabitants. They aimed to stop the suppressive imperial seal.

Even though all cultivation was limited at the Godwar Mountain, the combined efforts of dozens of ancestors still carried a frightening might.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” Waves of shattering noises resounded. Despite using his Thousand Hands Against The Nine Worlds technique, he still couldn’t stop the imperial seal pressing and crushing down on him. His hands started to shatter one after another.

“Die!” The ancestors roared after seeing Li Qiye still managing to hold on against two imperial weapons. They no longer held anything back and poured all of their blood energy into the weapons.

At this moment, even if they had to waste longevity blood, they still had to kill Li Qiye. Otherwise, there would be no place for their Blood-devil Tribe at the Barren Earth.

The countless hands instantly broke into pieces under the might of two imperial weapons. Even Li Qiye’s wondrous technique couldn’t withstand their might. The imperial seal directly suppressed Li Qiye at this moment.

“Clakkkk—” Right when the seal met his body, crisp sounds of bones breaking were heard by everyone, causing them to shiver.

The spectators in the distance saw Li Qiye being trapped in the imperial prison then being suppressed by the imperial seal. They felt a chill and thought that opposing the Blood-devil Tribe would

end very badly.

An ancestor spoke in a mighty manner: “Little animal, this date next year is your funeral!”

“Is that so? But I believe it will be your funeral.” Despite his bones fragmenting with blood staining his clothes, Li Qiye was still as leisurely as ever. He smiled: “I hope that your children will still be alive on this date next year. Wouldn’t it be a shame if you all won’t have anyone to worship you on this date next year when I destroy your entire tribe?”

“Little animal, still not repenting before death. We’ll finish you off then!” The ancestors were enraged by his retort. They roared once more. Some ancestors directly spewed longevity blood on the weapons. The two empowered weapons became even more radiant.

“Clannkk!” Under the stronger pressure, cracks appeared all around Li Qiye’s body. He was like a broken vase. Just a soft touch would completely break him.

“Yes, just like this.” Li Qiye loudly laughed after his body was crumbling into pieces: “This is more like it. I actually thought that all of you were too old and wouldn’t be able to exert the imperial weapons’ power. Muster all of your strength to take me down!”

The ancestors almost vomited blood from anger. Their cultivation was suppressed so they couldn’t exert thirty percent of the two weapons’ power!

After hearing this provocation, they couldn't tolerate it any longer. A few more ancestors spewed their longevity blood onto the weapons. They swore in their minds that they would smash Li Qiye into a meaty paste.

“Clakkk—” More cracks appeared on Li Qiye's body. His chest was opened and his beating heart was visible.

“Yes, this is the sensation that I like.” He appeared to be enjoying this very much despite the damage.

“What a man, he's still able to laugh on the verge of death!” All the races here were admiring his courage and perseverance under the attack of the two weapons.

Chapter 989: Reversal

The spectators grew nervous while watching this scene. Li Qiye had become a fish on the chopping block in the face of the imprisonment from the two imperial weapons. He wasn't able to fight back at all.

They were startled by the cracks on his body, especially when the creepy bone-cracking sounds appeared. Nevertheless, despite the blood staining his clothes, he still had a smile on his face; it was as if all of this wasn't happening to his body.

“This is Fierce for you, a brave model for men!” Even the Blood cultivators showed respect after seeing his appearance.

“Bah, the Blood-devil Tribe is shameless. Only playing the numbers game and bullying the young with the old!” Meanwhile, the human cultivators spoke bitterly with indignation. Alas, they were powerless to do anything about it.

“Clakk—” At this time, even Li Qiye's forehead had cracked. This was the toughest area of a cultivator. Once this area became exposed, their sea of memories would be destroyed, signaling one's true death.

A human helplessly murmured: “It's over...”

“This is the result of those who oppose our tribe.” A Blood-devil cultivator revealed a cold smirk after seeing the inevitable conclusion.

Many were full of regret while watching this scene, especially the humans. Everyone wanted a monster like Li Qiye to come out to deter the Blood Race. However, before he could accomplish anything big, he had to die an early death here.

At the same time, the other races realized that it was unwise to oppose the Blood-devil Tribe in the southern region. Unless one had a strong enough backing, death would be certain.

“Pa!” When everyone thought that it was time for Li Qiye to die, a clear noise suddenly could be heard.

Something seemed to have been shattered, as if a lock had been forcefully opened.

“This is it!” Li Qiye smiled. His entire body suddenly shifted like a tiger lunging forward.

“Boom!” His blood energy soared to the sky without holding anything back. Its endlessness engulfed everything.

“Boom!” The sweeping blast stopped the suppression from the two imperial weapons. The dozens of ancestors were blown away while vomiting blood.

Such a sudden reversal was unbelievable. No one could believe this blood energy — that was as vast as an ocean — looming over the sky!

Everyone knew people would be suppressed at the Godwar Mountain. However, Li Qiye seemed to be perfectly fine, as if he was unaffected.

“I should be thanking all of you, this saved me a lot of effort.” Li Qiye stood straight up. Despite being completely bathed in blood, his smile was particularly bright.

The seal on his dao foundation left behind by Zhan Xian had been completely unlocked. He no longer needed to train to remove this seal.

“Run!” The shocked ancestors were horrified. They knew that it wasn’t looking good, so all of them turned to run.

“Since you’re already here, just stay.” Li Qiye smiled. With that, his blood energy quaked.

“Boom!” The two imperial weapons were blown flying to the outside.

“No!” The ancestors were astonished and screamed. The two weapons were flying towards them, but they couldn’t prevent the collision.

“Poof! Poof! Poof!” The two weapons instantly struck the dozens of ancestors and the destructive impact turned them into blood. They didn’t even have the chance to scream.

The weapons had their own sentience. After killing these ancestors, they flew out of the Godwar Mountain without hesitation.

“Nice!” Many human cultivators couldn’t help but burst out in celebration from excitement after Li Qiye’s reversal.

As for the Blood-devil cultivators, they were alarmed to say the least. Some even left right away as they no longer dared to stay at the Godwar Mountain.

The place became silent in just a second. The majority of the people here were still in a daze while the Blood Race had very unsightly expressions.

“Is this a second Lin Tiandi?” Someone wondered: “No, stopping imperial weapons with bare hands — this is even more heaven-defying than Lin Tiandi!”

“Feels good to be back.” Li Qiye grinned. His death energy emerged at this time and his wounds instantly closed as if time was reversed.

Li Qiye purposely let the ancestors trap him in order to borrow their power to unlock his sealed dao foundation.

After his previous training, the seal showed signs of weakening. And now, with the help of external forces, it expedited the process

and completed the recovery.

He smiled and withdrew his vast blood energy then stared at Chi Tianyu, who was pinned to the ground: “Now how should I deal with you?”

Chi Tianyu took a deep breath. He took in the current situation and made up his mind: “Every man will meet his end eventually. I have fallen into your hands, so do as you please. If I beg for mercy, then my name isn’t Chi Tianyu!”

He was in despair and no longer cared. The Skybearing Monarch was dead along with the dozens of ancestors. He knew that no one could save him from death right now. Thus, he could freely face his end and was no longer afraid of his own demise.

“If you want to die, so be it, I’ll lend you a hand.” Li Qiye smiled and came closer to Chi Tianyu.

Chi Tianyu was simply lying there without moving or struggling. He was prepared to let Li Qiye do as he pleased.

The Blood experts could only watch in silence after seeing this. Even the Blood-devil Tribe was quiet at this moment. Despite their solidarity, no one took action.

They knew that the group that could put up a real fight was dead. Anyone who would try to save Chi Tianyu would only be wasting their effort in addition to adding one more to the death counter.

“No!” A scream came out. Another person climbed to the summit and stood before Chi Tianyu, refusing to let Li Qiye any closer.

Everyone eventually saw who the person was. It was the Half-moon Princess, one of the five saints.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile after seeing this: “So, you want to save him too? How do you compare to the Skybearing Monarch's group?”

“Half-moon, forget it. You are not his match.” Despite the princess wanting to save him, Chi Tianyu didn't find any hope. Instead, he advised her to leave.

“No, if you want to die, then I'm willing to die together with you.” The princess looked at Chi Tianyu, who was nailed to the ground, with a pair of eyes full of love and determination.

Chi Tianyu was quiet and couldn't respond. He knew that the princess liked him, but the target of his love was not the princess.

“A bit interesting.” Li Qiye glanced at the princess and smiled: “But even if you want to die, I might not kill you. Even though I'm a mass murderer, I won't kill someone for no reason.”

“Trade my life for his!” The princess stared at Li Qiye and spoke: “Let him go and I'll stay. You can do as you please then.”

“No—” Chi Tianyu was bewildered: “Half-moon, leave. You don’t owe me anything. This is my own feud, there’s no need for you to interfere!”

The princess ignored Chi Tianyu and continued to speak to Li Qiye: “You have said before, those who beg might earn your forgiveness! I beg you, let him go. Trade my life for his!” Having said that, she slowly kneeled down before Li Qiye.

“Go, leave now! I don’t need you barging into my business!” Chi Tianyu shouted, but the princess ignored him and continued to prostrate.

The entire mountain was quiet with many eyes watching this scene. Some were moved, some indifferent, and some felt a sense of regret.

Someone murmured: “Such a devoted girl...”

Li Qiye had a smile on his face while he looked at the kneeling princess: “Since you are pleading like this, I would appear to be too heartless if I don’t agree to your request.” With that, he slowly walked towards the princess.

“No! Li Qiye, kill me if you dare!” Chi Tianyu was shocked to see Li Qiye walking towards the princess and shouted: “Li, come over here and kill me, don’t be a coward! A man must bear the consequences of his own actions! My life is right here, come and get it!”

Li Qiye ignored the fella and leisurely smiled after standing in front of the princess: “A life for a life. Very well, I’ll be a good guy for once and help you out. I’ll kill you and let him go! Are you ready? If you aren’t, it isn’t too late to change your mind.”

“No!” Chi Tianyu anxiously screamed at the princess: “Half-moon, run away, escape now!”

However, the princess didn’t budge at all. She quietly knelt there for a bit before turning around to look at Chi Tianyu: “After I die, you should live on. Don’t worry and don’t be sad. As long as you can live happily, I will be satisfied. My death will be without regrets.”

Chi Tianyu quivered on the inside. He didn’t know what else to say to her, so he addressed Li Qiye: “Li Qiye, kill me! I beg you, I am a coward! If you kill me, I’ll even kneel before you!”

Chapter 990: Risking It All For Love

Many people sighed while watching this scene play out. A few even had teary eyes.

A female cultivator's front dress was completely drenched in tears as she murmured: "So touching. If someone in this world was willing to die for me, I would definitely marry him!"

Li Qiye only smiled and shook his head in response to Chi Tianyu's request: "A man cannot break his promise. I said yes to her, so I have to take her life. Don't worry, after killing her, I will let you go, I promise."

"Li Qiye, you are a bastard!" Chi Tianyu had to loudly cry out.

Li Qiye ignored the scream and asked the kneeling princess: "Any last words?"

The princess took a deep breath and stared at Chi Tianyu before speaking from her heart: "Goodbye, you must live a fulfilling life from now on!"

Although she was very reluctant about many matters, she still turned her head and resolutely told Li Qiye: "Do it!" She then closed her eyes.

"Don't..." Chi Tianyu couldn't bear to watch. He turned his head away, not willing to see the princess die to Li Qiye's hands.

The world became still at this passing moment. A second seemed to be an eternity, no one could bear this slow torture.

But after a while, nothing happened. Eventually, the princess opened her eyes and Chi Tianyu turned his head back as well.

They saw Li Qiye still standing there with a leisurely smile.

The princess firmly spoke: “Do it!” She was ready to die and didn’t hold onto any hope. She only wanted Chi Tianyu to live on.

“I am someone with a really bad habit. When others want me to do something, I wouldn’t want to do it even more.” With that, he smiled and casually waved his hand.

“Clank!” The universal law that pinned Chi Tianyu to the ground instantly flew back into his hand.

“Today, I will spare your life. I hope that you won’t let down this girl who is so devoted to you.” He stared at Chi Tianyu who was lying on the ground and grinned before leaving.

Both the princess and Chi Tianyu along with the experts watching in the distance found this development hard to believe. No one expected Li Qiye to spare the two of them like this.

“Oh right.” Li Qiye suddenly turned back and spoke while the

two were still bewildered: “In the future, stay far away from where I am. Provoke me again and I’ll kill you two without showing any mercy!”

He coolly walked away afterward, leaving the two behind in a daze.

After a long time, the princess calmed down and quickly helped Chi Tianyu up: “Let’s get out of here!”

Chi Tianyu didn’t say anything and quietly let the princess prop him up. In an instant, the two of them disappeared into the horizon.

The crowd watched their departure. From then on, no one in this world saw them again. The Half-moon Princess and Chi Tianyu seemed to have disappeared without a trace, as if they no longer existed.

Both the Half-moon Tribe and the Pureblood School were very tight-lipped and never brought up their location.

After killing the monarch’s group, Li Qiye acted as if nothing had happened and continued burying items on the peaks. In a few short days, he went from the Myriad Peaks to the Deca-myriad Peaks. Now, he was heading for the Million Peaks.

After the big commotion, there were significantly fewer Blood cultivators on the Godwar Mountain while the Blood-devil cultivators were nowhere to be found.

Prior to this, the Bloods took more than half of the mountains, but after Li Qiye killed so many ancestors from the tribe, the majority of the Blood Race retreated, and this went double for the Blood-devil Tribe.

At this moment, among the Blood cultivators who stayed behind, both the young geniuses and the old ancestors and even God-Monarchs took the long way around the moment they saw Li Qiye, let alone trying to stop his path.

Nevertheless, many were very curious about him. They saw him climb up one peak after another and found that even Million Peaks wasn't a challenge for him. He still leisurely walked up these high peaks as if he was not subjected to the suppression of the mountain.

The bizarre part was that these Million Peaks didn't give him any fortunes either. There were no discernible changes at the summit. Everyone knew that those who could climb to the top of these peaks were eligible to gain something. However, Li Qiye had been to the top of many, yet there was not a single reaction. Anyone who saw this would be completely astonished.

“Is Li Qiye really cursed then?” Someone who was puzzled couldn't help but murmur after seeing this strange event.

All the cultivators here found his situation to be quite incredible. They continued to watch him bury the items on these Million Peaks. Not a single one of his actions was missed.

Someone nervously asked: “Does he want to climb up the Prime Peak as well?”

Most were waiting for a miracle to happen. They wanted to watch Li Qiye reach the Prime Peak with their own eyes.

“No way.” A cultivator felt that a miracle like this wouldn’t happen: “For millions of years, no one has ever been able to climb the Prime Peak. Even the most brilliant genius wouldn’t be able to do so, let alone Li Qiye. Not long ago, Lin Tiandi failed as well, and Li Qiye is not necessarily stronger than him, so how could he make it up there?”

At this time, Li Qiye finally took the first step towards the Prime Peak. People started palpitating after seeing this first step and became quite tense.

“No way...” The next scene shocked everyone. Some couldn’t help but scream from shock.

They saw the impossible; Li Qiye had entered the Prime Peak. Moreover, he was able to walk towards the summit as well.

“This, this can’t be real...” Someone gasped and didn’t dare to believe their own eyes: “Am, am I dreaming?” They pinched

themselves and felt the sharp pain, realizing that it was not a dream.

Despite feeling incredulous, they knew that this was the reality.

An absent-minded spectator murmured: “It’s a miracle, a miracle of the ages! For countless years, no one has ever been able to climb the Prime Peak, but today, Li Qiye has done it. How shocking, this is enough to shake the eons!”

“Only a genius from our human race would be able to create a miracle like this!” The human cultivators became quite proud and celebrated.

“What is this about Jikong Wudi and Lin Tiandi? They are nothing compared to the Fiercest of our human race!” The young humans were especially proud of this.

Under the watchful gaze of the crowd, Li Qiye continued his ascent. The spectators held their breaths and focused on watching his every move.

However, right when he reached the halfway point of the mountain, his figure suddenly disappeared. He vanished as if he had evaporated from this world.

“What’s going on?” The attentive crowd was stunned. Many began to rub their eyes.

Some opened their heavenly gaze to find traces of him. However, despite their efforts, no one could find him; it seemed that he was no longer in this world.

“What happened?” Someone was completely jolted.

His successful climb was a miracle across all the eons. Many people were eager to watch him reach the summit. They wanted to know the legendary items at the top of this unclimbable peak.

But now, he disappeared into thin air before he could reach the top, leaving many people unable to react in time. There was no precedence to this, so the crowd was completely lost.

Someone murmured: “Perhaps the Prime Peak is different from the others. There are dangers here beyond our imagination.”

This type of sudden disappearance had never happened before at the other peaks on the Godwar Mountain. Thus, without a reference point, the crowd couldn’t come up with an answer.

“Hmph, even Immortal Emperors wouldn’t dare to climb the Prime Peak. Li Qiye is only a junior, he is truly daydreaming if he thinks he can climb to the top of the Prime Peak.” A Blood expert saw his disappearance and sneered. He was happily gloating.

In fact, many Blood cultivators felt a sense of relief. Their Blood Race was feeling pressured when someone as fierce as Li Qiye was in the Barren Earth.

Chapter 991: Mysterious Underground World

Li Qiye disappeared in the blink of an eye and no one knew where he went. He was the only one privy to his current location.

A split moment after disappearing, he emerged at a hidden location. There was nothing here except a stone gate in front of him.

This was the deepest location of the Godwar Mountain. After the final battle, very few people were able to make it here.

This place hid a frightening secret, something coveted by even Immortal Emperors! During the Ancient Ming Era, many of their emperors tried to obtain the items located underground here.

Li Qiye took a deep breath while staring at the stone gate. He slowly pushed it open. Many stone steps were waiting for him beyond the door to take him to the deepest area underground.

No one knew how many steps there were in total. The stairway continued to spiral downward. Li Qiye walked for a very long time before reaching the end. Here, a bottomless abyss was waiting for him.

Looking out from the last step of the stairs, one could only see a vast darkness.

When one stood here quietly, they could hear loud roars accompanied by the auras of primal beasts coming from the abyss. Even the most powerful cultivator would quiver in the face of their aura with chills.

Li Qiye took one step forward into the abyss. Clanking sounds instantly appeared. Intertwining laws appeared below his foot, forming something that resembled a long arrow.

These laws were very simple yet ancient with a faint sheen. Nevertheless, this light still had a soul-crushing power. Even the strongest would be startled before this faint light. Their legs would shake and would no longer be able to stand straight.

It seemed that the arrow below could annihilate gods and devils or even an Immortal Emperor. Li Qiye continued forward on his path. After each step, the mysterious laws beneath his foot would continue to coil together to be his support.

“Raaa!” During his journey, a shadow that carried a frightening evil aura came out of nowhere and rushed forward. It seemed to be a devil set loose from hell. It raised its fangs and claws to come culling towards Li Qiye, aiming to tear him into pieces.

Even a Virtuous Paragon would tremble before this devil’s aura, yet Li Qiye didn’t bother looking at it.

“Plufff!” Before this thing that came out from below could come close, the universal law arrow beneath Li Qiye’s feet instantly shot

it to death.

When the arrow penetrated the devil's huge body, it disappeared like mist without leaving any flesh or blood behind.

“Raarr!” He didn't make it much further before another huge shadow rushed out. It had a ferocious visage that would instill fear into any spectator.

“Just an evil sentiment of the dead, yet you still dare to act so audaciously in front of my Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation? Truly does not know life from death.” More shadows rushed out to kill Li Qiye, but all were put down by the arrow below his feet.

From start to finish, he didn't give these shadows a second glance. In his eyes, he was the ruler of this area. No matter how powerful these evil sentiments trapped in the abyss might be, they couldn't reach the apex before Li Qiye at this moment.

Eventually, he reached the end. Rotating waves of that buzzed caused this space to tremble.

Gigantic wheels emerged and began to slowly rotate while buzzing. There were too many to count. Each of them radiated light while rotating.

If one gazed at this scene for too long, they would become dazzled with dizziness.

These rotating wheels continuously changed locations. Moreover, they all looked exactly the same. Under such a circumstance, no one would be able to distinguish them in a short amount of time.

“Chaotic Wheel of Time, just how many time-continuum have been shattered to create this mess?” Li Qiye emotionally commented while staring at these wheels.

These chaotic wheels were not part of the natural order. This was because, in an ancient era, many heaven-defying existences such as Immortal Emperors had unleashed attacks that pierced through time and shattered its fabric. This eventually gave birth to these chaotic wheels.

Li Qiye stared intensely at these wheels. Because there were so many chaotic temporal distortions here, only one wheel would lead to the right temporal-space. If one took the wrong wheel, they would never be able to return. Even an Immortal Emperor would have a hard time returning.

“Buzz!” Finally, Li Qiye picked a particular wheel. He took action to freeze it before jumping towards it.

“Zzzz—” This Chaotic Wheel of Time instantly sucked Li Qiye inside.

In the blink of an eye, he was taken into a long pathway with a disturbed timeline. It gave off quite a disorderly feel. The entire

pathway was as clear as jade. However, there were many broken locations with terrifying temporal storms. Even a tiny storm of this nature could easily mutilate a Virtuous Paragon.

There were rough cut marks along the way. Moreover, they still emitted an eternal aura. This was the divine might of Immortal Emperors; no matter how much time passes, they still wouldn't dissipate.

“Just how much effort is required to open such a pathway? Even an Immortal Emperor would find this task extremely challenging.” Li Qiye said with a tinge of emotion while walking on this pathway.

This was a jade pathway that led to a different timespace. Countless Immortal Emperors had attempted to create these pathways before finally opening one successfully.

Time did not flow in this place. Even if one kept on walking, the time spent would be no more than the blink of an eye.

Eventually, Li Qiye came out of the pathway. A bronze radiance flooded his vision. To be more exact, it was a sea of bronze.

Gazing ahead, nothing but a huge ocean could be found in this place. However, it was not flowing water but bronze liquid!

One would never be able to imagine this scene! Just how much divine bronze was melted to create this vast sea?

One would feel that the world was still while standing before this ocean. There was no life, not even time. Everything here had stopped.

It was as if this bronze ocean was the end of the world. No matter what kind of existence one might be, there was no way of crossing this ocean. This was the stop of all passengers.

“Bronze ocean...” Li Qiye was dazed by this spectacle. He had many thoughts running through his head at this moment, secrets unknown to the world!

“How many wars and how much blood was spilled to create this ocean...” He eventually calmed down and gently sighed.

He took out a mirror. This was not the Yin Yang Immortal Refining Mirror but a treasure he brought from the Heavenguard Sect. It was a bronze mirror.

It didn't seem too special. If it fell into someone else's hands, they would only think of it as an ordinary bronze mirror.

“Om—” The mirror shot out a light and illuminated the ocean. Once the light reached its target, the unbelievable happened. Wherever the light touched, the water would gradually become clear and eventually turn into clean water.

In this manner, Li Qiye used his mirror to shine a path amidst the

bronze ocean. He slowly walked down this path into the ocean and sank to the bottom.

This bronze ocean was an incredible location. If one entered recklessly, there would be no return. They would forever disappear in this place.

Without Li Qiye's bronze mirror, even an Immortal Emperor would never be able to enter where they wished to go, to the end of this ocean. The powerful emperors could come back alive, but the secrets they coveted on the other side would continue to elude them.

Chapter 992: Bronze Citadel

“Pop!” Li Qiye, who had sunk into the bronze ocean, finally reached the bottom. The moment he made contact, it gave off a unique sense of mind — free from anxiety.

Looking up, one would see a flashing brilliance of a bronze shade on the far horizon. It seemed that the vast bronze ocean was over there.

Looking all around would result in finding a certain citadel. It was gigantic and enough to house millions of people.

Pavilions were packed together with floating temples. The roads were wide and capable of holding ten carriages side to side.

But on a careful look, one would find that many of the buildings inside this city had collapsed. This was not due to the erosion of time but an external force. It appeared that something had happened here; perhaps a war or a natural disaster...

What was even more shocking was that the entire citadel was built with divine bronze.

All the close buildings, wide roads, and majestic walls were made from bronze without exception. This was a world of bronze. It seemed that there was nothing here outside of bronze, not even a pebble!

This bronze citadel was very quiet, giving off a melancholic atmosphere. This sensation was accentuated from the passing of time within these buried bronze structures.

If an outsider could see this now, they would be jolted from astonishment. This was because the city looked exactly the same as the strange images that appeared above the Godwar Mountain a few days ago.

The only difference was that the city ahead was completely quiet. There were no busy pedestrians or the prosperity accompanied by the hustle and bustle of the main streets. All the bronze inhabitants inside the strange images could not be found here.

Li Qiye slowly walked inside this vast citadel. This was not his first time here, so he knew all the ins and outs.

Outside of Li Qiye, there was no other living creature here, making it seem like a city of the dead.

This place was full of mysteries. No one knew where it came from or what it was. The creator of this bronze city was unknown as well...

“An incredible piece of work. Even gods and emperors wouldn’t be able to create this masterpiece!” Li Qiye said with feelings while walking along the silent paths.

In this world, it would be difficult to find someone who knew

about the existence of this city. However, in the distant past, many Immortal Emperors had searched for this city, especially during the Ancient Ming Era. Numerous Ancient Ming emperors tried to trace back to this city and had spent tremendous efforts.

This was because of the secret hidden in this city, a secret everyone wanted to know. Even Li Qiye, as the Dark Crow, thirsted for this ultimate secret.

Eventually, he made it to the highest point. There was a bronze palace in this place — grand and towering.

It seemed to be the dwelling of gods or the rulers of this location!

A sacred air permeated this palace. Although millions of years had passed and many parts in this palace had become tarnished with rust, it still gave off a holy and untouchable air!

“Clankkk—” Li Qiye slowly pushed the heavy bronze gate open to enter.

It was enormous and had many supporting pillars. Each of them had a different engraving that included flying dragons and dancing phoenixes, a war between deities, and a scene of millions of worshipers...

There was no divine throne at the end of the palace as one would come to expect. There was only a big bronze tablet. It had stood strong for countless years. The vicissitudes of time couldn't affect

it at all.

Li Qiye walked up to this tablet. It emitted a faint bronze shimmer, but this light was not what attracted his attention. All of his focus was on the text carved on the tablet.

There were more than ten thousand words. Each word seemed to have their own sentience and was floating on the tablet like swimming fish.

The words were ancient to the point that no one could recognize which era they belonged to.

“Finally coming back to life.” Li Qiye murmured while staring at these ancient words: “This day is long overdue. How many people and emperors had been waiting for such a day?”

The words continued to move without any pattern. Their chaotic nature would leave readers completely confused.

Li Qiye gently rubbed it and smiled: “The legendary bronze runes... how many in this world know of your existence? Not to mention the nine worlds, perhaps there are only a few in that place that can recognize you, let alone being able to read with mastery!”

These archaic words dated back to before the Desolate Era. It was prevalent during the mythical Legendary Era! Not to mention the current nine worlds, few people could read this text even back in the ancient times.

Coincidentally, Li Qiye was one of the people who knew this language. He had spent many years with great effort to learn these words. He traveled to many places along his journey of learning — the blue sky above and the underworld below!

“Omm—” Space suddenly trembled. As Li Qiye moved the words, the tablet exuded an even more dazzling bronze light.

At the same time, the others words became more lively just like carps in a pond that were being fed. Eventually, he finished arranging all of these words into a complete inscription. This caused the palace to light up and emit waves of sad hymns.

The sad hymns would make listeners drown in grief. It painted the image that long ago, a supreme existence had fallen. His billions of citizens were attending his funeral.

This funeral music would put one’s heart at ease and seemed to be retelling the majestic feats of this supreme existence.

“Om—” The firm tablet turned into a bronze door. It was simple without any decorations, but this did not take away from its stately appearance. Others couldn’t help but look at it with reverence.

“Clank—” Li Qiye opened the door and entered without any hesitation.

A boundless starry sky appeared before him. He could only see

the vast space above that contained rivers of stars. It was a beautiful celestial scene in the middle of the night.

However, what stupefied others was that there was a gigantic bronze statue lying among the stars! Anyone would be shocked to see this bronze man.

It was difficult to describe its enormous size with mere words! If this statue was lying down on the southern Barren Earth, then it would occupy more than half of the land!

It quietly lied in this space with its eyes closed as if it had fallen into an eternal slumber. Or perhaps it could have been buried here after death.

No one knew how it was created or if it was once a bronze man with life.

“Endless life yet it still disappeared within the river of time.” Li Qiye murmured while looking at the statue among the stars.

After analyzing the statue, he finally climbed on top of it. He found himself to be walking on top of a vast land of bronze. It was hard to discern this place visually since the bronze shimmer was quite distracting. People would find themselves to be insignificant while traveling on this vast land.

The statue had both of his hands placed on his stomach. It was a very peaceful sleeping pose.

After walking for a very long time, Li Qiye finally reached the stomach, or where the two hands were together. At this place, he found that the hands were holding a bronze box.

The chest was already quite large, but compared to the bronze statue embracing it, it appeared to be incredibly tiny, like a speck of dust!

This bronze box was playing music. One could even feel that it was jumping around, as if it was not a box but a living being.

“Tens of millions of years of waiting, the time is finally right.” Li Qiye felt the rhythm of the box and smiled.

This box was the item coveted by the Ancient Ming and their emperors. However, because time was not on their side, they couldn't retrieve it successfully, not even the peerless Immortal Emperor Tian Tu!

Chapter 993: Visiting The Prime Peak

Li Qiye shouted: “Open!” His yell reverberated across the entire starry sky. He didn’t hold anything back and unleashed all of his blood energy.

His life wheel emerged and poured out a crazy amount of longevity blood. The Yin Yang Sea of Blood erupted in the most tyrannical fashion to deliver an endless torrent of blood.

This amount of blood energy was even more terrifying than an ocean. It whirled around and became tornadoes that swept through the sky.

However, his blood energy alone couldn’t open this bronze box. He activated all of his laws and his thirteen palaces soared to the sky.

At the same time, the vessel of life, vessel of genesis, and vessel of athanasia floated above his head. They released the most powerful force in this world — the life force from countless existences. It was more than enough to supply three thousand worlds for an eternity...

He also summoned one treasure after another: Dao Sword, green lamp, Yin Yang Mirror, small coffin... All of his most powerful weapons were taken out.

He topped it off by opening his mind. One Immortal Emperor soared out after another and took control of the weapons!

Meanwhile, Li Qiye personally used the World Seal and unleashed Heavenly Annihilations strong enough to suppress the nine heavens. What was even more frightening was when Li Qiye attacked with a time-halting annihilation; with a buzz, even the huge stone statue was petrified in its entirety.

As he exerted all of his methods, the entire space trembled. World-ending forces swept through this area, causing stars to explode and illuminate the surroundings.

If there were outsiders here to witness Li Qiye's ultimate suppression, they would be quaking with fear even if they were Godkings. Death was inevitable if they were to be the victim of such an onslaught!

“Open for me!” Li Qiye commanded. His longevity blood reddened the entire area, finally allowing him to move the heaven and earth's myriad dao.

Under this urging from Li Qiye, the bronze statue radiated a blinding light. Runes flew out of the bronze statue. Each of these bronze runes was as immense as a mountain.

“Zzz—” Li Qiye rearranged these runes once more. This was an arduous process that was much easier said than done.

“Clank!” Eventually, he ordered all of them into a dao article that instantly entered the bronze box.

“Ka—” Clanking sounds came out of the box as it slowly floated upward.

“Success!” Li Qiye was ecstatic to see the box beginning to surface. He had waited until this day when he could obtain the box.

“Pop!” The box completely left the bronze statue. Li Qiye instantly put away his treasures and hastily grabbed the box!

“Rumble!” Before he could look at the item inside, the entire bronze statue suddenly shook as if an earthquake was coming.

“Not good...” Li Qiye was startled and instantly turned around to leave without any hesitation. He summoned a treasure and fled with haste.

“Rumble!” Right when he made it out, this space completely collapsed.

In the sky, one star collapsed after another like dumplings falling into a pot. Galaxies were instantly destroyed along with all of their stars...

This scene was extremely shocking, as if the end of the world was approaching. No existence could survive this immense destructive power, regardless of how powerful they might be.

“Boom!” Right when the entire area was about to collapse, the huge bronze statue suddenly shattered the void and instantly disappeared. Who knew where its destination was?

Outside of the Godwar Mountain, many people were full of regrets and pity for Li Qiye, especially the distraught humans. Li Qiye was the Fierce of the human race, the genius with a chance of surpassing Lin Tiandi and Jikong Wudi. However, he died an early death — this was a huge loss to the human race.

The Blood Race naturally did not share the same sentiment after his disappearance. It was a cause for celebration. This was one less problem for them in the future.

“Boom!” As many mixed feelings were in the air, a loud thump came about. A figure slammed into the Prime Peak.

“Look!” This sudden development attracted a lot of attention. Many people took a look and saw someone slamming into the mountain.

A keen-eyed fella clearly saw it and exclaimed with surprise: “It’s Li Qiye...”

Li Qiye looked very downtrodden after slamming into the Prime Peak. Blood stained his robes and his entire body seemed to have been torn apart.

“He’s still alive!” The humans were especially happy to see him.

A great character from the previous generation of the human race excitedly shouted: “Incredible, he managed to come back alive despite the dangers of the Prime Peak. Fierce is indeed fierce, tough to the point where even the old heavens can’t take his life!”

The Blood Race was unhappy to see his return. The majority of their experts didn’t look good anymore as they all had cold expressions.

Li Qiye got up. Despite his terrible appearance, he was still as relaxed as always. Moreover, he obtained a supreme item from that space. These injuries were not worth mentioning!

He patted the mud off his clothes and smiled before looking at the top of the peak. He then continued upward.

The spectators here watched with bated breaths. Their eyes were fixated on Li Qiye. For ages, no one had heard of someone who successfully climbed the Prime Peak. Everyone hoped that a miracle would happen. If Li Qiye could reach the top, then he would be breaking the impossible taboo from the old ages.

It was still a while till the summit, but Li Qiye had a dignified expression. He became cautious. This would come as a shock to those who knew him because very few things warranted such prudence from him.

He suddenly felt a small strand of killing intent. He shuddered and immediately took action but was half a beat too late.

“Xshh!” A red shade appeared in the air. This very weak killing intent instantly shot through his chest, causing his blood to spurt like a rainbow in the sky. It was quite beautiful and shocking.

“Pardon!” Li Qiye ignored his injury and opened his mind. A supreme pardon decree flew out.

“Zzz—” The decree pinned itself to the top of the peak and turned into a universal law that penetrated the muddy ground.

After it drilled into the soil, the weak killing intent finally disappeared. Li Qiye heaved a sigh of relief and channeled his laws and blood energy to treat his wound.

“What was that thing? Why was it so powerful?” No one could see the killing intent. They only saw Li Qiye’s chest being pierced instantly without giving him a chance to resist. This made the spectators quiver!

Everyone had seen Li Qiye’s ferocious power before, but he couldn’t resist at all. Just how terrifying was this?

Li Qiye took a deep breath and slowly stood up. Finally, he reached the summit and disappeared from the public once more.

They could only watch him vanish. No one else could see the situation at the top or what was there.

Even if they flew up all the way to the nine heavens and opened a heavenly gaze capable of illuminating myriad realms, they still wouldn't be able to see the summit. This was because time and space were sealed there, not allowing anyone to spy.

The soil at the top was as red as blood. A terrifying sealing power assaulted him in a blatant manner that would cause anyone to quiver. Even Immortal Emperors would sense a threat coming from underground.

It could be said that the more powerful one was, the stronger the suppressive feeling would be in this place. The frightening part was that this power seemed to be aiming specifically for invincible existences like Immortal Emperors.

If an emperor stood in this place, they would be attacked by the most horrific force in this world, an extremely terrifying curse. This curse, to an emperor, was the most severe and ultimate type of offense!

Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation — after so many years, it was still hidden in this place deep underground. It aimed to destroy all things that belonged to the Ancient Ming in this location!

Back then, Immortal Emperor Long Ming and the strongest forces of the Dark Dragon Dynasty were killed here. After that

final battle, the formation had always presided this location. It wanted to slowly grind out everything the Ancient Ming left here so that they would never be able to recover from the remnants.

After millions of years passed, everything had dissipated. This generation was the time for Li Qiye to take back the Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation because he could still use it in other places.

Chapter 994: Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation

“Zzz—” Li Qiye opened his mind. The most mysterious and frightening universal law in this world came together.

“Clank!” An arrow made from intertwining laws appeared in his hand.

“Pop!” He threw the arrow down into the red soil without any hesitation.

“Buzz!” The arrow was the center and the mystical dao runes were like rippling waves engulfing the entire Godwar Mountain.

“Bumm—” An overwhelming wave of sound emerged. When these mysterious dao runes covered the Godwar Mountain, endless lights rushed out of many of the peaks.

“Just what is going on?” The majority of the experts were all shocked due to the blinding light in the sky.

At this point, war banners soaring in the divine lights with rumbling war drums. A majestic army trampled across the world with an all-engulfing heroic aura. It was a force capable of destroying gods and devils as well as myriad worlds.

The sudden visual phenomenon in the sky caused everyone to

tremble; they dropped straight to the ground with weakened knees.

Those who were watching carefully would find that the peaks that were emitting these lights were all places that Li Qiye had buried items at before.

The images in the divine lights disappeared very quickly. After a pop, the endless light instantly exploded and illuminated the world with a dazzling fireworks show.

The majority of the spectators here didn't know the significance behind this, but the ancient clans in the Holy City were completely immersed in this scene. These reclusive clans understood the meaning behind it.

“The supreme glory of the eons. How many people in this world right now know that in that place, even an Immortal Emperor was crucified to death.” An ancestor in one of the mysterious clans was excited and passionately murmured: “Without His Excellency's protection, there would be no light in the nine worlds! All of the races back then were only the Ancient Ming's slaves.”

As the crowd was still astonished by the sudden change, humming noises came from the summit of the Prime Peak. A silver light rushed out from the ground. It looked like mercury and slowly came together to take form.

In a short period of time, a silver arrow emerged and was stuck in the ground. Meanwhile, the supreme law in the form of an arrow

instantly fused together with this silver arrow.

It emitted a flashing silver brilliance. Each wisp of light instilled a primal fear to all the spectators since these lights were capable of piercing through all things in this world.

Numerous dao runes were carved on this silver arrow. They were highly complicated and profound runes. Even the most brilliant genius wouldn't be able to understand them!

With a closer look, one would find that these dao runes were not actually carved on the arrow and instead were formed via a natural process. Or rather, these runes were the things that this silver arrow was made from.

Li Qiye emotionally commented: "Immortal Emperor Slaughtering Formation! The effort took to cast this thing..." This silver arrow required an unrealistic amount of effort from him and the wisdom of many sages. From one generation to the next, he continuously worked on this arrow by using an immense amount of natural treasures from this world.

It was not just a silver arrow. The things inside were priceless, making it much more valuable than Immortal Emperor True Treasures. Who knew that the supreme formation capable of killing Immortal Emperors was just a silver arrow?

Li Qiye took it out. In this world, he was the only one capable of pulling it out from the ground. He carefully looked at it before finally being at ease. He heaved a long sigh and murmured: "Very

good, the tremendous amount of effort I spent in casting you was not in vain.”

He solemnly put it away. In his eyes, it was of incomparable value. Imperial weapons were nowhere close to it.

“This is...” After putting it away, he noticed something in the red mud and decided to dig it out.

After the soil was dug out, an item showed itself. Li Qiye’s eyes turned serious as he looked at it. After a careful observation, he murmured: “Incredible, their ultimate resources are too frightening. No wonder why the Ancient Ming were so heaven-defying. They truly are the favored children of the heavens; they have too many great items!”

With that, he put this item away as well. He turned back and looked at this location before gently sighing with an indescribable emotion. Too many unbearable memories were created in this place.

In the end, he softly spoke with an untold sadness: “Goodbye...” He decisively walked away without turning back.

Inside the mountain, many glares were on him. When he appeared before the crowd, someone couldn’t help but shout: “He’s coming down, he’s coming down now!”

“Amazing, the title of the greatest genius across all the eons

should belong to Li Qiye. He has broken the taboo, the only person to climb the Prime Peak and come back alive!” Someone loudly applauded. The human cultivators were jumping up and down in celebration.

The few Blood cultivators here were quite unhappy. They did not like the sound of him being the greatest genius across all the eons and responded with loud grunts. However, they didn’t dispute this claim.

“The pride of us humans...” The human experts shouted as Li Qiye walked down from the Prime Peak.

A joyous atmosphere spread across the mountains. Many from the other races were excited to see Li Qiye break the unbreakable taboo. The humans were only short of firing off fireworks to celebrate this occasion.

A large group of cultivators came together, the vast majority being humans. They excitedly yelled at Li Qiye: “Young Master Li, you are too amazing. Winning glory for our human race, you are our pride!”

Another human cultivator quickly added: “Yes, yes, we’ll count on Young Noble Li to revitalize the human race in the Barren Earth!”

In just a moment, many cultivators continuously congratulated him. Li Qiye only smiled in response since he wasn’t interested in the glory of being the pride of the human race!

“Young Noble Li, this is not good.” In the midst of the celebration, a human expert quickly rushed forward to tell Li Qiye a message.

“I just arrived at the Holy City, but the situation isn’t looking optimistic.” He said: “The Storm God has arrived. She captured the disciples from the Suhuang Country and entered the Thunder Tower. She declared that if you don’t surrender in three days, she will kill anyone who is related to you.”

“Storm God!” Many people were shocked to hear this name! The initially lively atmosphere cooled down all of a sudden. It was as if everyone was splashed with a pot of cold water over their heads.

Li Qiye’s eyes turned cold. He didn’t say anything but turned around towards the Holy City.

“This is not good, a bloody battle is about to start.” Many people quickly followed him. Of course, the majority of them only wanted to watch the fun.

“The Storm God is finally here.” A Blood expert saw Li Qiye’s departure and sneered coldly: “Killing Chi Zixian and opposing Crimson Night will not end well for him. Who in the Barren Earth wouldn’t give the Storm God some respect?! Even a Godking would have to back down, let alone a junior!”

The atmosphere of the Holy City was incredibly solemn. The news of the Storm God’s arrival quickly spread, and the cultivators

in the city didn't make a single sound. Many of them even left the city to avoid being caught in the storm.

The Storm God was an embellished title in the eyes of many people. It was more accurate to call her a tyrant. Some even secretly called her a witch!

She had control over the Crimson Night Kingdom, so everyone was quite fearful of her. This was not only due to her authority, what was more important was that her father was Immortal Emperor Chen Xue!

Even though it has been quite some time since the emperor was in this world, many ancestors and ancient lineages in the Barren Earth or even the entire Mortal Emperor World had received his favors and kindness before.

This was especially true for the Blood Race. Many ancient existences that stayed away from the mundane world were once his generals!

As the emperor's daughter, Feng Piaoluo had quite an influence when she wanted to rally supporters, unlike others. Not even Godkings could compare to her in this regard.

According to the legends, when the emperor was still in this world, he entrusted his generals to take care of the Storm God in the future.

Although many of his generals were buried underground and slumbering, their descendants and sects still supported her. Who was to blame for her being the emperor's daughter, an imperial princess that was still alive to this day?!

Despite being known as a Godking, she was definitely not the most powerful existence in the southern region. Nevertheless, other Godkings wouldn't want to provoke her because it was the same as poking a hornet's nest.

To be frank, offending the Storm God was the same as offending the entire Blood Race in the Barren Earth!

Chapter 995: Storm God

The Storm God was someone who was very defensive of her own people on top of having a bad temper and a bossy style. Many people stayed far away from her; this includes some of the ancestors from Crimson Night itself.

Those who dealt with her all had a negative impression of her. Some of these ancestors referred to her privately as a witch as well.

But ultimately, she was still the emperor's daughter. Even those who were annoyed with her couldn't do anything about it.

After entering the Holy City, the first thing the Storm God did was to capture Si Yuanyuan. However, the Thunder Tower Lord did not agree. He had promised Li Qiye and the Bloodbull Godfiend before.

Thus, due to the conflicting words, they immediately fought. The tower lord naturally had a great advantage inside the Thunder Tower. The furious Storm God took out an imperial weapon and trapped the tower lord's group inside the tower.

However, Yi Chuan's group was not so fortunate. They had just left the Godwar Mountain to return to the Holy City but were immediately captured by the Storm God's underlings. The reason was very simple, they were acquaintances of Li Qiye.

“Li brat, listen up. Come admit your crimes in three days at the Thunder Tower or my Crimson Night Kingdom will kill all of your

friends and acquaintances!” After capturing Yi Chuan’s group, she immediately sent out this message.

The whole city was silent after hearing this. Many people glanced at each other, and one ancestor commented: “The witch is here. Tough luck for anyone who makes her angry...”

No one wanted to mess with her. Provoking such an unreasonable person was the same as poking a hornet’s nest. Even if you were in the right, it would still be meaningless in the end!

Of course, the Blood Race was the most excited. Many Blood experts secretly rejoiced. A Blood disciple sneered: “The Storm God is finally here to take care of business. That Li guy dared to kill our disciples so he must be crushed to dust!”

“Li Qiye is here!” Not long after her message was sent out, Li Qiye was spotted in the Holy City.

“He definitely can become the number one genius after climbing the Prime Peak. What a shame that he had offended the Storm God prior.” An ancestor of a different race saw him walking into the city alone and lamented with a sigh.

“The Storm God might not kill him!” A human expert said: “Even if she is strong, there is still a limit. Li Qiye is so heaven-defying and devilish that I feel he has a chance to reverse the tide.”

The humans didn’t wish for Li Qiye to die in the Storm God’s

hands. Plus, they wanted to see him reach the peak and bring glory to the human race in the southern region!

“The Storm God is definitely unkillable. Don’t forget, she is Immortal Emperor Chen Xue’s daughter. Although she had been sealed for countless ages, people do say that she has her father’s protection. Outside of emperors, no one in this world can kill her.” An ancestor who knew more about the Storm God spoke with frustration.

“The Storm God didn’t come alone either, a few Blood ancestors followed her.” A knowledgeable person spoke: “Li Qiye is not only facing the Storm God, he is facing the entire Blood-devil Tribe and perhaps even all of the Blood Race.”

“Maybe we can go find the ancient clans in the Holy City.” Many humans didn’t want a direct confrontation between Li Qiye and the Storm God to take place: “If the ancient clans here come out, maybe they will be able to resolve this conflict!”

Many people were skeptical of this proposal. The ancient clans were not so accessible. Those who had the ability to meet them were not necessarily willing to talk to them for Li Qiye’s sake.

Under the watchful eyes of many people, Li Qiye entered Crimson Night’s branch in the city. His last visit ended with a bloodbath. Today, he came again, so everyone wanted to see how this storm would end.

Excitement was at its peak. No one dared to even breathe out

loud while watching Li Qiye make his entrance.

The first thing one would see after entering Crimson Night's branch was the Thunder Tower. At this moment, it was sealed by an imperial decree.

This piece of paper emitted a vast imperial energy with words as immense as Mt.Tai; it had the ability to suppress gods and devils!

Anyone would understand after seeing this decree that if it was pressing down on them, they wouldn't be able to move no matter how powerful they might be!

It was left behind by Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, a decree capable of commanding the nine worlds and suppressing myriad realms! It was a one-time use emperor's possession. If it wasn't for the heaven-defying nature of the Thunder Tower, the Storm God wouldn't have used it!

There was an old woman sitting on an imperial throne in front of the Thunder Tower. Her hair was already white and many wrinkles decorated her face. However, her eyes were especially cold and sharp like an owl. People's hair would stand on end if they were stared at by this pair of eyes.

She was the Storm God, the most headache-inducing character in the Barren Earth.

Yi Chuan, A'Li, and the others were imprisoned on the side. They

were kneeling on the ground and couldn't move at all.

“Good, you have finally come to admit your crimes.” The Storm God sat imperiously on her throne and smiled coldly.

Everyone couldn't wait to see how Li Qiye would react to this overbearing tyrant!

“Admit my crimes?” Li Qiye smiled and glanced at her: “Who says I'm here to do so?”

“Really?” The Storm God said with a sneer: “Junior, I can still let you go even if you don't admit your crimes! However, from now on, I will kill anyone who is even remotely connected to you! For example, the Pure Lotus School! As long as I give the order, my Blood Race will completely massacre the school within three days!”

“Haha, you can go now.” The Storm God smiled deviously: “I'll kill them first to show you that we are serious!” She pointed at Yi Chuan's group.

She continued on: “I'll keep you alive, but you will never find peace again. Make a friend and I shall kill them. In the next thousands of years, my Blood Race will murder all of your children and descendants so that you will never have peace!”

Her insidious smile creeped many people out. The contents of her words were even scarier!

No one doubted what she was capable of. It could even be said that she didn't need to dirty her own hands. A single command would be enough to rally many Bloods and carry out her will!

LI Qiye couldn't help but smile while staring at her: "Go? I haven't thought about leaving. Since I'm already here, I might as well slaughter every single one of you as well as any Blood who wishes to oppose me and challenge my authority!"

"Hahahaha, such a big tone!" The Storm God smiled insidiously: "Junior, I don't need to take action to kill an ant like you. Watch, I just need to give the order and you shall be destroyed!" With that, she gently clapped her hands.

More than thirty old men with gray hair instantly appeared from the left and right sides. Even though their blood energies were withered, they still emitted the aura of Virtuous Paragons that made many people tremble. These were not regular ancestors but top-level paragons, including legendary masters and eternal existences!

"Saber Emperor School, Blood-devil Tribe, Wang Clan..." A few big shots recognized these ancestors' identities and quivered in fear!

There were actually very few Crimson Night ancestors here. The majority of them came from the Blood-devil Tribe!

Such a lineup was quite intimidating. With just one word from the Storm God, the ancestors from these great powers immediately

came to help her. Her ability to rally strength was truly frightening.

“Leave if you want, I won’t keep you here.” The Storm God sneered: “Like I said, no confession, no peace for the rest of your life.”

“You think they alone can protect you?” Li Qiye smirked after glancing at the ancestors on both sides.

The Storm God stared him down and snorted: “Junior, I know you have some incredible means! However, without the Thunder Tower, you will still die even if you were a Godking!”

Li Qiye smiled in response: “Feng Piaoluo, after so many years, you still haven’t changed at all. You’re still a vixen, ignorant and stupid. You didn’t inherit even one percent of your father’s wisdom. People say a dragon will give birth to a dragon and a phoenix begets a phoenix...”

“... I can only say that it is such a shame for Immortal Emperor Chen Xue. He was a wise emperor of a generation, yet he gave birth to you, a daughter stupid beyond remedy! He used heaven-defying means to rebuild your constitution, but you are so stupid that you can only barely reach the God-Monarch level. What’s even more laughable is that you run around claiming to be a Godking. Wow, if a pig can eat the wondrous natural supplements of this world for daily meals, then it can become a God-Monarch too!”

He shook his head at this moment: “Fine, a congenital case of

stupidity is still forgivable. After all, not everyone is born a genius, it's just that there is no cure for you! You still think that this is still the generation when your father rules the world and so you keep on acting like a princess. Look around you, who is still following you now? Only a bunch of worthless nobodies...”

“... If you weren't so helplessly stupid, then all of the generals left behind by your father would be willing to stay and pledge loyalty to you. But alas, all of them made excuses to live reclusively, not one was willing to follow you. What a failure of an imperial princess you must be to make even the loyal generals of your father stay far away from you despite the kindness shown to them! There is no saving you.” At this point, Li Qiye looked at the Storm God with pity.

Chapter 996: Blood Devouring Curse

Li Qiye's mockery left the Storm God with an extremely ugly expression. She was shaking with anger and could only point at Li Qiye.

The cultivators standing far away all glanced at each other as well. For millions of years, no one dared to say something like this to her, but now, Li Qiye publicly mocked her. This was truly astonishing.

"That felt good!" A few ancestors secretly cheered. Those who had talked to her before were applauding. They couldn't stand her either, but out of fear for her power, they didn't dare to complain.

But now, Li Qiye's unrestrained derision left them feeling great. It was truly too fun.

"Lit-little animal!" She was about to explode from anger. Even her finger pointing at him was shaking up and down.

"Little animal, I actually wanted to let you live today, but I have changed my mind!" The Storm God pointed at him and snapped: "I want to strip your skin, crush you, and taste your flesh and blood!"

"Okay, stop swearing like a vixen." Li Qiye interrupted her with a wave: "If you let them go and apologize this instant, then I can spare your life out of consideration for your father. Otherwise, even if you have his protection, I will still nail you to a wall!"

“Capture him!” The Storm God commanded the thirty paragons standing to her sides.

Li Qiye smiled at them and said: “Very well, I also want to see what you all are capable of.” He took one step forward.

The thirty ancestors grimaced after being looked down upon like this. They scowled and instantly surrounded Li Qiye.

Considering their status, more than thirty of them fighting together was simply bullying with numbers. It was even tarnishing their reputation. However, Li Qiye was too contemptuous this time and shamed them publicly. Without taking Li Qiye down and torturing him, they wouldn’t be able to vent their rage.

“Boom!” Li Qiye’s blood energy was released. A tyrannical force like a True Dragon soared to the sky and loomed over its enemies with a bullying momentum.

“Do it.” Li Qiye was in high spirits and seemed to be in complete control with his domineering presence. He looked like a completely different person at this point.

“This is it, the genius of our human race, an extraordinary Virtuous Paragon.” The human experts couldn’t help but applaud after seeing his mighty appearance!

A Blood-devil ancestor shouted: “You court death!” More than

thirty of them attacked at the same time. Some raised their hands while others slammed them down to form various mudras. Magical runes emerged and sealed the location.

“Buzz!” A bloody shade engulfed the entire branch. A huge array appeared above the ground with horizontal lines intertwining to form the surface. Profound runes rose from this array. Both the lines and the runes were covered in a bloody shimmer as if they were drowned in blood.

At the same time, the thirty ancestors suddenly turned bright red. It looked like they had been soaked in a blood pond.

A terrifying matter occurred at this time. With loud rumbles, Li Qiye’s blood energy in the sky was no longer under his control. The paragons crazily devoured his blood energy.

“Blood Devouring Curse!” Even an ancestor from the Blood Race exclaimed in fear after seeing this.

“Rumble!” The blood energy no longer under Li Qiye’s control was like a flood that had broken the dam. The energy frantically flew towards the ancestors!

Meanwhile, the ancestors swallowed this energy and seemed to be wanting to turn it into their own.

“Blood Devouring Curse...” Both Blood ancestors and big shots from the other races all gasped after hearing its name.

Another Blood ancestor was even more aghast as he murmured: “They’re going all out by starting with this curse immediately. This is one of the defining techniques from the Blood-devil Tribe. Moreover, there are talks that no single lineage could do this alone. Only the combined effort of two or three would be able to create a complete version.”

“Little animal, even if you were a Godking, we would still drain you of your blood and turn you into a cripple!” The Storm God let out an awe-inspiring laughter: “Today, not to mention you, even three or five Godkings would die under the Blood Devouring Curse!”

“It seems like the Storm God came prepared. She didn’t only summon enough ancestors from the tribe to support this curse, she also found people in the branch to prepare it. Anyone who enters the branch would fall into an inescapable net and become a fish on the chopping block, powerless to resist.” An ancestor said with fear.

The Blood Devouring Curse was an extremely powerful curse formation. Legend states that it came from the Blood Primal Ground; it was ancient and eternal. Once trapped in this formation, the enemy would be powerless and be drained of all their blood energy. Eventually, they would turn into weak mortals. Even if their dao foundation was still there, without blood energy fueling it, it was the same as a fish stuck on land.

In the blink of an eye, Li Qiye’s blood energy had been drained. He was completely pale and couldn’t even stand straight. His legs

kept on quivering as if he could flop over at any moment.

“So scary.” The spectators trembled after seeing Li Qiye’s weakened state.

“Dying at the prime of one’s life — this is too saddening.” Seeing Li Qiye in such a sad state left the humans and experts from the other races extremely tense.

Meanwhile, the Blood Race was laughing and some spoke in a chilling manner: “There is no good end for those who oppose our Blood Race. We will kill anyone who murders members of our Blood Race no matter what!”

The human experts could only stay quiet at this point. They understood just how powerful this formation was. Even unfathomable Godkings would be helpless once trapped inside. No one wanted to risk their lives to save Li Qiye.

“Little animal, we won’t kill you so fast.” A Blood-devil ancestor smirked: “We’ll flay you slowly to have revenge for my Saber Emperor disciples!”

However, despite being terribly pale and trembling, Li Qiye was still smiling leisurely: “Do you know anything about fishing? If one wants to catch a big fish, the line has to be long. Now that the big fish has swallowed the bait, it is time for me to reel in the line.”

With that, his fate palace opened. The cauldron of life emerged

along with an engulfing flame. The Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter carved on his cauldron began to light up in a blinding fashion.

“Buzz!” At this second, Li Qiye's body also became immersed in a bloody light. The entire Blood Devouring Curse was under his control.

“Impossible...” The more than thirty ancestors here felt that they were losing control of the formation and shouted in dismay.

“Clank!” A crimson light soared from his body with the sound of something being unlocked. A huge lock appeared on his chest with refined flames floating around it.

“Zzz—” A searing noise appeared along with a pungent smell permeating through the air.

“No...” The ancestors all screamed in despair because their bodies caught on fire! A terrifying extremely refined sunfire incinerated them from inside out, rendering them to ashes.

This all happened too quickly. It didn't matter that they were eternal existences, they still couldn't stop the refined sunfire from burning their flesh!

Next, one could hear clanking noises. From their ashes rose strands of refined sunfire as red as blood. These fire strands quickly entered Li Qiye's body, allowing his blood energy to recover and his complexion to return to normal.

It all happened too fast. No one could react in time. He instantly took control of the Blood Devouring Curse and incinerated more than thirty ancestors while reclaiming his lost blood energy.

At this very second, many people were stunned and couldn't regain their wits.

Heavenly Dao's Primal Chapter and the Nine Sun Locking Heaven Law — these two supreme techniques immediately defeated the curse!

The curse came from the primal ground, but the primal chapter was the source of all Blood merit laws. It was simple to imagine that all laws from the race would be under its control, thus his takeover of the curse was all too easy.

The Blood-devil ancestors that swallowed Li Qiye's blood energy were courting death as well. The Nine Sun Locking Heaven Law was the founding art in this regard! His blood energy was only the bait. It immediately turned into a fire law once it entered their bodies and refined their own blood energy while stealing all of their essences.

“Although their blood energy is weak, they are still paragons, I suppose it is still a bit nutritious.” Li Qiye clicked his tongue as if he was tasting a meal before revealing a smile.

This scene made everyone shiver.

“What evil art did you use?!” The shocked Storm God returned from her daze and stared intensely at Li Qiye.

Chapter 997: The Treasure Inside The Little Golden Coffin

“Evil art?” Li Qiye stared at her and shook his head while laughing: “Feng Piaoluo, you are just throwing away all of your father’s prestige. As an imperial princess, your knowledge is so shallow. Frankly, you would really have nothing if you weren’t Immortal Emperor Chen Xue’s daughter; you’re even lesser than the most vulgar village girl in this world.”

“Little animal, die!” The Storm God shouted and instantly lunged towards Li Qiye. Her speed was unbelievable. She used a destructive emperor law right away as she attacked with the momentum of a ferocious dragon! Only annihilation awaited those who stood before her!

Despite being foolish, the Storm God was still a God-Monarch. Once she attacked, the stars were shaken while the sun and moon lost their brilliance. Her God-Monarch’s momentum rampaged everything.

“She’s still a God-Monarch after all!” Her aggressive and dominating style left people in awe. Even ancestors who were unhappy with her had to admit that she had the power to be so imperious!

“Buzz!” She aimed to crush Li Qiye and was only inches away from him in the blink of an eye. Suddenly, space suddenly quaked.

Time seemed to have stopped in this split second, or at least

became as slow as a snail. Everything else slowed down as well.

Stagnation Domain — Li Qiye had activated this domain without any delay. Within this realm, he was the sole sovereign.

Anyone would be under its suppression. Even the fastest speed would become extremely slow, and this applied to time as well. At the same time, an immense weight would press down on them.

Thus, everything moved at a snail's pace after entering the Stagnation Domain as if three thousand worlds were pressing down on whatever entered the perimeter. The passing of one second would feel like a year!

“Pop!” Even the Storm God couldn't break through this domain. Under this absolute suppression, Li Qiye punched her down to the ground and a little something more until her blood sprayed.

He grabbed her hair and more banging sounds resounded as he ruthlessly slammed her up and down without any mercy. Her blood began to paint the ground red.

This scene shocked countless people. In just a second, the spectators' eyes fell to the ground while watching this impossible spectacle play out.

Just how high was the Storm God's status in the Barren Earth? People and ghosts alike would be afraid of her. But now, Li Qiye was grabbing her by the hair and slamming her down to the

ground as if she was an insect.

“Isn’t, isn’t this too domineering...” A person murmured absentmindedly.

Others were without words and couldn’t speak at all. Domineering was no longer enough to describe Li Qiye. Fiercest — this was the only title suitable for him!

“Xsh!” Blood spurted everywhere. Eventually, she managed to escape from his hands. Being a monarch, she knew many different emperor laws! She activated a heaven-defying escape technique and ran to the side.

Alas, the price she paid was her scalp being ripped off. At this moment, she was drenched in blood. The blood dripping down her face was hideously scary!

“Boom!” Imperial auras surged. One weapon flew out after another. In the blink of an eye, five imperial weapons emerged around her as protection, creating a supreme atmosphere.

Earlier, she had underestimated her enemy too much. She thought that as a God-Monarch, she wouldn’t lose after a single exchange, but it actually happened! Thus, she now summoned five weapons for defensive measures!

As a daughter of an emperor, she most likely had more imperial weapons than anyone else. No one else besides her was more

qualified to inherit Immortal Emperor Chen Xue's imperial weapons in Crimson Night.

The majority of the cultivators and even some ancestors became quite jealous and filled with greed. Her tyrannical nature was not without reason. She had more treasures than anyone else, an absolute advantage in terms of resources!

“Feng Piaoluo, I thought too highly of you.” Li Qiye casually threw away her scalp and shook his head: “I was flattering you too much when I said that you have barely reached God-Monarch. From the looks of it right now, your limit is at the door of the God-Monarch realm. As an imperial princess, if you were virtuous, then the people of this world would have respected you. Unfortunately, you lack this characteristic and are even dictatorial and unreasonable. You are simply courting death.”

Even the Blood ancestors didn't dare to let out a fart at this moment due to the tense atmosphere. Li Qiye's victorious exchange over the Storm God was truly too overbearing!

The Storm God was furious from his incessant taunting. She crazily shouted: “Little animal, I'll kill them all, then you will be next!”

With that, she went over to kill Yi Chuan's group. They were helpless prisoners at this moment, so they couldn't resist the oncoming imperial weapon. They could only sit there and watch.

“Boom!” However, the weapon was stopped before it could slash

Yi Chuan's group. An old man stopped the attack from the Storm God.

He had a friendly face and wore a paper hat. At a first glance, there didn't seem to be anything special about him. It could even be said that no one here recognized the old man's identity.

It was Arcane Guru. After stopping the Storm God, he still seemed quite at ease as if nothing had happened.

The Storm God immediately shouted after seeing the old man that stopped her: "Who are you!"

The guru took off his hat and saluted before slowly speaking: "Storm God, I'm just someone who can't reach the apex, but you, as an imperial princess, you ought to be aware of your conducts and not shame Immortal Emperor Chen Xue's prestige."

"Scram!" The Storm God attacked with her weapon. The strike swept through the sky, but the guru leaped up as well. He casually repelled it with a flip of his palm, causing it to fly straight into the sky. Meanwhile, he glided upward and looked down on the Storm God: "If you want to fight, I can keep you company, there's no need for Young Noble Li to take action."

As the imperial princess, she had always been the person looking down on others; no one dared to look down on her like how the guru was looking down from above. This made her livid. She leaped into the sky as well and screamed: "Ignorant fool, I'll kill you first before taking care of that little bastard then!"

With that, she grabbed onto an Immortal Emperor True Treasure and instantly attacked the guru in the sky.

The guru was as agile as a dancing crane in the nine heavens. He used an unbelievable stepping technique to dodge her true weapon and countered with his bare hands.

“Boom!” He made contact, but it couldn’t hurt the Storm God due to the five weapons protecting her. It was impossible to touch her without a weapon.

“Die!” She swung her true treasure and shattered the void. She aggressively went at the guru in a tyrannical fashion like a mad dragon. Her appearance at this moment was exactly like a vixen.

The true weapon in her hand exerted even more power. It resonated across the sky and suppressed myriad laws in an incredible fashion. Despite her low cultivation relative to her background, she was still her father’s daughter. Because of this, his weapons were extremely powerful in her hands!

However, Arcane Guru was mysterious and amazing as well. He danced in the sky using a profound stepping technique and dodged the true weapon’s onslaught time and time again.

The crowd marveled at this scene. No one knew who this friendly looking old man was, but he was moving freely under the attacks of a true weapon. His extraordinary style had to be commended.

“Fool.” Li Qiye only shook his head while looking at the Storm God acting like a human-shaped [T-rex](#) and no longer wanted to judge her.

She was hotheaded and narrow-minded on top of being imperious without paying any heed for consultation. If she wasn't an emperor's daughter, she would have died countless times already.

Li Qiye walked forward and flicked his finger. “Bang!” The shackles on Yi Chuan's group instantly shattered. After he dispelled the seals on their bodies as well, they quickly stood up.

Li Qiye smiled and told Yi Chuan: “It seems like I have involved all of you this time.”

Yi Chuan wryly smiled back and shook his head: “That's too much, Young Noble. People in jianghu are always at the risk of violence and death. [A cultivator wouldn't be a cultivator if they were without enemies.](#)”

“That's a good state of mind.” Li Qiye smiled and slowly sat on the throne. He looked at the sky and said: “Arcane, why are you playing around? Imperial weapons are powerful, but this also depends on their user! Don't forget, you have that item in your possession.”

The guru didn't hesitate any longer: “Go...” He opened a small golden coffin. With some clanking sounds, six bronze coins few out

from the coffin.

Initially, the six coins weren't anything special. However, once they got close to the imperial weapons, the Storm God lost control of the five protecting her as well as the true treasure in her hand.

“Buzz—” The five protecting weapons suddenly flew away, followed by the true treasure.

It is actually the word for Tyrannosaurus Rex. This was feeling very out of place in a Xianxia so I've been using furious dragon for it, but this particular passage just fits T-rex so much.

Most xianxia/wuxia readers should know what jianghu is, but this is the term for a sub-culture in China, popularized during the Song and Yuan dynasties. Usually, the ruling governments stayed away from dealing with jianghu's matters and vice versa. Bards and novelists began using the term jianghu to create a literature of a fictional society of adventurers and rebels who lived not by existing societal laws, but by their own moral principles.

Chapter 998: Immortal Emperor Chen Xue's Sentiment

“Rumble—” Something incredible happened after a series of rumbling noises. The six weapons actually flew away to chase the six bronze coins all the way out into space!

This was a very bizarre scene. If these imperial weapons were servants, then the coins were the mock ceremonial ingots. The moment they saw the money flying away, the servants had no choice but to give immediate chase.

Everyone knew that imperial weapons had seals on them. Before unlocking them, no one could steal these weapons. But now, even the daughter of an emperor couldn't control her father's six weapons and could only watch them follow the bronze coins into space.

“Boom!” The entire Holy City quaked. Without imperial weapons, the Storm God couldn't compare to the Arcane Guru at all.

The guru chopped downward with both hands and whacked the Storm God down from the sky, causing her to slam into the ground. The result was a huge crater with traces of her blood everywhere. Who knows how many bones in her body had been shattered?

“I am someone who has always been respectful towards Immortal Emperors. It is a shame that you are incomparably

ignorant.” The guru shook his head and sighed softly.

The entire city — including the Blood experts — became quiet. However, it was likely that very few people were feeling bad for the Storm God. Perhaps it was a different story for the younger generation of the Blood Race, but those from the previous generation did not like her.

“Boom!” In the blink of an eye, an eternal imperial aura rose! The Storm God stood up and behind her was a majestic figure!

This stalwart shadow behind her had a profound pair of eyes, capable of illuminating all ages. It was fixated on her, showing that the shadow would always protect her no matter how many years go by.

Someone couldn't help but shout: “Immortal Emperor Chen Xue!” The Blood disciples became even more excited.

“Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, one of the rulers of the Blood Race!” Some Blood experts couldn't help but kneel.

The figure gently reached out and, with a buzz, the Immortal Emperor True Treasure that was led into space by the coins flew back into his hand.

“Boom!” An endless aura erupted from the true treasure. Every strand of this aura could cut down the stars in the sky and tear apart the fabric of space!

The whole world trembled instantly; many in the city prostrated. Some experts couldn't stand straight even without being subjected to the suppression. They simply wanted to worship this true imperial aura.

An emperor controlling his own true treasure was a terrifying matter. Even though this was not a real emperor, it was still enough to cause God-Monarchs to bow!

The Storm God cried out: "Die!" The true weapon engulfed the nine heavens and unleashed a spatial attack directly towards the guru.

Arcane Guru was astonished. He opened his golden coffin completely and many coins flew out. They joined together to form a gigantic bronze city in order to stop the attack from the true treasure.

"Boom!" However, even this city couldn't stop its power. It broke down entirely; the city and the guru were blown into space. His blood stained the blue sky.

This strike was truly overbearing. Even a Godking might quiver after seeing this attack. Although it was not a Heavenly Annihilation, it could easily kill a God-Monarch.

After blowing the guru away, the Storm God turned around with haste and glared at Li Qiye before yelling: "No one has ever dared to act presumptuously before me, not even Godkings!"

She has now become hysterical. As an imperial princess, she had always been imperious, so the events today marked the biggest humiliation of her life!

Her hysterical shouting left many people trembling with fear, including ancestors. They were afraid that her fury might sweep by without discrimination and harm them in the process.

This hated witch was still an emperor's daughter after all. She still had her father's protection, allowing her to dominate all others — this was what many people dreaded the most.

Li Qiye couldn't help but smile after seeing this. He slowly stood up and leisurely said: "What a shame, you could have left today with your life, but it seems like death is the only path for you now."

"Little animal, keep on blustering. I will capture you today and flay your skin, tear off your tendons, and drink your blood!" She screamed while taking small strides towards Li Qiye. She was certain of victory and was not afraid even if Godkings were to come.

Everyone held their breaths at this moment. Even the human experts who wanted to side with Li Qiye turned silent. Virtuous Paragons were only insects in the face of such an imperial aura.

Li Qiye didn't bother looking at the approaching Storm God. He glanced at the majestic figure behind her and smiled: "Immortal

Emperor Chen Xue, unfortunately, you are no longer in this world. You're only a strand of sentiment!"

"So what if it is only a sentiment, it can still crush you like an ant!" The Storm God laughed hysterically and then reached for Li Qiye.

At this time, it was no longer her hand but an imperial hand. Even the universe would not be able to escape his grasp; it could only be torn asunder.

Li Qiye was still smiling as the imperial hand was coming down. He took out a silver arrow to meet it head-on.

Even the majestic figure was shocked. It used an unbelievable speed to create a gap with Li Qiye!

The Storm God didn't know what was going on and immediately shouted: "What's the matter? Kill him!"

However, the figure quickly formed a mudra and sealed the Storm God so that she couldn't let out another word. Its profound eyes continued to stare at Li Qiye.

"Even though you are not a real emperor, I don't really mind destroying you." Li Qiye chuckled and pointed his silver arrow right at the figure before sighing: "Just how long ago was the legend involving the killing of an Immortal Emperor now?"

Such words frightened many people. They knew that the being protecting the Storm God was not a real emperor, it was only a strand of sentiment left behind by Immortal Emperor Chen Xue. However, this sentiment was still quite terrifying. Even a Godking wouldn't boast about killing it.

But now, Li Qiye's tone towards the sentiment was simply too aggressive and overbearing.

The majestic figure was deep in thought. Its brilliance pulsed from white to black. Others might not know what the silver arrow in Li Qiye's hand was, but as a sentiment of an emperor, it felt the soul-threatening deterrence from the arrow! He knew what it was! At the same time, he also knew who Li Qiye was!

"My daughter was ignorant and has offended Your Excellency." The majestic figure was actually able to speak: "Here is an item, a token of apology to Your Excellency in order to redeem my daughter's life!"

This shocked the entire city. This was an emperor's sentiment, but it was actually conceding. How incredible was this sight to behold?

An item fell into Li Qiye's hand. He opened it for a look before looking back at the figure and gently sighed: "Immortal Emperor Chen Xue, you truly have spent countless efforts on your daughter. It has to be said that the love of a father is as grand as a mountain."

A sentiment capable of speech was not an ordinary sentiment.

One could easily imagine that the emperor used heaven-defying means on his daughter. Moreover, he traded a supreme item for her life as well!

The figure stopped talking. It gazed at Li Qiye, awaiting an answer.

“Out of consideration for the fact that you participated in that war, I can spare her life. However, punishment must be carried out!” Li Qiye slowly answered and threw out his silver arrow!

“No!” The Storm God shrilly screamed but was powerless to resist. The arrow pierced her skull and actually pinned her in the sky.

The majestic figure pulled out the extremely feeble soul from her body. Her dao foundation was destroyed and only this weak soul was left. Even if she could survive, she had become an old woman without any power.

“Remember, don’t let me see her again. Otherwise, even if you refined the stars in the sky into treasures, they still wouldn’t be able to redeem her life a second time!” Li Qiye uttered.

The figure did not speak again. It immediately left with the Storm God’s dying soul. From then on, no one saw the Storm God again. She disappeared from this world without a trace!

Her body was still nailed up high in the sky. Anyone would be

stunned before this scene. She ultimately couldn't escape this fate despite receiving her father's protection!

No one dared to make noise in the city at this moment. They quivered while looking at her crucified body! They would be unable to forget this scene for the rest of their lives.

Chapter 999: Mysterious Youth

Li Qiye recalled the silver arrow. With a pop, the Storm God's body fell to the ground, silencing the entire city!

He sat on the imperial throne and glanced at the crowd then the entire city before slowly uttering: "Anyone else dissatisfied or have some comments to say about me?"

It was so quiet that one could hear a needle drop. Many people held their breaths; even the Blood ancestors didn't dare to say a single word.

"Very good." Li Qiye stood up and calmly said: "If anyone has grudges against me or find that I am unpleasing to the eyes, both one on one or group fights are fine, I will gladly accept the challenge. However, if they involve the people around me with their feud, then wait for a sect-destroying disaster!"

"Tell the Blood-devil Tribe that I am a merciful person and will give them one day to prepare. I will personally go after one day and destroy their sects and ancestral grounds. This is the result of those who maneuver against my people." His voice was not loud, yet everyone in the city heard him clearly.

In the past, someone would have mocked Li Qiye. The Blood Race was the sun at noon with geniuses appearing one after another, especially within the Blood-devil Tribe. Their solidarity was unrivaled. No one would dare to oppose them, let alone talk about stomping their lineages!

Today, Li Qiye dared to utter such words, but the Blood-devil ancestors here didn't have the guts to retort! He wasn't even afraid of an emperor's sentiment — just how heaven-defying was he?!

“Boom!” Eventually, Li Qiye opened the imperial decree and casually threw it to the ground like a piece of trash.

Yi Chuan was quite smart; he noticed and quickly picked it up. Even though this imperial decree no longer had any power, it was still a great treasure to a small country like Suhuang.

“Young Noble Li...” The Thunder Tower Lord, who had been trapped in the tower, quickly bowed after seeing Li Qiye and apologized: “It is my Crimson Night's fault for all this to happen, please forgive us.”

Li Qiye remained seated on the throne and looked at the tower lord. He gently shook his head: “To tell the truth, I'm very disappointed. Someone of your realm can't even take out an imperial weapon, this is quite embarrassing for an ancestor.”

Such words left the tower lord feeling awkward. He didn't know how to respond and could only smile wryly: “Well... the Storm God had full control of the kingdom. Old geezers like us had our hands tied.”

The imperial princess naturally had full sovereignty over the kingdom. Even ancestors stronger than her were still suppressed!

The tower lord quickly apologized once more: “This time, I and several other ancestors were discussing how to settle this problem, but we didn’t expect for the Storm God’s first branch to be so aggressive. They dismissed several ancestors preemptively. Our kingdom absolutely does not wish to oppose Young Noble Li.”

“Unfortunately, it is a little late. Right now, I have plans to visit your kingdom. Without a baptism of blood, a few people will never understand my merciless means.” Li Qiye said dismissively.

This scared the soul out of the tower lord. He quickly prostrated on the ground: “Young Noble, please give my kingdom a chance. I promise that we will definitely remove the Storm God’s first branch from the kingdom’s order. I guarantee it with my life. Yuanyuan will become the Crimson Night Royal Lord and we shall pledge loyalty to you!”

The tower lord knew Li Qiye had obtained the legacy of the Blood Progenitor and would definitely rule the Blood Race in the future. Without showing him their commitment right now, their future would be quite grim.

“Please give us a chance!” The tower lord’s head met the ground. Even an ancestor of his level could only ask Li Qiye for forgiveness.

Li Qiye glanced at the tower lord and then Si Yuanyuan. At this moment, she didn’t dare to intercede. She knew that his decision was not something she could influence.

“Fine, I will give your kingdom a chance.” After a while, he slowly spoke: “If you still can’t fix this problem, then I’ll do so myself. You should understand that my personal visit will not end before seeing blood.”

“Rest assured, Young Noble, it will go as you wish this time.” The kneeling tower lord solemnly promised: “Once Yuanyuan is in control, our kingdom will obey all of your orders!”

Li Qiye gently nodded then told Si Yuanyuan: “I have taught you everything that should be taught. The path that you take is up to you; whether you can become an amazing ruler or not depends on your own effort. None of my proteges turned out to be weak, do not disappoint me.”

Si Yuanyuan kneeled on the ground and quietly bowed her head towards Li Qiye. All she had today was given to her by Li Qiye. She was an exiled disciple from the kingdom. To be able to return was already too great of a wish. She never thought that she would be able to rule the country one day.

His declaration and feats spread to the entire Barren Earth overnight. Countless humans became excited. The young humans had been far too quiet in this region, but finally, a prodigy appeared. Perhaps he will be able to lead the humans to newfound glory.

“A second Lin Tiandi!” Someone emotionally commented after hearing Li Qiye’s tales.

“No, he’s even more heaven-defying than Lin Tiandi!” Someone else murmured: “Just climbing the Prime Peak alone is enough to make him matchless. No matter how great Lin Tiandi is, he couldn’t climb it.”

In a southern desolate area, a young man was traveling across the world in a transcendent and mysterious manner. Myriad dao accompanied his steps as if he was the ruler of the dao. He was referred to as the number one genius of the Barren Earth — Lin Tiandi.

“Amazing! Such accomplishments... even the most era-defying genius would have to chase him from behind.” Lin Tiandi was in awe after hearing the news and became absent-minded for a moment. He eventually regained his senses and smiled: “This generation will not be boring, it shall be a brilliant one. Otherwise, with just Jikong Wudi and the others, how could they compete against my senior brother?”

With that, he continued on with the same carefree and unrestrained attitude as before. It seemed that nothing could prevent him from having peace of mind.

The Mysterious Bamboo Mountain, one of the most powerful lineages in the Barren Earth, was on the same level as Heavenguard. It was a sect with three emperors. Among them, one was a demon, another was a golem, and the last was said to be either a demon or a dragon.

Many demon tribes considered Mysterious Bamboo to be their leader and followed its orders. However, after Immortal Emperor Yin Tian, Mysterious Bamboo maintained a very low-profile and became strangely reclusive.

There was an ancient pavilion in Mysterious Bamboo with a young man lying there. Even his casual posture would leave others with the feeling that the heavens was being devoured. To describe him as being among the heavens was not an exaggeration at all.

This youth seemed to just be waking up. The door opened. An ancestor came in and reported the news of the Barren Earth to him.

“A silver arrow!” The youth immediately sat up after hearing this; the nine heavens shook with his movement. A glint emerged in his eyes like the radiance of three thousand worlds. This glint was extremely terrifying. Even Godkings would quake with fear if they were standing before him. This youth was absolutely mighty beyond imagination!

The youth asked again: “Are you positive that it was a silver arrow?!” He had a hard time believing this.

“Honorable ancestor, I’m completely certain.” This Mysterious Bamboo ancestor was very reverent towards this youth.

The youth’s expression shifted. He was lost in a daze as he murmured: “Is it... can it be...”

The moment this youth calmed down, he quickly disappeared. In the blink of an eye, he crossed time and space. Each of his steps took him through countless locations. If one could see his method, they would be jolted. Just taking a few steps allowed him to cross an entire area — this was too heaven-defying!

When the night curtain fell, the youth appeared right outside of the Holy City. No one knew that he had arrived. He stood in the sky, untraceable as if he was one with the heaven and earth. Not even Godkings would be able to detect him, let alone God-Monarchs.

He opened his eyes, revealing a glare capable of crossing time itself. It eventually fell upon the Thunder Tower.

Inside the tower, Li Qiye was sitting down and meditating quietly. When the youth's gaze reached the Thunder Tower, Li Qiye suddenly opened his eyes to look in the youth's direction. Afterward, he closed his eyes again and reached a state of zen once more.

“Thump, thump, thump!” The youth took several steps back in shock. He left without saying another word and returned to Mysterious Bamboo in an instant.

“Damn, how am I going to live now?!” The youth pulled on his own hair with great distress.

The ancestors here became dumbfounded to see the youth acting

like this. They glanced at each other in confusion, not knowing what had happened.

One of them quietly asked: “Ancestor, what happened?”

“I want to commit suicide, suicide, do you understand?!” The youth jumped up. His handsome face became sour like a bitter melon: “Go, go now, to the town down the mountain. Buy me ten thousand pieces of tofu so that I can kill myself by ramming my head against them!”

The ancestors here didn’t know how to respond to this young man.

The youth sat down in his chair with a dejected expression and reluctantly spoke: “I finally climbed out of the ground and wanted to act cool for a bit, kill some monsters, claim the Heaven’s Will, but I have only completely wasted my time!”

Chapter 1000: Destroying The Saber Emperor School

At nightfall, Li Qiye's declaration exploded throughout the Blood Race. Its lineages were in disarray and everyone became quite rowdy all of a sudden.

This was especially true for the Blood-devil Tribe. They held a dire emergency meeting. Many big shots from its lineages participated, including a few seclusive ancestors.

“So arrogant, challenging our entire tribe. Does he really think we don't have anyone who can take him on?” It wasn't just the Blood-devils, even some Blood disciples felt indignant after hearing Li Qiye's words.

Due to their great solidarity, once the Blood Race faced a powerful enemy, all of them would let go of their feuds and join hands. The humans were far lesser in this aspect.

“Who does he think we are? Does he think that our Blood-devil Tribe is a soft tomato that he can crush as he pleases?” A Blood-devil disciple full of hope spoke: “We have billions of disciples and more than one thousand paragons with Godkings as the leaders. I don't believe that he has the ability to kill us all!”

A big shot from the tribe coldly uttered: “Let him come, we'll take him on anytime. No matter how powerful the enemy may be, our Blood-devil Tribe will fight to the end!”

In fact, this big shot was able to carry out his claim. In just one night, many lineages in the tribe quietly maneuvered their armies to form an unimaginably large coalition!

Spies were shocked to see this miraculous deployment from the tribe. They were not only unified but also had a fast and effective cavalry. It would be difficult for a tribe with such abilities to not become prosperous.

They used action as a response to Li Qiye's threat. This left a lot of people wanting to see more.

Everyone knew that in the last several generations, the Blood Race had become increasingly powerful in the southern region. The human race no longer had the strength to be called number one in the Barren Earth.

The Blood-devil Tribe's unity allowed them to grow strong very quickly. Now, they are a force to be reckoned with for all the other races here. At the moment, they finally mobilized their troops on an unprecedented scale to fight Li Qiye to the death. How could people not become excited to watch this?

"One against an entire tribe — even Lin Tiandi can't compete with this. This is the pride of our human race!" A proud human commented after seeing the Blood-devils on the move.

This was the reason why the humans began to falter before the Bloods; humans only worried about their own business, they only

swept away the snow in front of their own gate. Otherwise, they wouldn't have conceded the position of being the number one race in the Barren Earth to the Blood Race.

An expert who had received some information spoke: "An ambush of certain death. The Blood-devil Tribe has sworn to not give up before taking Li Qiye's head even if they're down to the very last man!"

This was a shocking piece of news. However, no one knew where this ambush would take place!

However, many people understood that this feud between Li Qiye and the Blood-devil Tribe was beyond reconciliation. Li Qiye killed dozens of Blood-devil ancestors back on the Godwar Mountain and then ten more at the Thunder Tower. This was a great blow to their tribe. It would be strange if they could let go of this anger.

On the second day, Li Qiye left the Holy City by himself, not taking anyone with him.

"Li Qiye wants to make a move!" The eager crowd watched in anticipation. The Holy City was boiling with excitement. There was even a large group of experts tailing him!

Li Qiye flew in the sky; each of his swift steps crossed a thousand miles. However, judging from his expression, he had an inexplicable sense of ease. It was as if he was not going into battle and was instead merely taking a stroll outside of the city.

The Blood-devil Tribe had thirty-five great lineages and fourteen nations. The Saber Emperor School was one of them and also the one closest to the Holy City.

After almost half a day, Li Qiye arrived at the Saber Emperor School, but he didn't enter. He only stood on the outskirts and gazed at the sect.

As a southern great lineage, the school's ancestral ground spanned for thousands of miles. Rows of mountains pierced the sky like divine blades lined up one after another. This visual easily displayed the school's might.

At this time, it was under a state of high alert. A great army defended the gates with rays of light that towered to the sky. Formations had been activated within. The school's sealed ancestors all came out. Both Heavenly Kings and Virtuous Paragons presided over important locations.

The cultivators following behind Li Qiye also stopped on the horizon. They held their breaths while waiting for the battle to break out.

An ancestor from the school shouted: "Li, come here if you dare! Even if you were the reincarnation of an Immortal Emperor, we will still fight you to the end!"

The disciples inside shouted as well. Their chant echoed in the mountains, creating reverberations across the area in an intimidating fashion. This was enough to show their will to fight to the end.

At this point, the spectators were waiting to see what actions Li Qiye would take to enter the school!

Li Qiye only smiled when he saw how united the school was.

“Boom!” An item jumped out then flew towards the school. Meanwhile, Li Qiye just turned around and left.

Li Qiye’s swift departure after releasing a single item confused many people. No one knew what he was trying to do. Even the experts in the school were startled. They thought Li Qiye would come and massacre them on their grounds.

“Buzz!” The item instantly flew inside the school. It quickly transformed into a gigantic green bamboo tree. It engulfed the entire school due to its enormous size.

“What is that?” Everyone became wide-eyed. No one knew where this kind of bamboo tree came from.

People lifted their heads to watch the tree that poked through the clouds and blotted out the sun. Under its cover, the entire school seemed incredibly tiny!

“Boom!” While everyone was still confused, the giant bamboo suddenly slammed down and smashed the school.

“Rumble!” Many mountains inside immediately collapsed from this attack. The disciples inside were blown away, and many were even smashed into a paste.

However, it was only the beginning of the calamity. After the first smash, the tree’s great roots that resembled dragons instantly pierced into the ground.

“Zzz—” The sound of siphoning clearly resounded. The moment the tree took root in the school’s ancestral ground, it drained the worldly energy of this location like an ox drinking a river’s water. The energy underground was sucked up like a flood breaking a dam.

The large ancestral ground began to wither after its worldly energy was stolen. With a loud pop, cracks suddenly appeared on the land.

“Not good, stop it now! Open the ancestral foundation!” The ancestors in the school regained their senses, but it was already too late.

An ancestor shouted and took the vanguard while leading his direct disciples to attack the tree.

“Die!” Almost ten thousand disciples from the school frantically

made their way towards the tree. The ancestors used all of their abilities. An endless amount of blood energy controlled the most powerful true treasures to attack the green bamboo.

In just a second, glittering lights appeared in the sky. One treasure soared up after another. Divine swords were slashing the tree along with scorching flames. Some ice element techniques aimed to seal it as well...

However, as the tree continued to absorb the worldly energy, it became even more verdant. It emitted a green ethereal light as if it was forming a huge barrier.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The onslaught from the tens of thousands of disciples was completely stopped by this green barrier.

Next, one of the tree’s branches stretched out. It swept countless disciples flying. This scene resembled a huge tree smashing away countless ants. It was truly shocking!

“Boom!” An ancestor used his most powerful true treasure to break through this green barrier. He and several others instantly headed for the tree to cut it into pieces. However, before these powerful ancestors could reach the tree, a buzzing sound appeared. A sword-like branch flew down to meet the ancestor with the true treasure.

No matter how powerful this true treasure was, it couldn’t stop the branch. With a scraping noise, the branch pierced the true treasure and nailed this dead ancestor to the ground.

This ancestor quivered a bit before he died. He still didn't know just what this green bamboo tree was to be so heaven-defying like this.

“Rumble!” At this time, the school had finally opened their foundation in order to stop the tree.

Alas, even the foundation couldn't stop it. With crackling explosions, the roots of the tree pierced the ancestral foundation and drilled even deeper into the ground.